

THE  
**P**alace of **P**leasure

*ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS  
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,  
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,  
AND OTHERS*

DONE INTO ENGLISH  
BY WILLIAM PAINTER

*NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME  
BY JOSEPH JACOBS*

VOL. II.



*LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND  
MDCCCXC*

(S)

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

### VOLUME II.

#### TOME I.—*Continued.*

NOVEL	PAGE
XLVII. GALGANO AND MADONNA MINOCCIA	3
XLVIII. DUKE OF VENICE AND RICCIARDO	8
XLIX. FILENIO SISTERNO	18
L. MULETEER'S WIFE	29
LI. KING OF NAPLES	32
LII. PRINCESS OF FLANDERS	38
LIII. AMADOUR AND FLORINDA	45
LIV. DUKE OF FLORENCE	75
LV. FRANCIS I. AND COUNT GUILLAUME	81
LVI. LADY OF PAMPELUNA	84
LVII. STRANGE PUNISHMENT OF ADULTERY	97
LVIII. PRESIDENT OF GRENOBLE	101
LIX. GENTLEMAN OF PERCHE	104
LX. GENTLEMAN THAT DIED OF LOVE	107
LXI. LADY OF THE FRENCH COURT	113
LXII. ROLANDINE	116
LXIII. THE PRUDENT LADY	135
LXIV. LADY OF TOURS	139
LXV. DOCTOR OF LAWS	142

#### TOME II.

TITLE	147
DEDICATION	149
CONTENTS	154
AUTHORITIES	158
I. AMAZONS	159

NOVEL	PAGE
II. ALEXANDER AND SISIGAMBIS . . . . .	166
III. TIMOCRIA OF THEBES . . . . .	172
IV. ARIOBARZANES . . . . .	176
V. ARISTOTEMUS THE TYRANT . . . . .	209
VI. TANAQUIL . . . . .	221
VII. SOPHONISBA . . . . .	236
VIII. PORIS AND THEOXENA . . . . .	252
IX. LADY OF HIDRUSA . . . . .	256
X. EMPRESS FAUSTINA . . . . .	260
XI. TWO MAIDS OF CARTHAGE . . . . .	264
XII. LETTERS OF TRAJAN . . . . .	279
XIII. LAMIA, FLORA, AND LAIS . . . . .	301
XIV. ZENOPIA . . . . .	311
XV. EUPHEMIA AND ACHARISTO . . . . .	320
XVI. MARCHIONESS OF MONFERRATO . . . . .	338
XVII. ANSALDO AND DIANORA . . . . .	342
XVIII. MITHRIDANES AND NATHAN . . . . .	348
XIX. KATHARINE OF BOLOGNA . . . . .	355
XX. THORELLO AND SALADIN . . . . .	363
XXI. ANNE OF HUNGARY . . . . .	383
XXII. ALEXANDER DE MEDICI . . . . .	406

THE PALACE OF  
*Pleasure Beautified*  
adorned and well furnished  
vvith pleasaunt Histories and  
excellent Nouels, selected out  
of diuers good and commendable Authours

By William Painter, Clarke  
of the Ordinaunce and Armorie

¶ Eftstones perused corrected  
and augmented

1575  
IMPRINTED AT LONDON  
*by Thomas Marſhe.*

## The Palace of Pleasure.

---

### THE FORTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

*A gentleman called Galgano, long time made fute to Madonna Minoccia: her husband sir Stricca (not knowing the same) diuers times praised and commended Galgano, by reason whereof, in the absence of her husband, she sent for him, and yelded herself vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her husbande had spoken of him, and for recompence he refused to dishonest her.*

**I**N the Citie of Siena in Italie there was a rich yong Gentleman called Galgano, borne of noble birth, actiue, and wel trained in al kinde of exercise, valiaunt, braue, stoute and curteous, in the maners and orders of all countries verye skilfull. This Galgano loued a Gentlewoman of Siena named Madonna Minoccia, the wyfe of sir Stricca a comely knight, and wore in his apparell the colour and deuises of his Lady, bearing the same vpon his helmet and armour, in all Iustes, Tourneyes and triumphes, obseruing noble feastes and banquettes for her sake. But for all those costly, sumptuous and noble practises, this Lady Minoccia in no wyfe would giue eare vnto his futes. Wherfore Galgano at his wittes ende, was voyde of aduise what to do or faye, feing the great crueltie and rigor raigning in her brefte, vnto whom hee dayle prayed for better succeſſe and fortune than to himselfe. There was no feast, banquet, triumph, or mariage, but Galgano was there, to do her humble seruice, and that daye his minde was not pleased and contented, wherein he had not feene her that had his louing harte in full possession. Very many times (like a Prince

that coueted peace) he fente Ambassadours vnto her, wyth presentes and meffages, but she (a proude and scornefull Princeſſe) dayned neither to heare them or receiue them. And in this ſtate ſtoode this paſſionate Louer a longe time, tormented with the exceeding hote Loue and fealtie that he bare her. And many times making his renerent complaints to loue, did ſay: “Ah Loue, my deare and foueraigne Lorde, how cruell and hard harted art thou, how vnmercifully dealeſt thou with me, rather how deaf be thine eares, that canſt not recline the ſame to my nightly complaints, and dailye afflictions; How chaunceth it that I do in this maner conſume my ioyfull dayes with pining plaintes? Why doeſt thou ſuffer me to Loue, and not to be beloued?” And thus oftentimes remembreng the crueltie of loue, and his ladies tyrrany, hee began to dye in maner like a wight replete with deſpaire. But in fine, he determined paciently to abide the good time and pleasure of Loue, ſtill hoping to finde mercie: and daily gaue himſelfe to practife and frequent thoſe thinges that might be acceptable and pleaſant to his Lady, but ſhee ſtill perſiſted inexorable. It chaunced that fir Stricca and his fayre wyfe, for their ſolace and recreation, repaired to one of their houſes hard by Siena: and upon a time, Galgano paſſing by with a Sparhauke on his fife, made as though he went on Hauking, but of purpoſe onely to ſee his lady. And as he was going by the houſe, fir Stricca eſpied him, and went forth to meeete him, and familiarly taking him by the hand, prayed him to take parte of his ſupper with his wyfe and him: for which curteſie Galgano gaue him thanckes, and ſaid: “Sir, I do thancke you for your curteous requeſte, but for this time I pray you to hold me excufed, because I am going about certaine affayres very requiſite and neceſſary to be done.” Then ſayde fir Stricca: “At leaſt wife drincke with mee before you depart.” But giuing him thankes he bad him farewell. Maiftre Stricca ſeing that hee could not cauſe him to tary, toke his leauue, and retourned into his houſe. Galgano gone from maiftre Stricca, ſayd to himſelfe: “Ah, beaſt that I am, why did I not accept his offer? Why ſhould shamefaſtneſſe let me from the fight of her, whom I loue better than all the world beſides.” And as he was thus penſiſe in complaints his ſpaniells ſprong a Partrich, wherat he let flee his

Hauke, and the Partrich flying into fir Stricca his garden, his Hauke pursued and seaffed vpon the same. Maister Stricca and his Ladie hearinge that pastime, ranne to the garden window, to see the killing of the Partrich: and beholding the valiante skirmishe betweene the foule and the hauke, the lady asked whose hauke it was: her husband made aunswere that he knew well inougue the owner, by the goodnesse and hardines of the same. "For the owner of this hauke (quoth hee) is the trimmest and most valiaunt gentleman in all Siena, and one indued with beste qualities." The lady demaunded what he was? "Maister Galgano (said her husband,) who euen now passed by the gate, and I prayed him very earnestly to supper, but hee woulde not be intreated. And truly wyfe, he is the comliest gentleman, and mooste vertuous personage, that euer I knewe in my life." With thosse wordes they wente from the windowe to supper: and Galgano, when he had lured his Hauke, departed awaye. The Lady marked thosse words and fixed them in minde. It fortuned within a while after, that fir Stricca was by the state of Siena sent in ambaßage to Perugia, by reaſon wherof, his Lady at home alone, so ſone as her husband had taken his iourney, ſent her moft ſecrete and truſtie maide, to intreat maister Galgano, to come and ſpeakē with her. When the meſſage was done to Galgano, (if his heart were on a merie pinne, or whether his ſpirits dulled with continuall forrowe were againe reuiued, they knowe that moft haue felte the painefull pangues of Loue, and they also whose fleſh haue beene pearced wyth the amorous arrowes of the little boy Cupide:) he made aunswere that hee would wil-lingly come, rendringe thanckes both to the maiftrefſe and maide, the one for her paine, and the other for her good remembraunce. Galgano vnderſtanding that fir Stricca was gone to Perugia, in the eueninge at conuenient time, repaired to the houſe of her whose fight he loued better than his owne eyes. And being come before his Lady, with great ſubmiſſion and reuerence hee ſaluted her, (like thosse whose hartes do throbē, as foretellinge the poſſeſſion of good tournes and benefites, after which with longe ſute and tra-uaile they haue aspired) wherewith the Lady delighted, very pleaſantly took him by the hande, and imbracing him, ſaid: "Wel-come mine owne ſweet Galgano, a hundred times I ſay wel-

come." And for the time with kisſes, makinge truce with their affections, the lady called for complices and wyne. And when they had dronke and refreshed themſelues, the lady toke him by the hande and ſaid: "My ſweete Galgano, night beginneth to paſſe awaye, and the time of ſleepe is come, therefore let vs yeld our ſelues to the feruice and commaundment of our very good Ladye, madame Cytherea, for whosē ſake I intreated you to come hither." Galgano aunſwered, that he was very wel contented. Being within the chamber, after much pleafaunte talke and louing diſcourse betweene them, the Lady did put of her clothes, and went to bed. Galgano being ſomewhaſt baſhfull, was perceyued of the Lady, vnto whom ſhe ſaid: "Me thincke, Galgano, that you be fearful and ſhamēaſt. What do you lacke? Do I not pleaſe you? Doth not my perfonage content you? Haue you not the thing which you deſire?" "Yes madame," ſaid Galgano: "God himſelf could not do me a greater pleaſure, than to ſuffer me to be cleped within your armes." And reaſoning in this fort, he put of his clothes alſo, and laide himſelfe by her, whom he had coueted and deſired of long time. Being in the bed, he ſaid: "Madame, I beſeech you graunt me one reſquest." "What is that, Galgano?" (quoth ſhe.) "It is this, madame," ſaid Galgano: "I do much maruell, why this night aboue all other, you haue ſent for mee: conſidering how long I haue bin a futer vnto you, and although I haue proſecuted my ſute, by great expence and trauaile, yet you would never yelde before now: what hath moued you now thus to do?" The Lady anſwered: "I wil tell you firſt: true it is, that not many dayes agoe, paſſing by this houſe, with your Hauke on your fife, my husband tolde me that ſo ſone as he ſaw you, he wente oute to meeete you, of purpose to intreate you to ſupper, but you would not tarrie: then your Hauke purſued a Partrich, euen into my garden, and I ſeing the Hauke ſo egerly ſeaſing vpon the fame, demaunded of my husband whosē Hauke it was. He tolde me that the Hauke did belong to the moſt excellent yong man of all Siena: and that he neuer in all his life knewe a gentleman better accoſtomed with all vertues and good qualities, and therewithall gaue vnto you ſinguler prayſe and commendacion. Whereupon hearing him in ſuch wife to prayſe you, and knowing

righte well your affectionate minde and disposition towards mee, my hart attached with loue, forced me to fende for you that I mighte hereafter auoyde disdaine and other scornewfull demeaner, to impeache or hinder your loue: and this briefely is the caufe." "Is this true?" said Galgano. "Most certaine and true," aunsweread the Lady." "Was there no other occasion?" "No, verely:" said the lady. "God defend," (quoth Galgano,) "that I should recompence the curtesie and good will of so noble a gentleman (as your husband is) with reproch and villany. Is it meete that good turnes should be requited with vnkindnes? If euer man had cause to defende the honor of his vnownen frend, cause haue I right good and apte. For now knowinge such a frende, that would by vertuous reportes haue aduaunced me to higher matters, than wherof I am in possestion, should I reward with pollucion of his stocke and wife? No, no, lady! my raginge sute by loue, is by vertue quenched. Virtue onely hath staunched the flames of vile affections. Seeke another frende, to glut your lecherous minde. Finde out some other companion, to coole thy disordinate loue. Shal I be disloyal to him, that hath beene faithfull vnto me? Shall I be traytor to him, that frendly hath commended me? What can be more required of humane hearte, or more desired of manlike mind, but wilfull bente, and fixed to do him good, that neuer erst by iuste desert deferued the same." With which wordes sodenly hee lept out of the bed, and when he had furnished himselfe againe with his apparell, hee also put vpon him vertuous friendship, and takinge his leaue of the Lady, neuer after that tyme he gaue himselfe to matters of Loue. And maister Stricca he continually obserued both with singuler loue and dutifull friendship: whereby it is vncertaine whether was most singuler in him, his continency at the very instante by refrayning that vehement heate of loue, which so long time with great trauaile and coste he had pursued, or his regard of frendship to sir Stricca vpon wordes of commendacion spoken behinde his backe. Both no doubt be singuler vertues meete for all men to be obserued: but the subduing of his affections surmount- ed and passed.

## THE FORTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

*Bindo a notable Architect, and his sonne Ricciardo, with all his familie, from Florence went to dwell at Venice, where being made Citizens for diuers monuments by them done there, throughe inordinate expences were forced to robbe the Treasure house. Bindo beinge slaine by a pollicie devised by the Duke and state, Ricciardo by fine subtelties deliuereith himselfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke (by his owne confession) understandinge the sleightes, giueth him his pardon and his doughter in mariage.*

IN the goodly citie of Venice there was once a duke, that was a noble gentleman and of greate experiance and wisedome, called Valeriano di messer Vannozzo Accettani. In the chiefest Churche of which Citie called San Marco, there was a steeple, very faire and sumptuous, and of greatest fame of any thinge at that time that was in Venice, which steeple was like to fall downe by reason of certaine faultes and decayes in the foundacion. Wherfore the Duke caused to be searched thorow out all Italie, some cunning workeman that would take in hand the reparacion and amendmente of the same: with promise of so much money as he would demaund for doing thereof. Whereupon an excellent Archite&t of Florence, named Bindo, hearing tel of this offer, determined to go to Venice for the accomplishmente of that worke, and for that purpose with his onelye sonne and wyfe, hee departed Florence. And when he had seene and surueyed the steeple, he went straight to the Duke, and told him that he was come thither to offer his seruice for repayringe of the same, whom the Duke curteously intertayned and prayed him, that he would so sone as he coulde begin that worke. Whereunto Bindo accorded, and wyth great diligence and small time he finished the same, in better forme and surety than it was at the first: which greatly pleased the Duke, and gaue Bindo so much money as he demaunded, making him besides a Citizen of Venice, for the main-tenaunce of whose state, hee allotted him a sufficient stipend:

afterwards the Duke called him vnto him, and declared that he would haue a Treasure house made, wherein should be disposed and layde vp all the Treasure and common ornamente for the furniture of the whole Citie, which Bindo by and by toke vpon him to do, and made it of such singuler beautie, as it excelled all the monuments of the Citie, wherein all the said Treasure was bestowed. In which worke hee had framed a stome by cunninge, that mighthe be remoued at pleasure, and no man perceiue it: meaning thereby to gode into the Chamber when he liste: whereunto none in all the world was priuie but himselfe. When this Palace and Treasure house was done, he caused all the furnitures of Silkes, hanginges, wrought with Golde, Canapees, clothes of stafe, riche Chayres, Plate, and other Ornamente of Golde and Siluer to be caried thither, whiche he called La Turpea del Doge, and was kept vnder fve keyes: whereof foure were deliuering to foure of the chiefe Citizens, deputed to that office, which were called Chamberlaynes of the Treasure house, and the fift keye the Duke himselfe did keepe, so that the Chamber coulde not bee opened excepte they were all fve prefente. Nowe Bindo and his famelie dwelling at Venice, and beinge a citizen there, beganne to spende liberallye and to liue a riche and wealthye life, and hys sonne Ricciardo consumed disordinatelye, whereby in space of time, they wanted Garmentes to furnishe their bodies, whiche they were not able to maintaine for their inordinate expences: wherefore the father vpon a night calling his sonne vnto him, got a ladder, and a certaine yron instrumente made for the purpose, and taking also with him a litle lime, went to the hole, which Bindo artificially had made, who taking out the stome, crept in, and toke out a faire cup of gold, which was in a closet, and afterward he wente out, cowching the stome againe in due place. And when they were come home, they brake the cup and caufed it to be folde by peece meale, in certaine Cities of Lombardie. And in this forte, they maintayned their disordinate life begonne. It chaunced not long after, that a Cardinall arriued at Venice, about affayres with the Duke, and the state, who the more honorablie to receiue him, opened the Treasure house to take oute certaine furnitures within, as plate, clothes

of state, and other thinges. When the dore was opened, and had taken out the faide necessaries, they founde a cuppe lesse than oughte to be, wherewith the Chamberlaines contended amonge themselues, and wente to the Duke, telling him that there wanted a cuppe: whereat the Duke marueiled, and said that amonges them it must needs be gone. And after many denials, and much talke, he willed them to faye nothing, till the Cardinall was departed. When the Cardinall was come, he was receyued with honorable interteignemente, and beinge departed, the Duke fente for the foure Chamberlaines, to confult about the losse of the cup, commaunding them not to departe the Palace before the same was found, saying that amongs them it muste needs be stolen. These four persons being together, and debating how and by what meanes the cup should be taken away, were at their wittes ende. At length one of them faide: "Let vs consider whether ther bee anye comminge into the Chamber besides the doore." And viewinge it they coulde not perceiue anye entrie at all. And to proue the same more effectuallye, they strawed the chamber aboute with fyne sifted chaffe, setting the same on fier, which done, they shutte fast the windowes and doores, that the smoke and smoulder might not goe out. The force of which smoke was futche as it issued through the hole that Bindo made, whereby they perceiued the way howe the robbery was committed, and went to the Duke to tell him what they had done. The duke vnderstanding the fact, wylled them to faye nothing, for that he woulde deuise a policie how to take the theefe: who caused to be brought into the chamber a caldron of pitche, and placed it directly vnder the hole, commaunding that a fyre should be kept daye and night vnder the caldron, that the same might continually boyle. It come to passe that when the money was spent which the father and sonne had receiued for the cup, one night they went agayne to the hole, and remouing the stone, the father went in as he did before, and fell into the caldron of pitche (which continually was boyling there) vp to the waste, and not able to liue any longer, he called his sonne vnto him, and sayde: " Ricciardo myne owne sweete sonne, death hath taken me prysoner, for halfe my body is dead, and my breath also is

ready to departe. Take my head with thee, and burie it in some place that it be not knownen, which done, commend me to thy mother, whome I pray thee to cherishe and comforde, and in any wyse take hede that warely and circumspectlye thou doe departe from hence: and if any man do aske for me, say that I am gone to Florence about certaine businesse." The sonne lamentably began to lament his father's fortune, saying: "Oh deare father, what wicked furie hath thus cruelly deuised sodaine death." "Content thy selfe, my sonne," sayd the father, "and be quiet, better it is that one should dye, than twoo, therefore doe what I haue tolde thee, and fare well." The sonne tooke vp his father's head, and went his waye, the reste of his bodye remayned in the caldron, like a block without forme. When Ricciardo was come home, he buried his father's head so well as he could, and afterwardes tolde his mother what was become of his father, who vnderstanding the maner of his death, began piteously to cry out, to whom her sonne holding up his hands, sayd: "Good mother holde your peace, and geue ouer your weeping: for our life is in great perill and daunger, if your outcrie be heard. Therefore good mother, quiet yourselfe, for better it were for vs to liue in poore estate, than to die with infamie, to the vtter reproche and shame of all our familie." With whiche woordes he appeased her. In the morning the bodye was founde and caried to the Duke, who maruelled at it, and could not deuise what he should be, but sayd: "Surely there be two that committed this robberie, one of them we haue, let vs imagine how we may take the other." Then one of the foure Chamberlaines sayd: "I haue found out a trap to catche the other, if it will please you to heare mine aduise, which is this: Imposseble it is, but this theefe that is dead, hath either wife, children, or some kinsman in the citie, and therfore let vs cause the bodye to be drawen throughout the streates, and geue diligent hede whether anye persone doe complaine or lament his death: and if any such be found, let him be taken and examined: which is the next way as I suppose, to finde out his companion." Which being concluded, they departed. The body was drawen throughout the citie with a guard of men attending vpon the same: as the execu-

tioners passed by the house of Bindo, whose carcassee laye vpon the hurdle, his wyfe stode at the wyndowe, and seing the body of her husband so vsed, made a great outerie. At whiche noyse the sonne spake to his mother and sayde: "Alas, mother, what do you?" And beholding his father's corps vpon the hurdle, he toke a knife and made a great gashe into his hande, that the bloud abundantly issued out. The guarde hearing the noyse that the woman made, ran into the houfe, and asked her what she lacked. The sonne answered: "I was caruynge a peece of stone with this knife, and by chaunce I hurt my hande, which my mother seeyng cryed out, thynking that I had hurt myselfe more than I haue." The guarde seeing his hande all bloudy and cut, did belieue it to be true, and from thence went round about the liberties of the Citie, finding none that seemed to lament or bewayle that chaunce. And returning to the Duke, they tolde him howe all that labour was employed in vayne, whereupon he appointed them to hang vp the dead body in the market-place, with secret watche in like maner, to espie if any person by day or night, would come to complaine or be forrowefull for him. Which body was by the feete haunged vp there, and a continuall watche appointed to kepe the same. The rumor hereof was bruted throughout the Citie, and euery man resorted thither to see it. The woman hearing tell that her husbandes carcassee should be hanged vp in the market-place, saide diuerse times to her sonne, that it was a very great shame for him to suffer his father's body in that shamefull sort to be vsed. To whom her sonne made answere, saying: "Good mother, for God's sake be contented, for that whiche they do is for none other purpose, but to proue me: wherefore be pacient a while, till this chaunce be past." The mother not able to abide it any longer, brake out many times into these words: "If I were a man as I am a woman, it should not be vndone now: and if thou wilt not aduenture thy selfe, I will one night giue the attempt." The yong man seing the froward nature of his mother, determined to take away the body by this policie. He borrowed twelve friers frockes or cowles, and in the euening went downe to the hauen, and hired twelue mariners, and placed them in a backe houfe, geuing them so much meate and

drinke as they woulde eate. And when they had well whited and tippled themselues, he put vpon them those friers cowles, with vilards vpon their faces, and gaue euery of them in their hands a burning torch, making them to senie as though they had ben Deuels of hel: and he himself rode vpon a horse al couered with blacke, beset rounde about with monstrous and vglie faces, euery of them hauinge a burnyng candle in his mouthe, and riding before with a visarde of horrible shape vpon his head, sayde vnto them: "Doe as I doe :" and then marched forward to the market-place. When they came thether they ran vp and downe with roring voyces crying out like Deuels being then past midnight and very darke. When the watche fawe that straunge fight they were affrayde, thinking that they had bene Deuels indeede, and that he on horsebacke in that forme had ben the great Deuill Lucifer himselfe. And seing him runne towardes the gibet, the watche toke their legges and ran away. The yong man in the shape of the great Deuill toke downe the body and layd it before him on horsebacke, who calling his companie away, roode before in poste. When they were come home, he gaue them their money, and vncasing them of their cowles sent them away, and afterwardes buried the body so secretly as he could. In the morning newes came to the Duke that the bodye was taken awaye, who sent for the guarde to knowe what was become thereof. To whome they sayde these wordes: " Pleaseth your grace, about midnight last past there came into the market-place a companie of Deuels, among whom we fawe the great deuil Lucifer himselfe, who as wee suppose did eate vp the bodye, which terrible fight and vision made vs to take our legges." The Duke by those wordes perceiued euidently that the same was but a practise to deceiue them of their purpose, notwithstanding he determined once again to deuise some meanes in the ende to knowe the truthe, and decreed a constitucion that for the space of xx dayes no fresh meate shoulde be folde in Venice: at which decree all the citie marueiled. Afterwardes he caused a verie faire fatte calfe to be folde, seffing the price of euery pounde at a fiorino, which amounteth to a French crowne or thereaboutes, and willed hym that folde it to note and marke them that bought it: thinking with himselfe, that he which is a theefe is licorous of mouth delicate

in fare and would not stick to geue a good price, although it cost him a French crown for euery pound: making proclamation, that he which would buye any fresh meate should reft to the market-place where was to bee folde. All the Marchaunts and Gentlemen repaired to buye some of the veale, and vnderstanding that every pound would not be folde under a Frenche crowne, they bought none at all. This calfe and the price was bruted in all places, and came to the knowledge of the mother of this yong man, who said vnto her sonne: “I haue a minde to eate some of the veale, now folde in the market.” Ricciardo aunswered: “Mother make no haste to buye it, first let it be cheapened by other, and at length I will deuise a meane that you shall have it: for it is not wyfedome for vs to be the firste that shall desire it.” The mother like an ignoraunt and vnskilfull woman, was importunate to haue it. The sonne fearing that his mother would fende for some of the veale, by other, caused a Pie to be made, and prepared a flagon full of wyne, bothe which were intermixed with thinges to cause sleepe, and taking bread, the sayd Pie, and the flagon of wyne, when it was night, putting on a counterfeit beard, and cloke, went to the stall where that veale was to bee folde, which as yet was whole and vnbought. And when he had knocked at the shop dore, one of the guard asked who was there. To whom Ricciardo said: “Can you tel me wher one Ventura doth kepe his shop?” Of whom one of them demaunded what Ventura? “I know not his surname,” sayde Ricciardo, “that I would he had bene hanged, when I came first to dwell with him.” “Why who sent thee?” said one of the guard. “His wyfe (quod Ricciardo) who bade me cary him this meate and wyne for his supper: but I pray you (sayde Ricciardo,) let me leaue the same with you, till I goe home to know better where he kepeth his stall. And maruell not, my maisters, though I know not where his shop is, for it is not long sithens I came to dwell in this Citie.” And so leauing behind him the Pie, and the bread with the flagon of wyne, he made haste to departe, and tolde them that he wold come againe by and by. When he was gone, one of them toke the flagon and drancke, and afterwardes gaue it to his companion, and said: “Drinke, for thou neuer diddest taft of better wyne in all thy life.” His companion dranke, and merily communing of

this matter, they fel a sleepe. Ricciardo loking in at a hole of the dore, seing them a slepe, went in, and toke the calfe, and caried it home whole as it was, and saide to his mother: “Hold, mother, there is your luste, cut it out:” and by and by she cut out a great pece. The duke so sone as he heard that the calfe was stolen, and the maner howe, did wonder very muche, purposing yet to knowe what hee was: and caused a hundred poore people to come before him, whose names being written, he said vnto them: Get ye to all the houses in Venice, vnder colour to begge almes. And marke if you see in any house fleshe dressed, or any pece in making ready to be eaten at the fier, which if you doe, ye must be importunate in begging, till they giue you either flesh or broth. And he among all you that shal bring me the first newes, I wil giue him xx crownes.” These beggers dispersed themselues into euery corner of the Citie, crauing their almes, amongs whom one of them asked his almes at the house of Ricciardo, and approaching nere, espied openly fleshe at the spit, and besought a morsell thereof for God’s sake: to whom the vndiscrete woman seeing that she had plentye, gaue a litle pece. The poore man thanked the good wife, and prayed God to sauue her life. And as hee was going down the steps of the dore, Ricciardo met him with the flesh in his hand. Wherewithall astonned, he willed him to retourne, and sayde he would giue him more. The begger glad of that, went in againe, whome Ricciardo caried into his chamber, and when he was within, he strake suche a full blowe vpon his head with an axe, as he killed hym, and threwe him into a iakes, shutting the doore after him. In the euening, these poore men retourned to the duke, according to their promise, and sayde they coulde finde nothing. The Duke called them by their names, and compting the number founde one lesse than he had sent, whereat he maruelled. And after he had well aduised with himselfe, what should become of him that lacked, he sayde: “Certainely the poore man is Slayne.” Then cauſing the councell to be assembed, he declared what he had done: and yet sayde that it were meete the party were knownen. Whereunto one of the Senatours sayde: Your grace hath duely made search by the belly and mouth, to finde out this verlet: I thinke it nowe neces-

farie that triall be made by lechery, whiche commonly accompanieth licorous mouthes." Then it was concluded that the moste riotous and lecherous yong men, suche as the Duke had in greatest suspicion, to the number of xxv. should be warned to appeare before him: whiche accordingly was done, amonges whome was this Ricciardo. These yonge roisters assembled in the palace, euery of them maruelled wherefore the Duke had caused them to come thether. Afterwarde the Duke commaunded xxv. beddes to be made in one of his great chambers, to lodge euery of the sayd xxv. persons by hymself, and in the middes of the chamber he commaunded a riche bed of estate to be set vp and furnished, wher was appointed to ly his own daughter, which was an exceding faire creature. And in the night when these yong men were layde in their beddes, manye gentlewomen attendant vpon the Lady, came in to bryng her to her lodging: and her father deliuered to her a fawcer full of black die, or stayning, and saide vnto her: "If any of these yong men that doe lie here by thee, doe offer to come to thy bedde, looke that thou marke him in the face with this staining colour, that he may be knownen." At which wordes all the yong men maruelled and therefore durste not attempt to goe vnto her, but said one to another: "Surely this commaundement of the Duke hath some secrete misterie in it." Notwithstanding Ricciardo determined about midnight to go to her bedde: and when the candle was out being a wake of purpose, he rose vp and went to the gentlewoman's bedde and began to imbrace and kisse her. The maiden when she felt him, sodainly dipped her finger in the colour and stained his face, not perceiued of him. When he had accomplished the thing he came for, hee retourned to his place: and then began to imagin vpon the Duke's wordes, and for what policie he spake them. And lying a litle while still musing vpon the same, he went againe to the gentlewoman's bedde, hauing throughly disposed himself to the pleasures of this paradise lambe: and perceiuing her to dippe her finger in the fawcer and rubbe his face, Ricciardo toke away the fawcer from the bedde's fide, and round about bestowed the colour vpon the faces of his felowes, who were so faste a sleepe that they did not fele him. Some he marked

with two spottes, some with six and some with x. himselfe he painted but with foure besides those wherewith already he was berayed by the gentlewoman: whiche done he set the faucer agayne by the bedde's side, and when he had bidden her farewell, faire and softly he returned againe to his bedde. In the morning betimes, the damofels of the chamber came in to helpe the ladye to make her readye, which done they wayted vpon her to the duke, who asked her how the matter stode. She aunswere well, for she had done his commaundement: and tolde him howe one came vnto her three times, and every time she gane him a tainte in his face. The duke by and by sent for them that were of his counsell. To whome he said: "Sirs, I haue founde out this good fellow, and therfore I haue sent for you, that we altogether may goe to see him." They went all into the chamber, and viewing them round about, they perceiued all their faces coloured, whereat they fell into a great laughter: then one of them sayde to another: "Suerly this fellowe hath the subtilest head that euer was knownen :" and concluded that one of the company had set that colour in their faces. The yong men beholding one another paynted in that forte, brake into great sporte and pastime. Afterwardes the duke examined euery of them, and seeing that he was not able by any meanes to vnderstande by whome it was done, he determined to knowe the man before he departed, and promised to him that should confess the truthe, to giue his daughter to him in mariage, and with her a very great dowrie, and a generall pardon. Wherefore Ricciardo vnderstanding the duke's minde, toke him asyde, and tolde hym the whole matter particularly from the beginning to the ende. The duke imbraced hym, and gaue him his pardon, and with great ioye and triumphe he solemnized the mariage betwene hym and his daughter. Wherewithall Ricciardo encouraged, proued a very stoute and valiaunt man in suche wyse almoste as the affaires of the whole state passed through his handes.

And liued a long time after, with the loue and  
good wyll of the whole cominaltie of  
Venice.

## THE FORTY-NINTH NOUELL.

*Philenio Sisterno, a Scholler of Bologna, being mocked of three faire Gentlewomen, at a banquet made of set purpose he was reuenged on them all.*

AT Bologna, whiche is the nobleſt citie of Lombardie, the mother of ſtudies, and accoumpled with al things nedefull and requisite for futch a florishing ſtate, there was a yong ſcholler, a Gentleman of the countrie of Crete named Philenio Sisterno, of very good grace and behauour. It chanced that in his time, there was a great eaſt made in the citie, wherunto were bidden the fayrefte dames, and beſte of reputation there: there was likewyſe many Gentlemen and Schollers of Bologna, amounges whom was this Philenio Sisterno: who following the manner of young men, dallyng ſometyme with one, ſometyme with another, and perciuing them for his purpose determined to daunce with one of them: and comming to one whiche was called Emerentiana, the wyfe of fir Lamberto Bentiuoglia, hee prayed her to daunce: who, beyng verie gentle and of no leſs audacitie than beutiful, refuſed not. Then Philenio leading forth the daunce very ſoftly, ſometymes wrynging her by the hand, ſpake ſomewhat ſecrely vnto her theſe wordes: “Madame, your beutie is ſo great, that without doubt it ſurmounteth all that ever I ſaw, and there is no woman in the world to whome I beare ſo great affection, as to your perſone, whiche if it were corespondent to me in Loue, I would thinke myfelf the beſte contented man in the world, otherwyſe I ſhall in ſhorte tyme bee depriued of life, and then you ſhall be the cauſe of my death: and louing you (Madame) as I doe, and as my dutie requireth, you ouglit to take me for your feruaunt, vſing me and thoſe little goodes whiche I haue as your owne: and I doe affiuer you, that it is impoffible for me to receiue greater fauour from heauen, then to ſee myfelfe ſubiecte to futch a gentlewoman, as you be, whiche hath taken me in a nette lyke a byrde.” Nowe Emerentiana, whiche earneſtly had marked thoſe ſweet and pleauant woordes, like a wyfe gentlewoman, ſemed to geue no eare thereunto, and made him no aunſwere at all. The daunce ended, and Emerentiana being

set down in her place, this young scholler went to take another gentlewoman by the hand, and began to daunce with her: whiche was not so fone begonne, but thus he said vnto her: "It nedeth not Madame, that by woordes I doe exprefse the feruant Loue which I beare you, and will so doe, so long as my poore spirite shall gourerne and rule my members: and if I could obtaine you for my Maistresse and singuler Ladye, I would thinke myself the happiest man aliue. Then louing you as I do, and being wholly yours, as you may easely vnderstand, refuse me not I besech you for your humble seruaunt, fithe that my life and all that I haue dependeth vpon you alone." The yonggentlewoman, whose name was Panthemia, perciuing his meaning, did not aunswere him any thing at that time: but honestly proceded in her daunce: and the daunce ended, fmyling a litle, she sat downe with the other dames. This done, amorous Philenio rested not vntil he had taken the thirde by the hand, (who was the gentlest, fairest, and trimmest dame in all Bologna,) and began to daunce with her, romyng abrode, to shewe his cunning before them that came to behold him. And before the daunce was finished, he saide thus vnto her: "Madame, it may so be, as I shall feme vnto you very malapert to manifest the secreit Loue that I haue and doe beare you at this instant, for which you ought not to blame me but your beautie, which rendreth you excellent aboue al the rest, and maketh me your slawe and prysoner. I speake not of your commendable behauour, of your excellent and maruellous vertues, which be such and of so great effect, as they would make the gods descend to contemplate the same. If then your excellent beautie and shape, so well fauoured by nature, and not by art, may feeme to content the immortall Gods, you ought not to be offended, if the same do constraine me to loue you, and to inclose you in the priuie cabane of my harte: I beseche you then, gentle Madame (the only comfort of my life) to haue pitie vpon him that dieth a thousand times a daye for you. In so doing, my life shall be prolonged by you, commanding me humbly vnto your good grace." This faire gentlewoman called Simphorosia, vnderstanding the sweete and pleasaunt woordes vttered from the very harte of Philenio, could not dissemble her sighes, but wayng her honor, because she was maried,

gave him no answere at all. And the daunce ended, she retourned to her place. Nowe it chaunced, as these three ladies did sit together iocundly disposed to debate of fundrie mery talke, behold Emerentiana, the wife of Seignior Lamberto, not for any euill, but in sporting wife said vnto her companions: "Gentlewomen, I haue to tell you a pleasaunt matter which happened to this day." "What is that?" said her companions. "I haue gotten this night, (said she) in dauncing, a curteous louer, a very faire Gentleman, and of so good behauour as any in the worlde: who said that he was so inflamed with my beauty that he tooke no rest day nor night:" and from point to point, rehearsed vnto them, all that he had said. Which Panthemia and Simphorosia vnderstanding, answered that the like had chaunced vnto them, and they departed not from the feaste before eche of theim knewe him that was their louer: whereby they perceiued that his woordes proceded not of faithfull Loue, but rather of follie and dissimulation, in fuche wife as they gave so lyghte credite thereunto, as of custome is geuen to the woordes of those that bee sicke. And they departed not from thence vntill all three with one accord, had conspired euery one to giue him mocke. Philenio continuing thus in Loue, sometime with one, sometime with another, and perceiuing that euery of them seemed to Loue him, hee determined with himselfe, if it were possible to gather of them the last frute of his Loue. But he was greatly deceyued in his desire, for that all his enterprise was broken: and that done, Emerentiana whiche could not any longer diffembre the loue of the foolishe scholer called one of her maydes, which was of a fayre complexion and a ioly wenche, charging her that she should deuise meanes to speake with Philenio, to gene him to vnderstante the loue which her maistresse bare vnto him: and when it were his pleasure she willingly would one night haue him at home at her house. Which newes when Philenio heard, he greatly reioyced, and said to the maid: "Returne to your Maistresse, faire maide, and commend me vnto her, telling her in my behalf, that I doe praye her to loke for me this euening, if her husband be not at home." During which time, Emerentiana caused a certaine number of fagots of sharpe thornes to be made, and to be layd vnder her bedde

still wayting for her minion. When night was come, Philenio toke his sworde, and went to the house of his enemy, and calling at the dore with the watchworde the same incontinently was opened: and after that they had talked a litle while together, and banketted after the best maner, they withdrew themselues into the chamber to take their rest. Philenio had no soner put of his clothes to goe to bedde, but Seignior Lamberto her husband came home: which the Maistresse of the house perceiving, made as though she had bene at her wittes ende, and could not tell whether to conuey her minion, but prayed him to hide himself vnder the bedde. Philenio seeing the daunger, wherein both he and the wife were, not taking with him any other garmentes, but only his shirte, crept vnder the bed where he was so cruelly prickt and scratched with the thornes, as there was no parte of his body (from the toppe of his head to the sole of his foote) free from bloud, and the more he fought to defende himselfe in that darke place, the more sharply and piteously he was tormented, and durst not crie for feare least Seignior Lamberto would kill him. I will leaue to your consideration in what plight this poore wretche was in, who by reason of his miserable being, as he was brecheleffe in that terrible purgatorie, even so was he speachleffe and durst not speake for his life. In the morning when Segnior Lamberto was gone forth, the poore scholler put on his clothes so well as he could, and all bloody as he was, returning to his lodging, was like to die: but being deligently cured by phisicians, in short time he recovered his former health. Shortly after, Philenio began to pursue again his loue towardes the other two, that is to say, Panthemia and Simphorosia, and found conuenient time one euening to speake to Panthemia, to whom he rehearsed his griefes and continuall tormentes, praying her to haue pitie vpon him. The subtile and wife wenche Panthemia, fayning to haue compassion vpon him, excused her selfe by lacke of meanes to content his desire, but in thend vanquished with faire supplications and maruellous fighes, shee made him to come home to her house, and being vnready, dispoyled of al his apparell to go to bed with his Lady she required hym to go with her into a litle closet, wher all her swete smels and perfumes were, to the intent he might be well

perfumed before he went to bedde. The yong dolt not doubting the subtiltie of this wicked woman, entred the closet and setting his foote vpon a borde vnnayled from the ioyft, fell so depe into a store house where marchauntes vfe to lay there cottons and wolles, as he thought he had broken his necke and his legges, notwithstanding as fortune would he had no hurt. This poore scholler being in that darke place, began to seke for some dore or ladder to go out, and finding nothing for his purpose he cursed the houre and time that euer he knew Panthemia. When the dauning of the day began to appeare, the simple fot discried in one place of the storehouse certain ventes in the wall, which gaue some light, because they wer old and couered ouer with mossē, in such wise, as he began with maruelous force, to pluck out the stones in the moſte decaied place of the wall, and made so great a hole, as he went out. And being in a lane hard by the great streate, barefoote and bare legged, and in his shirt, he went home to his lodging vnownken of any. A litle whyle after Simphorosia vnderstanding of the deceits whiche the other twoo had done to Philenio, attempted to geue hym the thirde, whiche was not inferior to the other twayne. And for that purpose, she began a farre of to caste her amorous lokes vpon him, letting hym to knowe that shee was in great distresse for his Loue. This poore soule hauing already forgotten his fortune past, began to walke vp and downe before her house, like a man altogether tormented and pained with Loue. Then Simphorosia, seing him to be farre in loue with her, sent hym a letter by an old woman, whereby she aduertised hym, that his beautie and good behauior, so puissantly did gouerne her affections as she could take no rest night nor day, for the earnest loue that she bare him: wherefore she praied him if it were his pleasure to come and speake with her. Philenio receiuing that letter, and perusing the contentes, not confidering the deceite prepared for him, ne yet any longer remembring the iniuries past, was more ioyfull and glad then euer he was before: who taking pen and paper, aunswere her againe, that he for his parte suffered no leſſe tormentes for her sake, yea and in respect of vnfayned Loue, that he loued her farre better than she did hym, and at al tymes when shee pleased, hee woulde be at her

commaundement to doe her seruice: the aunswere read, and oportunitie found, Simphorosia caused him to come home to her house, and after many false fighes, she saide vnto him: "My deare frend Philenio, I knowe none other in all the world, that hath brought me into this state and pligte wherein presently I am, but you, because your beautie, good grace and pleasaunt talke, haue so fette my harte on fyre as I feele it to kindle and burne like drye woode." Which talke Maister scholler hearing, thought assuredly that she consumed for loue of him: this poore Nodgecock, contriuing the time in sweete and pleasaunt woordes, with his dareling Simphorosia, the time approached that he should go to bed with his faire lady, who said vnto him: "My swete frend Philenio, abide a whyle, and let vs make some banquet and collation:" who taking him by the hande, caried him into her closet adioyning, wher was a table ready furnished with exquisit confects and wynes of the best. This gentlewoman had made a composition in the wyne, to cause this yong gallant to sleepe for a certain time. Philenio thinking no hurte, toke the cup and filled it with the wyne, and dranke it vp at one draught. His spirits reuived with this refreshing, after he had bene very well perfumed and washed in swete waters, he went to bedde and within a while after this drinke began to woorke, and hee slepte so soundly, as canon shot, or the greatest gonne of the worlde were not able to wake hym: then Simphorosia perceiuing the drinke beginne to woorke, called one of her sturdy maides that wel was instructed in the game of this pageant: both whiche caryng this poore sleepy scholler by the feete and armes, and opening the dore very softlye, they fayre and well bestowed hym in the middeste of the streeete, a good stone's caste of from the house, where he lay all the nighte. But when the dawning of the daye dyd appeare, or an houre before, the drynke lost his vertue, and the poore soule began to awake, and thinking that he had bene a bedde with the gentlewoman he perceiued hymself brechelesse and in his shirt more dead then alive, through the colde that he had endured, by lying starke naked vpon the earth. The poore wretche was not able to help himselfe so much as with his armes and legges, ne yet to stande vpon his feete without great paine: notwithstanding, through

creping and sprawling, hee got home to his house, vnseene of anye, and prouided so well as hee could for recovery of his health: and had it not been for his youth, which did helpe him at that instant, his sinewes had been benommed for euer. In the ende, hauing atteined his former state of health he still remembred the iniuries past, and without shewing any signe of anger or displeasure, made as though he loued them all three better then euer he did before, and sometime seemed to be in loue with the one, and sometime with an other: they againe for their part nothing mistrusting the malice of Philenio, set a good face on the matter, vinge amorous cheere and countenance towards him, but when his backe was tourned, with mockes and floutes they toke their pleasure. He bearing in his brest secrete despite, was still desirous with his hand to marke them in the face, but like a wise man, wayng the natures of women, he thought it woulde redounde to his greate shame and reproche, if hee did them any hurt: and therefore refrayning the heate of his choler vsed pacience. And yet by deuising and practising, how he might be euen with them and reuenged, hee was in great perplexitie. Very shortly after it chaunced that the scholler had inuented a meane, easely to satissie his desire, and so fone as hee had fully resolued what to do, fortune therunto was fauorable: who hyred in the citie of Bologna a very faire house which had a large hall, and comodious chambers: and purposed to make a greate and sumptuous feast, and to inuite many Ladies and Gentlewomen to the same: amongs whom these three were the first that should be bidden: which accordingly was done: and when the feast day was come the three gentlewomen that were not very wise at that instant, repaired thither nothing suspecting the scholler's malice. In the end a litle to recreate the Gentlewomen and to get them a stomacke, attendinge for supper time, the Scholler toke these his three louers by the hand, and led them friendly into a chamber, somewhat to refresh them. When these three innocent women were come into the Scholler's Chamber, hee shut fast the doore, and going towards them, he sayde: "Beholde faire ladies, now the time is come for me to be reuenged vpon you and to make you suffer the penance of the torment wherwith ye punished me for my great Loue,"

The Gentlewomen hearing those cruell woordes, rather dead then aliue, began to repent that euer they had offended him, and besides that, they cursed themselues, for giuinge credit vnto him whom they ought to haue abhorred. The Scholler with fierce and angry countenaunce commaunded them vpon paine of their liues to strippre themselues naked: which sentence when these three goddeses heard, they began to loke one vpon another, weeping and praying him, that although he woulde not for their fakes, yet in respect of his owne curtefie and naturall humanitie, that hee woulde saue their honor aboue all thinges. This gallant reioysing at their humble and pitifull requestes was thus curteous vnto them, that he would not once suffer them to stand with their garmentes on in his presence: the women casting themselues downe at his feete wept bitterly, beseeching him that he woulde haue pitie vpon them, and not to be the occasion of a flaunder so great and infamous. But he whose hart was hardened as the Diamonde, said vnto them, that this faute was not worthy of blame but rather of reuenge. The women dispoyled of their apparel (and standing before him, so free from couering as euer was Eue before Adam) appeared as beautifull in this their innocent state of nakednes, as they did in their brauerie: in so much that the yong scholler viewing from toppe to toe, those fayre and tender creatures, whose whiteneffe surpassesthe snow, began to haue pitie vpon them: but calling to his remembraunce the iniuries past and the daunger of death wherein he was, he reiecte all pitie and continued his harde and obftinate determination. Then he toke all their apparell, and other furnitures that they did weare, and bestowed it in a little chamber, and with threatning words commaunded all three to lie in one bed. The women altogether astonned, began to say to themselues: "Alas, what fooles be we? what wil our husbands and our frendes say, when they shal vnderstand that we be found naked and miserahlie flaine in this bed? It had been better for vs to haue died in our cradels, than apprehended and found dead in this state and plight." The Scholler seeing them bestowed one by another in the bed, like husband and wyfe, couered them with a very white and large sheete, that no part of their bodies might be seene and knownen, and shutting the Chamber

doore after him Phelenio went to seeke their husbands, which were dauncing in the hall: and the daunce ended, he intreated them to take the paines to goe with him: who was their guide into the Chamber where the three Muses lay in their bedde, saying vnto them: "Sirs, I haue broughte you into this place to shewe you some pastime and to let you see the fayrest thinges that euer you saw in your liues. Then approaching neere the bed, and holding a torch in his hand, he began fayre and softly to lift vp the shete at the bed's feete, discouering these fayre ladies euen to the knees. Ye should haue seen then, how the husbands did behold their white legges and their wel proporcioned feete, which don he disclosed them euen to the stomack, and shewed their legges and thighes farre whiter than alabaster, which seemed like two pillers of ffeue marble, with a rounde body so wel formed as nothing could be better: consequently he tourned vp the sheete a little further, and their stomackes appeared somewhat round and plumme, hauing two rounde breasts so firme and feate, as they would haue constrainyd the great God Jupiter to imbrace and kisse them. Whereat the husbandes toke so great pleasure and contentmente, as coulde be deuised: I omitte for you to thincke in what pligte these poore naked women weare, hearinge theyr husbandes to mocke them: all this while they laye very quiet, and durst not so much as to hem or coughe, for feare to be knownen: the husbands were earnest with the Scholler to discouer their faces, but hee wiser in other mennes hurtes than in his owne, would by no meanes consent vnto it. Not contented with this, the yong scholler shewed their apparel to their husbands, who seing the same were astonned, and in viewing it with great admiration, they said one to another: "Is not this the gowne that I once made for my wife? Is not this the coyfe that I bought her? Is not this the pendant that she weareth about her necke? be not these the rings that set out and garnisht her fingers?" Being gone out of the chamber for feare to trouble the feast, he would not suffer them to depart, but caused them to tarie supper. The Scholler vnderstandinge that supper was ready, and that the maister of the house had disposed all thinges in order, he caused the geastes to sit downe. And whiles they were remouing and placing the

stooles and chayres, he returned into the chamber, wher the three dames lay, and vncouering them, he sayd vnto them: "Bongiorno, faire Ladies: did you heare your husbandes? They be here by, and do earnestly tarie for you at supper. What do ye meane to do? Vp and rise ye dormoufes, rubbe your eyes and gape no more, dispatche and make you ready, it is time for you now to repayre into the hall, where the other gentlewomen do tarie for you." Behold now how this Scholer was reuenged by interteigning them after this maner: then the poore desolate women, fearing least their case would forte to som pitiful successe, dispayring of their health, troubled and discomfited, rose vp expecting rather death than any other thing: and tourning them toward the scholler they said vnto him: "Maister Philenio, you haue had sufficient reueng vpon vs: the best for you to do now, is to take your sword, and to berene us of oure life, which is more lothsome vnto vs than pleasaunt: and if you will not do vs that good tourne, suffer vs to go home to our houses vnknowen, that our honours may be sauad." Then Philenio thinking that he had at pleasure vsed their persons, deliuered them their apparel, and so fone as they were ready, he let them out at a litle dore, very secretlye vnknowen of anye, and so they went home to their houses. So fone as they had put of their fayre furnitures, they folded them vp, and layd them in their chestes: which done, they went about their houshold busines, till their husbands came home, who being retourned they founde their wives sowing by the fire fide in their chambers: and because of their apparell, their ringes and iewels, which they had seene in the Scholler's Chamber, it made them to suspect their wiues, euery of them demaunding his feuerall wife, where she had bin that nighte, and where their apparell was. They well assured of themselues, aunswere boldy, that they were not out of their house all the euening, and taking the keyes of their cofers shewed them their apparell, their ringes and other things, which their husbandes had made them. Which when their husbandes saw, they could not tell what to say, and forthwith reiected all suspicion, which they had conceiued: telling them from point to point, what they had seen that night. The women vnderstanding those woordes, made as though they knew nothing and

after a little sport and laughter betweene them, they went to bed. Many times Phelenio met his Gentlewomen in the streates and fayde vnto them: “Which of you was most afraide or worste intreated?” But they holding downe their heads, passed forth not speaking a word: in this maner the Scholler was requited so well as he could of the deceites done against him, by the three Gentlewomen aforesaid.

## THE FIFTYETH NOUELL.

*The piteous and chaste death of one of the muleters wiues of the  
Queene of Nauarre.*

IN the citie of Amboise, there was a muleter that serued the Queene of Nauarre, sister to king Fraunces the firste of that name, which was broughte a bedde of a sonne at Blois: to which towne the said muleter was gone to be paide his quarter's wages: whose wyfe dwelled at Amboise beyond the bridges. It chaunced that of long time one of her husband's seruauntes did so disordinate loue her, as vpon a certaine day he could not forbeare but he muste vtter the effect of his loue borne vnto her. Howbeit shee being a right honest woman, tooke her man's sute in very ill part, threatening to make her husband to beat him, and to put him away, and vsed him in suche wyse, that after that time he durst not speake thereof any more, ne yet to make figne or semblance: keeping yet that fier couered within his brest, vntill his Maister was ridden out of the towne, and that his Maistresse was at euensong at Saint Florentine's, a Church of the Castle, farre from her house: who now being alone in the house, began to imagine how he might attempt that thinge by force, which before by no supplication or seruice he was able to attaine. For which purpose, hee brake vp a borde betweene his Maistresse chamber and his: but because the curteins of his maister and maistresse bed, and of the seruauntes of the other side couered and hid the walles betweene, it could not be perceyned, nor yet his malice discried vntill suche time as his Maistresse was gone to bed, with a litle wenche of XII. yeares of age: and so sone as the poore woman was fallen into her first sleepe, this varlet entred in at a hole which he had broken, and conueyed himself into her bed in his shirt, with a naked sworde in his hande: who so sone as she felt him layed downe by her, lepte out of her bed, perfwading him by all possible meanes meete for an honest woman to do: and he indued with beastly loue, rather acquainted with the language of his mulets

than with her honest reasons, shewed himselfe more beastly then the beasts with whom he had of long time bin conuersant: for feing her so oft to runne about the table that he could not catch her, and also that she was so strong, that twise she ouercame him, in dispaire that he should neuer enjoy her aliue, hee gaue her a great blow with his sword ouer the raines of the back, thinking that if feare and force could not make her to yeld, paine and smart should cause her. Howbeit, the contrarie chaunced: for like as a good man of armes when he feeth his owne bloud, is more set on fier to be reuenged vpon his enemies to acquire honor: euen so the chaste hart of this woman, did reenforce and fortesie her courage in double wise, to auoyde and escape the hands of this wicked varlet, deuising by all meanes possiffe by fayre words to make him acknowledge his fault: but he was so inflamed with furie, there was no place in him to receiue good counsell. And eftsones with his sword, he gashed her tender bodye with diuers and sondry strokes, for the auoyding wherof, so fast as her legges could beare her, she ran vp and downe the chamber: and when through want of bloud she perceiued death approch, lifting vp her eyes vnto heaven, and ioyning her hands together, gaue thanckes vnto God, whom she termed to be her force, her vertue, her pacience and chastitie, humblie beseeching him to take in good part the bloude whiche by his commandemente was sheade in honor of that precious bloude, which from his owne sonne did issue vpon the Croffe, whereby shee did beleeue, firmelye and stedfastlye that all her finnes were wiped awaye and defaced from the memorye of his wrathe and anger, and in fayinge: "Lorde receiue my soule which was dearely bought and redeemed with thy bounty and goodnes:" shee fell downe to the ground vpon her face where the wycked villaine inflicted her bodye with manifold wounds: and after she had lost her speache and the force of her body, thys most wicked and abhominable varlet toke her by force, whiche had no more strength and power to defende herselfe: and when he had satissified his cursed desire, he fled away in such hast, as afterwards for all the purfute made after him he could not be found. The yong wench which lay

with her, for feare hid her selfe vnder the bed. But when she perceyued the villaine departed, shee came vnto her Maistresse and finding her speachleffe and without mouing, she cryed out at the window vnto the nexte neighbours to come to succour her: and they which loued her and esteemed her so wel as any woman in the towne, came presently vnto her, and brought diuers surgeons with them, who findinge vpon her body xxv. mortall woundes, they did so much as in them laye to helpe her: but it was impossible. Howbeit shee laye one houre without speache, makinge signes with hir eyes and hands, declaring that she had not lost her vnderstanding: being demaunded by the priest, of the fayth wherin she died, and of her saluacion, she aunswere by such euident signes, as her liuely speach and communication coulde not haue declared it better, howe that her trust and confidence was in the death of Iefus Christ, whom she hoped to see in the Celestiall citie, and so with a ioyfull countenaunce, her eyes erected vp to the heauens, she rendred her chaste body to the earth, and her soule to her Creator: and when shee was shrouded ready to the buriall, as her neighbours were attending to followe her to the Church, her poore husbande came home, and the first sight he sawe, was the body of his dead wife before his doore, wherof before that instant hee had no newes. And when he vnderstode the order of her death, he then doubled his sorrowe, in such wyse that he was also like to die. In this sort was this marter of chastitie buried in the church of S. Florentine, where all the honest dames and wiues of the citie endeuoured themselues to accompany her, and to honour her with suche reuerence as they were able to do: accomptinge themselues most happie to dwell in that towne, where a woman of such vertuous behauour did dwell. The foolish and wanton seing the honour done to that deade bodye, determined from that time forth to renue their former life, and to chaunge the same into a better.

## THE FIFTY-FIRST NOUELL.

*A king of Naples, abusing a Gentleman's wife, in the end did weare the hornes himselfe.*

IN the citie of Naples when king Alphonsus raigned, in whose time wantonnesse bare chiefest sway, there was a Gentleman so honest, beautifull and comely, as for his good conditions and wel knownen behauour an old Gentleman gaue to him his daughter in mariage, which in beautie and good grace was passingly well beloued and comfortable to her husband. The Loue was great betwene them, till it chaunced vpon a shrouetide that the king went a masking into the citie, where euery man endeououred to intertwaine him the best he could. And when he came to this Gentleman's house, he was best receyued of any place in all the towne, aswell for banqueting, as for musicall songes, and the Gentlewoman, the fayrest that the king sawe in all the citie to his contentacion. And vpon the end of the banquet, she sang a song with her husbande, with a grace so good as it greatly augmented her beautie. The king seeing so many perfections in one body, conceyued not so great pleasure in the sweete accords of her husband and her, as he did howe to deuise to interrupt and breake them: and the difficultie for bringinge that to passe, was the great amitie that hee sawe betweene them, wherfore he bare in his hart that passion so couert, as he possibily could. But partly for his owne solace and comforte, and partly for good will of all, hee feasted all the Lords and Ladys of Naples, where the Gentleman and his wife were not forgotten. And because man willingly beleeueth that he doth see, he thought that the lokes of that gentlewoman promised vnto him some grace in time to come, if the presence of her husband were no let therunto. And to proue whether his conjecture were true, he sent her husbande in commission to Rome, for the space of xv. dayes or iii. wekes. And so fone as he was gone, his wyfe which hitherto had not felt any long absence from her husband, made great forrow

for the same, whereof she recomforted by the king, many times by sweete perswasions and by presents and gifts, in such sort, that she was not onely comforted, but contented with her hufbande's absence. And before the three weekes were expired of his returne, she was so amorous of the king as she was no leffe sorowful of his comming home, then she was before for his departure. And to the intent the king's prefence might not be losse, they agreed together, that when her husband was gone to his posses-sions in the countrie, she shoulde send word to the king, that he might haue safe repair vnto her, and so secretly that his honour, (which he feared more then he did the fact) might not be impaired. Vpon this hope, this Ladie's hart was set on a merie pin: and when her husband was come home, shée welcomed him so wel, that albeit he knewe how the king made much of her in his absence, yet he would not beleue that he so did for any dishonest fact. Howbeit by continuance of time, this fier that could not be couered, by litle and litle began to kindle, in such wise as the husband doubted much of the truth, and watched the matter so neere, as he was almost oute of doubt. But for feare, least the partie which did the wrong, should do him greater hurt, if he seemed to know it, he determined to dissemble the matter: for he thought it better to liue with some griefe, then to hazard his life for a woman that did not loue him: notwithstanding, for this displeasure, he thought to be euen with the king if it were possible. And knowinge that many times despite maketh a woman to do that which Loue cannot bring to passe, specially those that haue honourable harts and stoute stomacks, was so bold without blushing, vpon a day in speaking to the Queene, to say unto her, that he had pitie vpon her, for that shée was no better beloued of the king her husband. The Queene which heard tell of the loue betwene the king and his wife: "I cannot (quoth she) both enjoy honour and pleasure together: I knowe well that honor I haue, whereof one receiueth the pleasure, and as she hath the pleasure, so hath not she the honor." He which knewe wel by whom those words were spoken, said vnto her: "Madame, honor hath waited vpon you [euen from your birth, for you be of so good a house, as to be a queene or Empresse, you cannot

augment your nobilitie, but your beautie, grace, and honestie, hath deserued so much pleasure, as she that depriueth you of that which is incident to your degree, doth more wrong to her self then to your person. For she for a glorie that hath turned her to shame, hath therewithall lost so much pleasure, as your grace or any Lady in the realme may haue. And I may fayne vnto you (Madame) that if the kinge were no king as he is, I thincke that he could not excel me in pleasing of a woman: being sure that to satisfie such a vertuous personage as you be, he might exchaunge his complexion with mine.” The Queene smiling, answered him: “Although the king be of more delicate and weaker complexion than you be, yet the loue that he beareth mee, doth so much content mee, as I esteeme the same aboue all thinges in the world.” The gentleman said vnto her: “Madame, if it were so, I woulde take no pitie vpon you, for I know wel that the honest loue of your hart, would yeld vnto you great contentment, if the like were to be found in the king: but God hath foreseeene and preuented the same, least enioyinge your owne desire, you would make him your God vpon earth.” “I confesse vnto you (saide the Queene) that the Loue I beare him, is so great, as the like place he could not find in no woman’s hart, as he doth in mine.” “Pardon me, madame (saide the Gentleman) if I speake more francklye, your grace hath not founded the depth of ech man’s harte. For I dare be bold to say vnto you, that I do know one that doth loue you, and whose loue is so great, as your loue in respecte of his is nothing. And for so much as he feeth the kinge’s loue to faile in you his doth grow and increase, in such sort, that if your loue were agreeable vnto his, you should be recompensed of all your losses.” The Queene aswel by his words as by his countenaunce, began to perceiue, that the talke proceded from the bottom of his hart, and called to her remembraunce that long time he had endeuored to do her service, with such affection, as for loue he was growen to be melancolike, which she thought before, to rife through his wiue’s occasion, but now she assuredly beleued that it was for her sake. And thus the force of Loue, which is well discryed when it is not fayned, made her sure of that, which was vnknownen to all the

world. And beholding the gentleman which was more amiable than her husband, and seing that he was forsaken of his wife, as she of the king, pressed with despite and ialoufie of her husband, and prouoked with loue of the gentleman, began to say with finger in eye, and fighing sobbs: "O my God, must vengeaunce get and win that at my hand, which Loue cannot doe?" The gentleman well vnderstanding her meaning, aunsweread: "Madame, vengeance is sweete vnto him which in place of killinge an ennemye, giueth life to a perfecte freinde. I thincke it time that trouth doe remoue from you the foolishe loue, that you beare to him which loueth you not: and that iust and reasonable loue should expell from you the feare, which out not remaine in a noble and vertuous hart. But now madame, omittinge to speake of the greatnesse of your estate, let vs confider that we be both man and woman, the most deceiued of the world, and betrayed of them which we haue most dearely loued. Let vs now be reuenged (madame) not onely to render vnto them, what they deserue, but to satissie the loue which for my part I can no longer beare, except I should die. And I thincke, that if your harte be not harder than flinte, or Diamont, it is impossible but you must perceiue som sparke of fier, which increaseth more than I am able to dissemble: and if pitie of me which dieth for your loue, doth not moue you to loue me, at least wyfe let loue of your selfe constraine you, which (being so perfect a creature as you be) doth deserue to enjoy the hartes of the noblest and most vertuous of the world. Suffer I say, the contempt and forsaking of him, [to] moue you, for whom you haue disdayned al other perfsons." The Queene hearing thosse wordes, was so rauished, as for feare to declare by her countenaunce the trouble of her spirite, leaning vpon the Gentleman's arme, went into a garden hard by her Chamber, where she walked a long time not able to speake a woord. But the Gentleman seeing her halfe wonne, when he was at the ende of the Alley where none could see them, hee certified her by effect, the loue which so long time he kept secrete from her. And both with one consent reioyced in reuenge, whereof the passion was importable. And there determined, that so oft as hee went into the Country, and the king

from his Castell into the Citie, he shoulde retourne to the Castel to see the Quene. Thus deceyuing the deceyuers, all foure were partakers of the pleasure, which two alone thought to enioy. The accord made, they departed, the Lady to her Chamber, and the Gentleman to his houſe, with ſuſh contentacion, as they had quite forgotten al theyr troubles paſt. And the feare which either of them had of the assembly of the king and of the Gentlewoman, was tourned to deſire, which made the Gentleman to go more oft then he was wonte to doe into the countrye, being not paſt halfe a mile of. And ſo ſone as the king knew therof, he fayled not to viſite his Lady, and the gentleman the night following went to the Castle to ſalute the Queene, to do the office of the kinge's Lieuenaunt, ſo ſecrety as no man did perceiue it. This voyage endured long time, but the king becauſe he was a publike perſon, could not ſo well diſſemble his Loue, but all the worlde diſtended it, and all men pitied the gentleman's ſtate. For diuers light perſons behinde his backe would make hornes vnto him, in ſigne of mockerie, which he right well perceyued. But this mockerie pleafed him ſo wel, as he eſteemed his hornes better then the king's Crowne. The king and the Gentleman's wife one day, could not refraine (beholding a Stagge's head ſet vp in the Gentleman's houſe) from breaking into a laughter before his face, ſaying, how that head became the houſe very well. The gentleman that had ſo good a hart as he, wrote ouer that head theſe words.

*These hornes I weare and beare for euery man to view,  
But yet I weare them not in token they be trew.*

The king retourning againe to the Gentleman's houſe, finding this title newlye written, demaunded of the gentleman the ſignification of them.

Who faid vnto him :

*"If princeſſe ſecret things, be from the horned hart concealed,  
Why ſhould like things of horned beaſtes, to Princes be revealed.*

But content your ſelfe: all they that weare hornes be pardoned to weare their capps vpon their heads: for they be ſo ſweete and pleauant, as they vncappe no man, and they weare them ſo light, as they thincke they haue none at all." The king knew well by

his wordes that he smelld something of his doings, but he neuer suspected the loue betwene the Queene and him. For the Queene was better contented wyth her husbande's life, and with greater ease dissembed her grieve. Wherefore eyther parts lived long time in this loue, till age had taken order for dissolucion thereof,

“Behold Ladyes (quoth Saffredante) this Historye which for example I have willinglye recited to thintente that when your husbands do make you hornes as big as a Goate, you maye render unto him the monstrous heade of a Stagge.” “Peace (quoth Emarsuite smyling) no more wordes, leaft you reuiue some sleeping sweet soule, which without sturwould not awake, with any whis- pring.”

## THE FIFTY-SECOND NOUELL.

*The rafshe enterprise of a Gentleman against a Princeffe of Flaunders, and of the shame that he receyued thereof.*

THERE was in Flaunders a Lady of an honorable house, which had two husbands, by whom shee had no children that were then liuinge. Duringe the time of her widowhoode shee dwelte within one of her brothers, that loued her very well, which was a noble man, and had maried a king's doughter. This yong Prince was muche giuen to pleasure, louinge huntinge, pastime, and the company [of fayre Ladyes, accordingly as youth requireth. He had a wyfe that was curst and troublesome, whom the delectations of her husband in no wyse did contente and please: wherefore this noble man caused his sister daily to keepe company with his wyfe. This Gentlewoman his sister was of pleasaunt conuersation, and therewithal very honest and wyse. There was in the house of this noble man, a Gentleman whose worship, beautye and grace did surpasse all the rest of his companions. This Gentleman perceyuing the sister of his Lorde and Maister to be pleasaunte and of ioyfull countenaunce, thoughte to proue if the attempt of an honest frende would be vouchsaued, but he founde her aunswere to be contrary to her countenaunce: and albeit that her aunswere was such as was meete for a Princeffe and right honest Gentlewoman, yet because shee perceyued him to be a goodly personage, and curteous, she easily pardoned his bold attempt, and seemed that she toke it not in ill part when he spake vnto her. Neuerthelesse shee warned him, after that time, to moue no such matter, which he promised, because he would not lose his pleasure, and the honour that hee conceyued to entertaine her. Notwithstandinge, by processe of time his affection increased so much as he forgot the promise which he had made her, wherefore he thoughte good not to hazarde his enterprise by wordes, for that hee had to long against his wyll experimented her wyfe and discrete aunswares: and therewithall he thought if he could

finde her in some conueient place (because she was a yong widow, of lusty yeares and good complexion) it were possible shée woulde take pitie vpon him, and of herself. And that he might bring his purpose to effecte, he said to his Maister that he had besides his owne house very goodlie game, and that if it pleased him to kill three or foure Stagges in the moneth of May, he should see very good pastime. The Lord aswell for the loue hee bare to the Gentleman, as for the pleasure he had in hunting, graunted his request: and went to his house, which was so faire and well furnished, as the best Gentleman in all the countrey had no better. The gentleman lodged his Lord and Lady in one fide of the house, and in the other directly against it her whome he loued better than himselfe. The Chamber where his maistres laye, was so well hanged with tapistrie, and so trimely matted, as it was impossible to perceiue a falling dore, harde by the bed's fide, descending to his mother's chamber, which was an old Lady, much troubled with the Catarre and Rume. And because she had a cough, fearing to disease the Princesse which laye aboue her, she chaunged her chamber with her sonne. And euery night the olde Gentlewoman brought comfets to the Lady for her recreation, vpon whom the Gentleman wayted, who (for that he was well beloued and very familier with her brother) was not refused to be present at her rising and going to bedde. Whereby he daily toke occasion to increase his loue and affection: in suche forte as one night, after he had caused the Ladye to fit vp late, (she being surpised with sleepe) he was forced to depart the chamber, and to repaire to his own. Wher when he had put on the most brauest perfumed shirt that he had, and his cap for the night so trimmely dressed, as there wanted nothing, he thought in beholding himself, that there was no Lady in the world that would refuse his beautie and comelinesse. Wherefore promifing himselfe a happie successe in his enterprise, hee went to his bed where he purposed not long to abide, for the desire that he had to enter into another, whiche should be more honourable and pleasaunt vnto him. And after he had sent his men away, he rose to shut the dore after them, and hearkened a good while, whether he could heare any noyse in the Ladie's chamber aboue. And when he was

sure that euery man was at rest, he began to take his pleasaunt iourney, and by litle and litle opened the falling dore, whiche was so well trimmed with cloth, that it made no noyse at all, and went vp to the Ladie's bed fide, which then was in her first sleepe, and without respecte of the bonde and promise that he made vnto her, or the honorable house wheroft she came, without leaue or reuerence, he laid himselfe down besides her, who felt him betwene her armes before she perceiued his comming. But she which was somewhat strong, vnfolded her self out of his handes, and in asking him what he was, began to strike, to bite and scratche, in suche wyse, as he was constrained (for feare least she should crye out) to stoppe her mouth with the couerlet, which was impossible for him to do. For when she sawe him to preesse with all his force to despoyle her of her honor, she spared no part of her might to defende and kepe her selfe, and called (so loude as she could) her woman of honor, that laye in her chamber, whiche was a very auncient and sober gentlewoman, who in her smock, ran straight to her maistresse. And when the Gentleman perceiued that hee was discouered, hee was so fearfull to be knownen of the Ladie, as sone as he could hee shifted himself down by his trapdore. And where before he conceiued hope and assuraunce to be welcome, now he was brought in despaire for retournynge in so vnhappy state. When he was in his chamber, he found his glasse and candle vpon the table, and beholding his face all bloudy with the scratchings and bitinges, whiche shee had bestowed vpon him, the bloud wheroft ran down his fayre shyrte, better bloudied then gilded, he began to make his moone in this wife: "O beautie, thou art nowe payed thy desert, for vpon thy vayne promise haue I aduentured a thing impossible. And that which might haue bene the augmenting of my delight is nowe the redoubling of my forowe. Being assured that if she knewe howe contrary to my promise I haue enterprised this foolishe fact, I shoulde vtterly forgoe the honest and common conuersation whiche I haue with her aboue al other. That which my estimation, beautie and good behauour doe deserue, I ought not to hyde in darkeneffe. To gaine her loue, I ought not to haue assayed her chaste bodye by force, but rather by seruice and humble pacience, to wayte and attend till

loue did vanquishe. For without loue all the vertue and puissance of man is of no power and force." Euen thus he paſſed the night in ſuch teares, grieves and plaintes, as can not be well reported and vttered. In the morning, when he beheld his bloudy face all mangled and torne, he fained to be very ſicke, and that he could abide no light, til the company were gone from his house. The Ladie whiche thus remained victorious, knowing that there was no man in all her brother's Court, that durſt attempt a deede ſo wicked, but her hofte which was ſo bolde to declare his loue vnto her, knew well that it was he. And when ſhe and her woman of honour had ſearched all the corners of the chamber to knowe what he was, and could not finde hym, ſhe ſayd vnto her woman in great rage: "Affiſſe your ſelfe it can be none other, but the Gentleman of the house, whose villainous order I wyll reueale to my brother in the morning, in ſuch forte, as his head ſhalbe a witneſſe and testimony of my chaſtitie." Her woman feing her in that furie, ſayd vnto her; "Madame, I am right glad to ſee the loue and affection which you beare to your honor, for the increase wheroft you doe not ſpare the life of one, which hath aduentured himſelfe ſo muſche for the loue that hee beareth vnto you. But many times ſuch one thinketh by thoſe meanes to increase loue, which altogether he doth diminifhe. Wherefore (Madame) I humbly beſeche you to tell me the truthe of this facē." And when the Ladie had recompted the ſame at lengthe, the woman of honour ſayd vnto her: "Your grace doth ſay that he got no other thyng of you, but ſcratches and blowes with your fifteſ." "No, I affiſſe you (quod the Ladie) and I am certaine if hee gette hym not a good Surgeon, the markes will be feene to morowe." "Wel Madame (quod the gentlewoman) ſithens it is ſo, me thinketh you haue greater occaſion to prayſe God, then to muſe vpon reuenge: For you may beleue, that ſithens he had the courage to enterpriſe ſo great an exploiſ, and that deſpite hath failed him of his purpose, you can deuife no greater death for him to ſuffer, then the ſame. If you deſire to be reuenged, let Loue and shame alone bring that to paſſe, who knowe better which way to torment him than your ſelfe, and with greater honor to your perſone. Take heede Madame from falling into ſuch inconuenience as he is in, for in

place of great pleasure whiche he thought to haue gayned, he hath receiued the extrekest anoyance, that any gentleman can suffer. And you Madame, by thinking to augment your honor, you may decrease and diminish the fame. And by making complaint, you shal cause that to be knownen, which no man knoweth. For of his part (you may be assured) there shall neuer be anything reuealed. And when my Lorde your brother at your reueste, shall execute the iustice which you desire, and that the poore Gentleman shal be ready to die, the brute will runne that he hath had his pleasure vpon you. And the greatest numbre will say, that it is very difficult for a Gentleman to doe suche an enterprise, except the Lady minister some great occasion. Your grace is faire and yong, frequenting your life in pleasant company, there is none in all the Court, but feeth and marketh the good countenaunce you beare to that Gentleman, whereof your selfe hath some suspicion: which will make every man suppose that if he hath done this enterprise, it was not without some consent from you. And your honor which hetherto hath borne your port a loft, shall be disputed vpon in all places where this historie shall be remembred." The Princesse well wayng the good reasons and aduise of her gentlewoman, knewe that she spake the truthe: and that by moste iust cause she should be blamed: confidering the familiaritie and good countenaunce which dayly she bare vnto the Gentleman. Wherefore she inquired of her woman of honour, what was beste to bee done. Who aunswere her thus. "Madame, sith it pleaseth you to receiue mine aduise, by wayng the affection whereof it procedeth, me thinke you ought in your hart to reioyce, that the goodliest, and moste curteous Gentleman that liueth, could neither by loue, or force, despoile you of your greatest vertue and chasitie. For which (Madame) you are bounde to humble your selfe before God, acknowledging that it is not done by your vertue, because many women walking iu a more painful and more vnpleasaunt trade then you do, haue humiliatid and brought low by men farre more vnworthy of loue, then he which loueth you. And ye ought now to feare more than euer you did, to vfe any semblance and take of amitie, because there haue bene many that haue fallen the second time into daungers and perils, which they haue auoyded at the

first. Remember (Madame) that loue is blind, who blaseth mens eyes in such fort, as where a man thinketh the waye moste sure, ther his moste readie to fal. And I suppose Madame, that you ought not to feme to be priuie of this chaunce, neither to him, ne yet to any els, and when he remembreth anye thing to you, doe make as though you did not vnderstande his meaning, to auoyde twoo daungers. The one of vaine glorie for the victorie you haue had, the other to take pleasure in remembiring things, that be so pleasaunt to the flesh, which the most chaste hane had much a do to defend theimselues from feling some sparkes, although they seke meanes to shunne and auoyde them with all their possible power. Moreouer, Madame, to thende that he thinke not by suche hazard and enterprise to haue done a thing agreeable to your minde, my counsell is, that by litle and litle, you doe make your selfe straunge, and vse no more your wonted grace vnto him, that he may know how much you despise his folly and consider how great your goodnesse is, by contenting your self with the victory which God hath geuen you, without seeking any further vltion or renengement. And God graunt you grace (Madame) to continue that honestie which hee hath planted in your hart, and by acknowledging that all goodnesse procedeth from him, you may loue him and serue him, better than euer ye did." The Princeffe determined to credite the counsayle of her gentlewoman, slepte with so great ioye as the poore gentleman waked with sorrow. On the morrow the noble man ready to depart, asked for his hoste, vnto whom answere was made that he was so ficke, as he could not abide the light, or endure to heare one speake. Wherof the Prince was fore abashed, and would haue visited him, but that it was told him he was a slepe, and was very loth to wake him. Wherefore without bidding him farewell, he departed, taking with him his wife and fister, who hearing the excuse of the Gentleman that would not see the Prince, nor yet his companie, at their departure, was persuaded that it was he, that had done her al that torment, and durst not shew the markes which she had signed in his face. And although his Maister did fende oftimes for him yet came he not to the Court, vntill he was healed of his woundes, except that whiche loue and despite had made in his harte. When he came to the Courte and appeared be-

fore his victorious enemie, he blushed for shame of his ouer throwe,  
And he which was the stouteſt of all the company was ſo аſtonned  
as many times being in her preſence, hee could not tell which way  
to loke or tourne his face. Wherfore ſhe was аffured that her  
fufpicion was certain and true, by little and little eſtraunging her  
ſelf from him, but it was not done ſo ſleightly or politikely  
but that he perceiued well enough, and yet he durſt  
make no femblaunce, for feare of worfe aduenture.

Notwithſtanding he conſerued both loue in his  
hart, and pacience in his minde, for the  
loſſe of his Ladie's fauour, which he  
had right well deſerued.

## THE FIFTY-THIRD NOUELL.

*The loue of Amadour and Florinda: wherein be conteined mani sleightes and diffimulations, together with the renoumed chaftitie of the said Florinda.*

IN the Countie of Arande, in Aragon, a region in Spaine, there was a Ladie whiche in the best time of her youth, continued the widow of the Earle of Arande, with one sonne, and one daughter, called Florinda. The fayde Lady brought vp her children in all vertue and honestie, meete and conuenable for Lordes and Gentlemen, in such forte, as her house was renoumed to be one of the most honorable in all the Region of Spaine. Many times she repaired to Tolledo, where the kinge of Spaine helde his Court, and when she came to Sarragosa, which was harde adioyning to the court, she continued long with the Queene, and in the Courte, where she was had in so good estimation as any Lady might be. Vpon a time going towards the king, according to her custome, which was at Sarragosa, in his castle of Iafferie, this Lady passed by a village that belonged to the Viceroy of Catalongne, who still continued vpon the frontiers of Parpignon, for the great warres that were betwene the Frenche king and him. Howebeit, at that time peace being concluded, the Viceroy with all his captaines were come to do reuerence to the king. The Viceroy knowing that the Countesse of Arrande did passe through his countrie, went to mete her, as well for auncient amitie, as for the honor he bare vnto her being allied to the kyng. Nowe this Viceroy had in his compayne diuers honest Gentlemen, whiche through the frequentation and continuance of the long warres, had gotten suche honour and fame, as euery man that might see them and behold them did accompt them selues happy. But amonges all other, there was one called Amadour, who although he was but xviii. or xix. yeares of age, yet he had such an assured grace and witte so excellent, as he was demed amongs a thousand personnes worthy to haue the gouvernement of a common wealth, whiche good witte was coupled with maruellous naturall beautie, so that there

was no eye, but did content it self eftstones to beholde hym. And this beautie so exquifite, was affociated with wonderfull eloquence, as doubtfull to say, whether merited greatest honor, either his grace and beautie, or his excellent tongue. But that which brought him into best reputation, was his great hardineffe, whereof the common reporte and brute was nothing impeached or staied for all his youth. For in so many places he shewed his chialrie, as not only Spain but Fraunce and Italie, did fingularly commend and set forth his vertue: bicause in all the warres wherin he was present, he neuer spared him self for any daunger. And when his countrie was in peace and quiet, he sought to ferue in straunge places, being loued and estemed both of his frendes and enemies. This Gentleman for the loue of his Captaine was come into that countrey, where was arriued the Countesse of Arande, and in beholding the beautie and good grace of her daughter, which was not then past xii. yeres of age, he thought that she was the fairest and most vertuous personage that euer he sawe: and that if he could obtaine her good will, he shoulde be so well satissified as if he had gained all the goods and pleasures of the worlde. And after he had a good whyle viewed her, for all the impossibilitie that reaſon could deuise to the contrary, he determined to loue her, although ſome occaſion of that impossibilitie might ryfe through the greatnessſe of the house wherof ſhe came, and for want of age which was not able as yet to vnderſtande the paſſions of loue. But againſt the feare thereoſt he was armed with good hope, perſuading himſelfe, that time and patience would bring happye ende to his trauayle: and from that time gentle Loue whiche without any other occaſion than by his own force was entred the harte of Amadour, promiſed him fauour and helpe by all meaneſſe poſſible to attaine the fame. And to prouide for the greatest difficultie, which was the farre diſtance of the countrie wher he dwelt, and the ſmall occaſion that he had thereby any more to ſee Florinda, he thought to marry againſt his determination made with the ladies of Barſelone and Parpignon, amounges whom he was ſo conuerſant by reaſon of the warres, as he ſemed rather to be a Cathelan, than a Caſtillan, although he wer borne by Tollede, of a riche and honourable houſe, yet

bicause he was a yonger brother, he injoyed no great patrimonie or reueneue. Notwithstanding, loue and fortune seing him forsaken of his parentes, determined to accomplishe some notable exployt in him, and gaue him (by meanes of his vertue) that which the lawes of his countrey refused to geue. He had good experience in factes of warre, and was so well beloued of al Princes and Rulers, as he refused many times their goodes, being resolued not to care or esteme the benefites of Fortune. The Countesse of whome I spake, arriued thus at Saragossa, was very well intertained of the king, and of his whole Court. The Gouernour of Catalogne, many times came thither to visite her, whom Amadour neuer failed to accompany, for the onely pleasure he had to talke with Florinda: and to make himselfe to be knownen in the company, hee went to Auenturade, whiche was the daughter of an old knight that dwelt hard by the house, whiche from her youth was brought vp with Florinda, in such familiar forte, as she knewe all the secrets of her harte. Amadour, as well for the honestie that he found in her, as for the liuing of 111.M. ducates by the yeare which she should haue with her in mariage, determined to geue her such intertaignement, as one that was disposed to marry her. Wherunto the gentlewoman did willingly recline her eare: and bicause he was poore, and the father of the damosell rich, she thought that her father would neuer accorde to the mariage, except it were by meanes of the Countesse of Arande. Wherupon she went to madame Florinda, and faide vnto her: "Madame, you see this Castillan gentleman, which so oftentimes talketh with me, I doe beleue that his pretence is to marry me: you do know what a father I haue, who will neuer geue his consent, if he be not persuaded therunto by my Lady your mother and you." Florinda which loued the damosell as her selfe, assured her that shee would take vpon her to bring that matter to passe, with so earnest traunaile as if the case were her own. Then Auenturade brought Amadour before Florinda, who after he had saluted her, was like to fall in a sowne for ioy, and although he were compted the mooste eloquent persone of Spaine, yet was he now become mute and dumb before Florinda, wherat she maruelled much: for albeit she was but XII. yeares of age, yet she vnderstode that there was no

man in Spaine that had a better tongue, or a more conuenable grace than he. And seing that he said nothing vnto her, she spake vnto him in this wise: "The fame which is bruted of you (sir Amadour) throughout the whole countrie of Spaine, is such as it maketh you knownen and estemed in this company, and giueth desire and occasion to thosse that know you, to employ themselfes to do you pleasure: wherefore if there be any thing wherin I may gratifie you, vse me I besech you." Amadour that gased vpon the beautie of that lady, was rapt and surprised, not well able to render thankes vnto her. And although Florinda maruelled to see him without aunswere, yet she imputed it rather to bashfulnesse than to any force of loue, and departed without further talke. Amadour knowing the vertue which in so tender yeares began to appeare in Florinda, saide vnto her whome he purposed to marry: "Doe not maruell, though my speache do fayle before Madame Florinda, for the vertues and discretion, hidden in that yonge personage, did so amase mee, as I wiste not what to saye: but I praye you Auenturade (quod he) who knoweth all her secretes, to tell me, if it be otherwyse possible, but that she hath the harte of all the Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court: for they which know her and doe not loue her, be stones, or beastes." Auenturade whiche then loued Amadour more than all the men in the worlde, and would conceale nothing from him, said vnto him: that Madame Florinda was generally beloued: but for the custome of the countrie, fewe men did speake unto her. "And (quod she) as yet I se none that make any semblance of loue vnto her, but two young Princes of Spaine, which desire to marry her, whereof the one is the sonne of the Infant Fortune, and the other of the Duke of Cadouce." "I praye you then (quod Amadour) to tell me which of them as you think, doth loue her best." "She is so wise" said Auenturade, "that she will confesse or graunt her loue to none, but to such as her mother pleafeth. But yet so far as we can iudge she fauoureth muche better the sonne of the Infant Fortune, than the Duke of Cadouce: and for that I take you to be a man of good iudgment, this day you shall haue occasion to confider the truth: for the sonne of the Infant Fortune is brought vp in Court, and is one of the goodliest and perfectest

yong Gentlemen in al christendome: and if the mariage do pro-  
cede, according to our opinion, which be her women, he shalbe  
assured to haue Madame Florinda: and then shalbe ioyned  
together the goodliest couple in the world. And you must vnder-  
stand, that although they be both very yong, she of xii. yeares  
of age, and he of xv. yet is there three yeares past since their loue  
first began: and if you be disposed aboue other to obtain her  
fauour, mine aduise is, that ye become friend and seruaunt vnto  
him." Amadour was very ioyfull to heare tell that his Lady  
loued some man, trusting that in tyme he should wynne the  
place, not of husbande, but of seruaunt: for he feared nothing  
at all of her vertue, but a lacke of disposition to loue. And after  
this communication, Amadour bent himselfe to haunt the societie  
of the sonne of the Infant Fortune, whose good will he fone  
recouered, for all the pastimes whiche the yong Prince loued,  
Amadour could doe right well: and aboue other, he was very  
cunning in riding of horsses, and in handling al kindes of armes  
and weapons, and in all other pastimes and games meete for a yong  
Gentleman. Warres began in Languedoc, and Amadour was  
forced to retire with the Gouvernour, to his great sorrowe and grief,  
for he had there no meane to returne to the place where he  
might se Florinda. For which cause he spake to his owne bro-  
ther, whiche was Steward of the king of Spaine's houſhold, and  
declared vnto him what courtesie he had found in the house of the  
Countesse of Arande, and of the damofel Auenturade: praying  
him that in his absence he would do his indeuour, that the mariage  
might proceede, and that he would obtaine for him the credit and  
good opinion of the king and Queene, and of al his friendes. The  
Gentleman which loued his brother, as well by nature's infigation,  
as for his great vertues, promised him his trauaile and industrie  
to the vttermoste. Which he did in such wise as the old man her  
father, nowe forgetting other naturall respect, began to marke  
and beholde the vertues of Amadour, which the Countesse of  
Arande, and specially faire Florinda, painted and set foorth  
vnto him, and likewyse the Yong earl of Arande whiche increased  
in yeares, and therewithall in loue of those that were vertuous,  
and geuen to honest exercise. And when the mariage was agreed

D

betweene the parentes, the said Steward fent for his brother whilst the truce endured betwene the two kings. About this time, the king of Spain retired to Madric, to aymoyd the euil aire that was in many places, where by the aduise of diuers of his counsell, and at the request of the Countesse of Arande, he made a mariage betwene the yong Duchesse the heire of Medina Celi, and the yong Earle of Arande, as wel for the vnion of their houfe, as also for the loue he bare to the said Countesse. And this mariage was celebrated in the Castell of Madric, whereunto repaired Amadour, who so well obtained his suite, as he maried her, of whom he was muche better beloued, than his smal loue toward her deserued, sauing that it was a couerture and meanes for him to frequent the place where his minde and delight incessantly remained: after he was maried, he became well acquainted and familiar in the house of the Countesse, so that he was so conuersaunt amonges the Ladies, as if he had bene a woman: and although hee was then but xxii. yeares of age, he was so wife and graue, as the Countesse imparted vnto him all her affaires, commaunding her sonne and daughter to intertwayne him, and to credite all thinges wherein hee gaue counsell. Hauing wonne this great estimation, he behaued him selfe so wyse and politike, that euuen the partie whiche he loued knewe no parte of his affection: but by reason of the loue that Florinda bare to the wife of Amadour, whome shee loued more than any other woman, she was so familiar with him, as shee dissembled no part of her thought, declaring vnto him all the loue that she bare the sonne of the Infant Fortune: and he that desired nothing more than throughly to winne her, ceassed not from continuance of talke, not caring whereof he spake, so that he might hold her with long discourse: Amadour had not after his mariage continued a moneth in that companie, but was constrained to retire to the warres, where hee continued more than twoo yeares, without retourne to see his wife, who still abode in the place where she was brought vp. During the time, Amadour wrote many letters vnto his wife, but the chiefest substance therof consisted in commendations to Florinda, who for her part failed not to render like vnto him, many times writing some pretie worde or posie with her own hand, in the

letter of Auenturade. Which made her husband Amadour diligent many times to write again vnto her, but in al this doing Florinda conceiued nothing, but that he loued her with such like loue as the brother oweth to the sifter. Many times Amadour went and came, but in the space of five yeares he neuer sawe Florinda twoo monethes together: notwithstanding, Loue in despite of their distaunce and long absence, ceassed not to increase: and it chaunced that hee made a voyage home to see his wyfe, and founde the Countesse farre from the court, bicause the kyng of Spain was done to Vandeloufie, and had taken with him the yong Earle of Arande, whiche then began to bere armes. The Countesse was retired to a houfe of pleasure, which shee had vpon the frontiers of Arragon and Nauarre, and was right ioyfull when shee see Amadour, who almoste three yeares had bene absent. He was very well recieued of euery man, and the countesse commaunded that he should be vsed and entreated as her howne sonne. During the time that he soiourned with her, she communicated vnto him all the affaires of her houfe, and committed the greatest trust thereof to his discretion, who wan fuch credite in the house as in all places where he liste, the dores were opened vnto him: whose wysedome and good behauour made him to be esteemed like a Sainct or Aungell. Florinda, for the loue and good wyll she bare unto his wyfe and him, made muche of him in all places where she sawe him: and therfore tooke no hede vnto his countenaunce, for that her hart as yet felt no passion, but a certen contention in her selfe, when she was in the prefence of Amadour, and of any other thing she thought not. Amadour to auoyde the iudgement of them that haue proued the difference of Louers countenaunces, was very ware and circumspect: for when Florinda came to speake vnto hym secretly (like one that thought no hurt) the fier hydden in his breste, burned so fore, as he could not staye the blushing colour of his face, nor the sparkes whiche flewe out of his eyes: and to the intent, that through long frequentation, none might espie the same, he intertaigned a very fayre Ladye called Paulina, a woman in his tyme accompted fo fayre, as fewe men whiche behelde her, coulde escape her bondes, This Ladye Paulina vnderstanding howe Amadour vsed his Loue

at Barfelone and Parpignon, and how he was beloued of the fayrest Ladies of the Countrie, and aboue all of the Countesse of Palamons, whiche in beautie was prysed to be the fayrest in all Spayne, and of many other, sayde vnto hym: "That shee had great pitie of hym, for that after so manye good Fortunes, he had maried a wyfe so foule and deformed." Amadour vnderstanding well by those woordes, that she had desyre to remedy her owne necessitie, vsed the best maner he coulde deuise, to the intent that in makynge her beleue a lye, he shoulde hyde from her the truthe. But shee subtile and well experimeted in Loue, was not contente with talke, but perceyuing well that his harte was not satissified with her Loue, doubted that hee coulde not serue his Lady in secrete wife, and therefore marked hym so nere, as daylye she had a respecte and watche vnto hys eyes, whiche hee coulde so well dissemble, as she was able to iudge nothyng, but by darke suspicion, not without great payne and difficultie to the Gentleman, to whome Florinda (ignoraunt of all their malice) dyd resorte many tymes in presence of Paulina, whose demeaner then was so familiar, as he with maruellous payne refrayned his lookes against his harte and desire: and to auoyde that no inconuenience shoulde ensue, one daye speaking to Florinda, as they were both leaning at a wyndow, sayd these words: "Madame, I beseeche you to tell mee whether it is better to speake or to die." Whereunto Florinda answered readily, saying! "I will euer geue councell to my frendes to speake and not to dye: for there be fewe wordes spoken but that they may be amended, but the life lost cannot be recouered." "Promise me then" said Amadour, "that not onely ye will accept those wordes which I will say, but also not to be astonned or abashed, till ye haue heard the end of my tale." To whom she aunswere: "Say what it please you, for if you do affray me none other shall assure me." Then he began to saye vnto her: "Madame, I haue not yet bene desirous to disclose vnto you the great affection which I beare you, for twoo causes: the one, bicause I attend by my long seruice, to shewe you the ex-perience thereof: the other, for that I doubted you would thinke a great presumption in me (which am but a poore gentleman) to insinuate my selfe in place whereof I am not worthy: and although

I were a Prince as you be, the loyaltie yet of your harte, will not permitte any other, but him which hath already taken posseſſion (the ſonne I meane of the Infant Fortune) to vſe in talke any matter of loue: but Madame, like as neceſſitie in time of great warr constraineth men to make hauoke of their owne goodes, and to conſume the greene corne, that the enemy take no profit and reliefe thereof, euen ſo doe I hazard to aduaunce the frute, which in time I hope to gather, that your enemies and mine may inioye thereoſe none aduaantage. Knowe ye Madame, that from the time of your tender yeares, I haue in ſuch wyſe dedicated my ſelue to your ſeruice as I ceaſſe not ſtill to aſprie the meaneſes to achieue your grace and fauour: and for that occaſion, I did marry her whome I thought you did loue beſt: and knowing the loue you beare to the ſonne of the Infant Fortune, I haue indeuoured to ferue him as you haue ſene: and that wherein I thought you dyd delighte, I haue accoſtomed to the vttermoſte of my power. You doe ſee that I haue gotten the good wil of the Counteffe your mother, of the Earle your brother, and of all thoſe that doe beare you good wyll: in futche forte as in this houſe I am eſtemed, not like a ſeruaunt, but as a ſonne: and all the labour whiche I haue fuſtayned theſe five yeares paſt, was for none other cauſe, but to lyue all the daies of my life with you: and vnderſtand you wel that I am none of thoſe whiche by theſe meaneſes doe pretende to receiue of you anye proſite or pleaſure, other than that which is good and vertuous: I do know that I can neuer marrie you, and if I could I would not for letting the loue that you beare vnto him, whom I deſire to be your hufbande, likewiſe to loue you in vicious forte, like them that hope to recompence their ſeruice with diſhonour of their Ladies, I am ſo farre of from that affeſtion, as I had rather be dead than to ſee you by deſert worthy of leſſe loue, and that your vertue ſhoulde by any meaneſes be diſminiſhed for any pleaſure that miſt happen vnto mee. I do pretend and craue for the ende and recompence of my ſervice, but one thing: which is, that you will coninue my loyall and faithfull maiftrefſe, neuer to withdrawe from me your wanted grace and fauour, and that you will maintaine mee in that eſtate wherein I am. Repofinge your truſt and fidelitie in me more than in any other, making your ſelue ſo

assured of me, as if for your honor or any cause touching your person, you stand in neede of the life of a Gentleman, the same shal right willingly be employed at your commaundement: in like maner all thinges vertuous and honest which euer I shal attempt I beseech you to thinke to be done onely for the loue of you: and if I haue done for Ladies of lesse reputacion than you be, any thing worthy of regard, be assured that for such a maistresse as you be, my enterprises shal increase in such sort, as the things which I found difficult and impossible, shall be easelie for me to accomplithe: but if you do not accept mee to be wholy yours, I determine to giue ouer armes, and to renounce valiaunce, because it hath not succoured me in necessitie: wherfore, Madame, I humblie beseech you that my iust request may not be refused, fith with your honour and conscience you cannot well denie the same." The yong Lady hearing this vnaccustomed fute, began to chaunge her colour, and to caste downe her eyes like an amased woman, notwithstandinge, being wyse and discrete she faid vnto him: "If (Amadour) your request vnto me be none other than you pretende, wherefore have you discoursed this long Oration? I am afraid lest vnder this honeste pretence there lurketh some hidden malice to deceiue the ignoraunce of my youth, wherby I am wrapt in great perplexitie how to make you aunswere: for to refuse the honest amitie which you haue offered, I shall doe contrary to that I haue done hitthero, for I haue reposed in you more trust than in any liuing creature: my conscience or mine honour cannot gainesay your demaunde, nor the loue that I beare to the sonne of the Infant Fortune, which is grounded vpon fayth of mariage: where you say that you pretende nothinge but that is good and vertuous, I cannot tell what thing should let me to make you aunswere according to your request, but a feare that I conceiue in hart, founded vpon the small occasion that you haue to vse that speache, for if you haue alreadye what you demaunde, what doth constraine you to speake so affectuouslie?" Amadour that was not without an aunswere, faid vnto her: "Madame, you speake very wisely, and you do me so much honour, for the confidence and truste which according to your sayinge you do repose in me, as if I doe not content my selfe with such a benefite, I were the vn-

worthiest man aliue: but vnderstante Madame, that he which goeth about to builde a perpetual mansion, ought to haue regard to a sure and firme foundation: wherfore I which desire perpetually to remaine your seruaunte, doe seeke not onely the meanes to kepe my selfe neare about you, but also to foresee that none doe vnderstand the great affection that I do beare you: for although my mind be so vertuous and honest, as the same may disclose it selfe before the whole worlde, yet there bee some so ignorant and vnskilfull of louers harts, as manye times will iudge contrary to trouth, wherof proceedeth so ill brute and report, as if the effectes were wicked: the cause which hath made me so bold to say and declare vnto you thus much, is the suspicion that Paulina hath conceyued, for that I cannot loue her: who doth nothing els but marke and espie my countenaunce in euerye place, and when you vse your familiar talke with me before her, I am so afraide to shewe any figne whereby shee maye grounde or verifie her iudgemente, that I fall into that inconuenience, which I would willingly auoyde: wherefore I haue thought good to beseech you (before her and those which you do know to be so malicious) to refraine from talkinge with mee so sodainlye, for I had rather dye, than anye liuinge creature should haue mistrust thereof: and were it not for the loue which I beare vnto your honour, I had not yet declared the same vnto you, for I do hold my selfe sufficiente happy and content of the onely loue and affiaunce that you put in me, crauing nought els butt the continuance of the same.” Florinda wel satiflyed with this aunswere, began to feele in harte a further thing to growe than euer she did before: and hearing the honest reasons alleaged by him, said, that her honestie and vertue shoulde make aunsware for her, and therewithall assented to his demaunde: whereof whether Amadour were ioyful, Louers neede not doubt: but Florinda credited more his counsell, than he would haue had her. For shee being fearefull and timerous, not onely before Paulina, but in all other places, vised farre other countenaunce than she was wont to do: and in this alienation of her former familiarity, she misliked the conuersation that Amadour had with Paulina, whose beauty was such, that she could not otherwise beleeue, but that hee loued her: and Florinda to passe ouer her

heauiness, daily vsed the company of Auenturade, that began  
maruelously to be ialous betweene her husbande and Paulina,  
whereof shée made complaint many times to Florinda, who com-  
forted her so well as shée coulde, like one attached with the same  
diseafe: Amadour coniecturinge by the countenaunce of Florinda,  
that not onely shée was estrangēd from hym through his former  
aduertisement, but also that there was some other displeasure con-  
cleyued, comming vpon a time, from euensong out of the Monas-  
terie, he sayd vnto her: "Madame, what countenaunce do you  
make me?" "Such as I thincke doth please you best," answered  
Florinda. Then Amadour suspecting a matter, to know whether  
it were true, began to saye: "Madame, I haue so vsed Paulina,  
as she beginneth to give ouer her opinion of you." She answered  
him: "Ye cannot do a better thing either for your selfe or for  
me: for in doing your selfe a pleasure, you do honour vnto me." Amadour iudged by these words that she thought he toke pleasure  
to talke of Paulina, wherewith he became so desperate, as hee  
could not forbeare to say vnto her in anger: "Madame, you begin  
very sone to torment your seruante: there was neuer paine more  
greeuous vnto mee, than to be forced to speake to her whom I  
loue not: and sithens al that which I do for your seruice is taken  
in ill part, I wil neuer speake againe vnto her, whatsoeuer happen:  
and to dissemble mine anger and contentacion, I wil addresse my  
selfe to some place hereby, till your fancie be ouer past: but I  
hope I shall receiue newes from my captaine, to retourne to the  
warres, where I will so longe continue, as you shall well knowe,  
that nothing els but you alone doth force me to tarrie here." And  
in saying so, without attending for her aunswere, hee incontinently  
departed, and shée remayned so sad and penifive as any woman  
coulde be: and loue began to shewe his greate force in such wyse  
as shée knowing her wrong incessantly, wrote to Amadour praying  
him to retourne home, which he did within a few dayes after that  
his choler was past, and to tell you what businesse there was, to  
interrupte and breake the ialoufie conceiued, it were superfluous:  
but in the ende, he wanne the field, so that she promised him, not  
only to beleue that he loued not Paulina, but also helde her selfe  
assured that it should be to him a martirdome intollerable, to

speake vnto her or any other, except it were to do her seruice : after that loue had vanquished this presente suspicion, and that the two louers began to take more pleasure in their mutuall talke than euer they did before: newes came that the king of Spaine was about to addres his Armie to Saulse, wherfore he that was wont to be there with the first, was not like now to fayle to augment his honour: but true it is, that his grieve was prefently more greate, than at other times before, aswell for losinge the pleasure which he enjoyed, as for feare to finde some mutacion and chaunge at his returne, because he saw Florinda purfued by great Princes and Lords, and alreadye come to the age of xv. yeaeres, and thought that if she were maried in his absence, he should neuer haue occasion to see her againe, except the Countesse of Arande would appointe his wyfe to waite vpon her: for accomplishment wherof he made such frends, as the Countesse and Florinda promised him, that into what soeuer place she were maried his wyfe Auenturade should attende vpon her: and although it was in question that Florinda should be maried into Portugall, yet determined that his wyfe should neuer forsake her: and vpon this assuraunce, not without vnspeakeable forow, Amadour departed and left his wife with the Countesse. When Florinda was alone, her seruaunt departed, shee gaue her selfe to all vertuous life, hopinge thereby to atteine the fame of a most perfecte Lady, and to be counted worthie the interteignemente of such a seruaunt. Amadour arriued at Barfalone, was banqueted and intertayned of the Ladies after the old maner, but they finding him so altered and chaunged, thought that Mariage could neuer haue had such power vpon man, as it had ouer him: for he seemed then to disdaine, what somtime he greatly desired, and specially the Countesse of Palamons, whom he derely loued, could deuise by no meanes to make him go alone home to his lodging : Amadour tarried at Barfalone so little while as hee coulde, because hee might not come late to the place where hee purposed to winne and atchiue honour : and being arriued at Saulse, great and cruell warres were comenced betwene the two kinges, which I purpose not to recite, ne yet the noble enterprises done by Amadour, whose fame was bruted aboue the rest of his companions. The duke of Nagyers arriuinge at Parpignon, had

charge of two thousand men, and prayed Amadour to be his Lieuetenaunte, who with that hand serued so well, as no crie was hard in al the skirmishes, other than of Nagyers. It chaunced that the king of Thunis, which of long time had warre with the Spaniards, vnderstandinge howe the kinges of Spaine and Fraunce were together by the eares at Parpignon and Narbonne, thought that in better time he could not anoye the king of Spaine: wherefore he sent a great nomber of Foists and other vessells, to robbe and spoile those frontiers which were ill guarded and kept: they of Barsalone feing a nomber of Shippes passe before the Towne, aduertised the king that was at Saulse, who immediatly sent the Duke of Nagyers to Palamons: and when the shippes diceried that the place was well guarded, they made as though they would passe further: but about midnight they retourned, and landed so many men, that the Duke of Nagyers was taken prisoner. Amadour which was very vigilant, hearing allarme, preſently assembled so many men as he could, and defended him ſelf ſo wel, as the force of his enemies a long time could not hurt him: but in thende knowing that the Duke of Nagyers was taken prisoner, and that the Turks were determined to burn the Citie of Palamons, and then to fier the house which he ſtrongly had forced againſte them, hee thought it better to render himſelfe, than to be cauſe of the loſſe of ſo manye good ſouldiors as were vnder his gouernmente, and also by putting himſelfe to raunſome, he hoped in time to come to ſee Florinda: then he ſubmitted himſelfe to a Turke called Derlyn, the gouernor of the king of Thunis, who conueyed him home to his maiftre, where he was well enteraigned, and better kept: for they thought that hauing him in their hands, they had gotten the only Achilles of Spaine. In this fort Amadour continued almoſt the ſpace of two yeares, in the ſeruice of the king of Thunis: newes came into Spaine of this ouerthrow, wherof the frends of the Duke of Nagyers, were very ſorowfull: but they that loued the honor of their countrey, thoughte Amadour to bee the greateſt loſſe, the brute wherof was noyſed in the house of the Counteffe of Arande, wher at that time the poore gentlewoman Auenturade lay very ſore ſicke. The Counteffe ſupectinge very muſh the affection that Amadour

bare vnto her daughter, which he suffered and dissembled for his vertue's sake, called her daughter aside, and told her the pitious newes. Florinda which could well dissemble said unto her, that it was a great losse for al their house, but specially she pitied the state of his poore wife, because at that time she was so sore sicke. But seing her mother weepe so bitterly, she let fal some teares to keepe her company, least through to much dissimulacion her loue might be discouered. After that time, the Countesse spake to her many times, but she could neuer perceiue by her countenance, any cause of certaine suspicion. I will leaue to speake of the voyages, the prayers, the supplications and fastings, which Florinda did ordinarily make for the safegard and prosperitie of Amadour, who incontinently so soone as he was arriued at Thunis, sent newes to his frends, and by a sure messenger aduertized Florinda, that he was in good health and hope to retourne. Which newes was to the poore Lady, the only meanes to releue and ease her forow. And doubt ye not, but the meanes of writing, was vtterly debarred from Amadour, wherof Florinda acquited herself so diligently, as by her letters and epistles, he receiued great consolation and comfort. The Countesse of Arande receiued commaundement from the king to repaire to Saragosa, where hee that time was arriued. And there she found the yong Duke of Cardonne making sute to the king and Queene, for mariage of her daughter. The Countesse vnwilling to disobey the king, agreed, thinkinge that her daughter being very yonge, had none other affection, but that which already had taken sure impression. When the accorde was concluded, shee sayde vnto her daughter, that she had chosen that matche, as best worthy to ioyne with her person. Her daughter consideringe howe in a thing already done it was to late to take counsell, said vnto her, that God was to be praised in all things. And seing her mother so far alienated from her intent, she thought it better to shew her selfe obedient, than to take pitie vpon her selfe. And to comfort her in that forowe, she vnderstode that the infant Fortune was at the point of death. But before her mother or any other person, she shewed not so much as one signe or token therof, strayning her grief so much, as

the teares by force retiringe to her harte, did cause the bloud to issue forth at her Nose, in such abundance, as her life was in present daunger. And to recouer her of that disease, shee was maried vnto him, for whose sake shee had rather haue chaunged her life for present death. After the mariage, Florinda went wyth her husbande into the Duchy of Cardonne, and in her company Auenturade, to whom shee secretly made complaint, as wel of her mother's rigor, as also of the forow shee conceyued for the losse of the sonne of the Infant Fortune. But of her grieve for Amadour, she spake no worde, but by way of comforting her. This yong lady then determined to haue God and the respect of her honoure before her eies, and so wel to dissemble her grieves, as none at any time should perceiue that shee disliked her husband. In this sort Florinda passed long time, in a life no leſſe pleasaunt than death. The report whereof she sent to her good seruaunt Amadour, who vnderstanding her great loue, and wel disposed hart, and the loue shee bare to the Infant Fortune, thought that it was impossible she could liue long, and lamented her state more than his owne. This grieve augmented his paine of imprisonmente, wifhinge to haue remayned a flauall the days of his life, so that Florinda had had a husbande respondent to her desire, forgettinge his owne grieve by feeling that his frende did suffer. And because he vnderstode by a secret friend which he had gotten in the Court of the king of Thunis, that the king was minded to offer him the gibbet, or els to make him renounce his fayth, for the desire hee had to retaine him still, and to make him a good Turke, he behaued himself so well, wyth him that toke him prisoner, that he gaue him leaue to depart vpon his fayth, taxing him at so greate raunsome, as he thought a man of so small substance was neuer able to pay. And so without speaking to the king his maister, hee let him go vpon his fayth. After he had shewed himselfe at the Court of the king of Spaine, he departed incontinently to his frends to get his raunsome, and went straight to Barfalone, whether the yong Duke of Cardonne, his mother, and Florinda, was gone aboue certaine affaires. Auenturade so fone as shee heard tell that her husband was come, declared the fame

to Florinda, who seemed for her sake greatly to reioyce therat. But fearing that the desire she had to see him would make her chaunge countenaunce, and that they which knew not the cause therof, would conceiue some ill opinion, she stode still at a window to see him come a far of: and so sone as she espied him, shee went downe a paire of darke staires that none myghte perceiue her chaunge of colour. When she had imbraced Amadour, shee led him into her chamber, and from thence to her mother in law, which had neuer feene him before. He had not continued there two dayes, but he was so well beloued, as he was before in the house of the Countesse of Arande. I will omitte the words and talke betwene Florinda and Amadour, and the complaints which he made vnto her of his ill aduenture, that hee had sustayned in his absence. And after manye teares vttered by her, for the heauines she had taken, aswel for the mariage against her wil, as for the losse of him that she loued so dearely, and for him whom she thoughte neuer to see againe, shee determined to take her consolation in the loue and fidelitie that she bare to Amadour, which notwithstanding she durst not open and declare: but he that much doubted therof, lost no occasion and time to let her know and vnderstante the great loue he bare her. And euen vpon the point that she was ready to receiue him, not as a seruaunt, but for her assured and perfect frend, there chaunced a maruellous fortune: for the king, for certaine matters of importance, incontinently sent forth Amadour, wherof his wyfe conceyued such sorrow, as hearing those newes, she souned and fell from the staires where she stode, wherewith she hurte herselfe so sore, as neuer after she reuiued. Florinda (that by the death of her had lost all comfort) made such sorrow, as one that was destitute of good frends and kinsfolke, but Amadour toke the same in worst part: for he had not onely lost one of the most honest women that euer was, but also the meanes that he shoulde neuer after that time haue occasion to visit Florinda. For which cause he fell into such ficknes, as he was like to haue died sodaiuly. The old Duchesse of Cardonne, incessantly did vifite him, and alledged many philosophical reas ons to make him paciently to receiue death, bu

it auayled nothing: for if death of thone fide did torment him, loue on the other did augment his martirdome. Amadour seing that his wyfe was buried, and that the king had sent for him, (hauing no occasion of longer abode there) he entred into such dispaire, as hee seemed to be oute of his wittes. Florinda which in comforting him was almost desolate, remayned by him one whole afternone, vſinge very honest and discrete talke vnto him, thinking thereby to diminishe the greatnesse of his sorrowe, and assured him that shee would denise wayes how he might visite her more oft than he did thinke for. And becauſe he must depart the next morning, and was ſo feeble and weake that he could not riſe from his bed, he intreated her to come and ſe him at night after euery man was retired to bed: which ſhe pro-miſed to doe, not knowing that loue's extremity was voyd of reaſon. And he that ſaw no hope euer after that time to ſee her againe, whom ſo long time he had ſerued: and of whom he had neuer receyued other interteignment than that you haue heard, was ſo beaten and ouercom with loue long diſſemblēd, and of the diſpaire he conceiued, that (all meanes to vſe her company taken away) he purpoſed to play double or quit, either to loſe her, or to wiſh her fauour for euer, and to pay himſelf at one iſtant the rewarde which he thought he had right wel deſerued. Wher-fore he cauſed the curtaines of his bed to be drawen, that they which came into the chamber mighte not ſee him, complaing of ficknes more than he was wont to do, wherby they of the house thought he would not haue liued xxiv. houres. After euery one of the house had viſited him at night, Florinda (at the ſpecial requeſt of her husband) came to ſee him, thinking for his comfort to vtter vnto him her affection, and how aboue all other ſhe would loue him, ſo far as her honor did permit: and ſitting downe in a chayre at the bed's head, ſhe began to comfort him, and therwithal powred out many teares. Amadour ſeing her forowful and penſiſe, thought that in her great torment he might eaſely attaine the effect of his intent, and lifted himſelf vp in his bed, which Florinda perceyuing, ſhe would haue ſtaied him, because ſhe thought that through weakeſes he was not able to moue: and kneeling vpon his knees, he ſaid vnto her: "Muſt

I for euermore forgo your sight mine owne deare Lady?" And in saying so he fel downe betwene her armes like one that fainted for lack of strength. Then poore Florinda imbraced him, and of long time held him vp, doing all that was possible for his comfort. But the medecine she gaue him to ease his sorow, did rather increase the same more strong: for in fayning himself half dead, without speaking any word, he attempted that which the honor of womanhode doth defend. When Florinda perceiued his ill intent, she could scarce beleue the same, considering his honest requests made before time, and therfore asked him what it was that he desired. But Amadour fearing to heare her answere which he knew well could be none other but chaste and vertuous, without further talke, pursued his purpose so. earnestly as he could, wherwith Florinda beinge astonned did suspect he had bin out of his wittes rather than beleue that he wente about her dishonor. Wherefore with loude voice she called a gentleman that was in the chamber. Which Amadour hearing, vtterly in dispaire, threw himself so sodenly into his bed, as the gentleman thought he had beene dead. Florinda rising out of the chaire, said vnto him: "Goe quickly and fetch some good vineger." Which the gentleman did. Then Florinda began to say vnto him: "Amadour, what follie hath inchaunted your wisedome? And what is that which you would haue done unto me?" Amadour that through the force of loue had lost al reasoun, said vnto her: "Doth my long seruice merite a recompence of such cruelty?" "And wher is the honesty then," said Florinda, "which so many times you haue preached vnto me?" "Ah, madame!" said Amadour: "I beleue it is impossible your selfe more faithfully to loue your owne honour than I do. For when you were vnmaried, I could so wel subdue my harte and affection, as you did neuer vnderstand my will and desire. And now that you be maried, to the intente your honour may reste in couerte, what wrong do I to aske that which is mine owne, for by force of loue I haue won you? He that first enjoyed your harte, hath so ill followed the victorie of your bodye, as hee hath well deserued to lose altogether. He that possessest your body, is not worthy to haue your hart, wherfore your body is none of his, ne yet he

hath no title in the same. But I Madame, theſe or fiue yeares haue ſuſteyned ſuche paynes and trauaile for your fake, as you are not ignoraunt but to me appertayneth both your body and harte, for whos fake I haue vtterlye forgotten mine owne. And if you can finde in your hart to defende mee from my right, doubt ye not but they which haue proued the forces of loue, wil lay the blame on you, which hath in this fort robbed me from my libertie, and with your heauenly graces hath obſcured my fences, that not knowing hereafter what to do, I am conſtrayned to go without hope for euer to ſee you againe. Notwithſtanding warrante your ſelfe, that in what place ſo euer I am, you ſhall ſtill poſſeſſe my harte, which ſhall continue yourſ for euer, be I vpon the lande or water, or betweene the hands of my moſte cruell enemies. But if I could recouer before my depar- ture, that furety of you which the greatneſſe of my loue deſerueth, I ſhall be ſtrong enough paciently to beare the grieves of my long abſence. And if it pleaſe you not to graunt me this request, you ſhal ſhortly heare tell that your rigor hath rendred vnto me a moſt vnhappy and cruel death.” Florinda no leſſe aſtonned than forie, to heare ſuſh words proceede from him, of whom ſhe neuer had any ſuſpicion, weepinge faide unto him: “Alas, Amadour, is this the meaning of thoſe vertuous words which fithens the beginning of my youth ye haue vttered vnto me? Is this the honor of the conſcience, which you haue many times perfwaded me rather to die than loſe the fame? Haue you forgotten the good examples recited vnto me of vertuous dames that haue refiſted foolish loue? And is this the maner of your contempt of Ladies that were foolish and vaine, whose light behauour you diſſembled ſo much to abhorre? I cannot beleeue Amadour that you are driuen into ſuſh madnes and furie, as the feare of God, your owne conſcience, and the eſtimacion of mine honor, ſhould be altogetheſ out of your minde and memorie. But if it ſo be as you ſay, I do praife the goodnes of God, which hath preuented the miſhap that nowe I am fallen into, in ſhewinge me by your words, the hart which I did not know. For hauinge loſt the fonne of the Infant Fortune, who not onely is maried into another place, but alſo loued another, and

I now maried to him, which I cannot loue, I thought and determined wholly, with all mine hart and affection to loue you, founding the same vpon that vertue which I knew to be in you, which loue by your meanes onelye I haue conceiued, and therfore did more esteeme my honor and conscience, than the price of mine owne life. Vppon assurance of this stome of honestie, I am come hither thinking to build a most sure foundacion. But (Amadour) in one moment thou haste declared, how in place of a pure foundacion, thy building is reared vpon a light sand, and vncoustant ground, or els vpon a filthy and foul quamire. And where I began to erect a good part of the lodgings of this building vpon the ground of the fidelitie, hoping to dwel there for euer, sodenly thou hast ouerthrowen the whole plot. Wherfore, you must immediately breake in fonder the hope and credit that euermore you haue found in me, and determine that in what place foever I be, not to pursue me either by worde or countenaunce. And do not thinke, that I can or will at anye time hereafter chaunge this mine opinion, reciting this my last adieu with great sorrow and grieve. But if I had made an othe of this perfect amitie and loue, I know mine harte would haue died vpon this breach, although the astonishment in that I am deceived, is so great, as I am wel assured it will make my life either short or forowfull: and therefore I bid you farewell and that for euer." I purpose not to tel you the forow which Amadour felt by hearing those words, because it is impossible not only to write them, but also to thincke them, except it be of such as haue had experience of the like. And seing that vpon this cruel conclusion she would haue gone away, he caught her by the arme, knowing well that if he did not remoue that ill opinion, which by his owne occasion she had conceyued, hee should lose her for euer. Wherfore he said vnto her with a very faint chere: "Madame, al the dayes of my life I haue desired to loue a woman endued with honestie and vertue: and because I haue found so few, I would fain haue tried whether your perfon had bin worthy of estimacion and loue, wherof now I am wel assured, and humblie do praise God therefore, because mine hart is addreſſed to ſuch perfection: beſeching you to pardon this fond and bold

attempt, fith you see that the end doth redound to your owne honor and contentacion.” Florinda, which began to know by him the malice of other men, like as she was hard to beleue the euill wher it was, euen so she was more difficile to credite the good where it was not, and said vnto him: “I pray to God your words be true: yet am I not so ignorant but that the state of mariage wherein I am, hath made me euidently to know the strong passion of blind loue which hath forced you vnto this follie: for if God had losed my hande, I am wel assured you would not haue plucked back the bridle: they that attempt to seeke after vertue, do not take the way that you do tread: but this is sufficient if I haue lightly beleueed any honestie in you, it is time for me now to know the truth, that I may rid my self from you.” And in saying so, Florinda went out of the chamber, and all the nighte long, she neuer left weeping, feeling such great grieve in that alteracion, as her hart had much to do, to sustaine the affaults of sorrow that loue had made: for although reasoun thoughte neuer to loue him againe, yet the hart which is not subiect to our fancie, would not accord to that crueltie: for which consideracion, she loued him no lesse than she was wont to do, and knowing that loue was the cause of that fault, she purposed for satiffaction of loue, to Loue him with all her hart, and yet for the obedience and fealtie due to her honor, she thought neuer to make any semblance. In the morning Amadour departed in this sort, troubled as you haue hearde, neuertheleffe his courageous heart centred not in dispaire, but renued a fresh hope once againe to see Florinda, and to win her fauour: then he toke his iourney towards the Court of Spaine (which was at Tolledo) taking his way by the Countesse of Arande, wher late in an euening he arrived, and found the Countesse verye fickle for the absence of her daughter Florinda: when shee saw Amadour, shee kissted and imbraced him, as if he had beene her owne child, aswel for the loue she bare vnto him, as for the like which she doubted that he bare to Florinda, of whom very earnestly she inquired for newes, who tolde her the best that he could devise, but not the whole truth, and confessed vnto her the loue betweene Florinda and him, (which Florinda had still conceiled and kept secrete) praying her

ayde to bring him againe into her fauour: and so the next morn-  
ing he departed. And after he had done his businesse with the  
Queene, he repayred to the warres, so fadde and chaunged in all  
his condicions, as the Ladies, Captaynes and all they that were  
wont to keepe him companie, did not know him. His apparell was  
all blacke, mourning for the death of his wife, wherby he couered  
the sorrow which was hid in his hart. In this wyse Amadour passed  
three or 4 yeres before he returned to the Court. And the Coun-  
teffe of Arande which heard tell that Florinda was so much al-  
tered, as it would haue moued any hart to behold her, sent for her,  
hoping that she would haue come, but her expe&ctacion was frustrate,  
for when Florinda vnderstode that Amadour had told her mother  
the good will betweene them, and that her mother being so wise  
and vertuous giuing credite to Amadour, did beleue his report,  
she was in marueilous perplexitie, because of the one fide she  
saw that her mother did esteeme him so well, and on the other  
fide if she declared ynto her the truth, Amadour woulde conceiue  
displeasure: which thing she had rather die than to do: wherefore  
she thought herselfe strong inough to chastise him of his folly,  
without helpe of frends. Againe, she perceyned that by diffem-  
bling the euil which she knew by him, she should be constrained  
by her mother and her frends, to speake and beare him good coun-  
tenaunce, wherby she feared he would be the more encoraged:  
but seing that he was far of, she passed the leſſe of the matter:  
and when the Counteffe her mother did commaunde her, she wrote  
letters vnto him, but they were ſuch as he might wel gather that  
they were written rather vpon obedience, than of good wil, the  
reading wherof bred sorrow vnto him in place of that ioye he was  
wont to conceiue in her former wrytings. Within the terme of  
two or three yeres, after he had done ſo many noble enterprifes as  
al the paper of Spaine could not containe them, he deuiled a new  
inuention, not to wynne and recouer the harte of Florinda (for  
he demed the ſame quite lost) but to haue the victorie ouer his  
enemy, fithens ſhe had vſed him in that forte, and reiecting al  
reafon and ſpecially feare of death, into the hazarde wherof he  
hasted himſelfe, he concluded and determined his enterprife in  
ſuch forte, as for his behaviour towadres the Gouernour, hee was

deputed and sent by him to treate with the king of certaine exploytes to be done at Locates, sparing not to impart his message to the Countesse of Aranda, before he told the same to the king, to vse her good aduise therein: and so came in poste straight into the Countie of Aranda, where he had intelligence in what place Florinda remained, and secretly sent to the Countesse one of his frendes to tell her of his comming, and to pray her to keepe it close, and that he might speake with her that night in secrete wise that no man might perceiue: the Countesse very ioyfull of his comming, tolde it to Florinda, and sent her into her hufbande's chamber, that she might be ready when she should send for her after eche man was gone to bed. Florinda whiche was not yet well boldened by reason of her former feare, making a good face of the matter to her mother, withdrew her selfe into an oratorie or chappell, to recommend her selfe to God, praying him to defend her hart from al wicked affection, and therwithal confidered how often Amadour had prayfed her beautie, which was not impaired or diminished, although she had bene sicke of longe time before: wherefore thinking it better to doe iniurie to her beautie by defacing it, than to suffer the harte of so honest a personage by meanes thereof wickedly to be inflamed, shee tooke vp a stome which was within the Chappell, and gaue her selfe so great a blowe on the face that her mouthe, eyes and nose, were altogether deformed: and to thintent no man might suspeēt what she had done, when the Countesse sent for her in going out of the Chappell, she fell downe vpon a great stome, and therewithall cried out so loude, as the Countesse came in and founde her in pitious stafe, who incontinently dressing her face, and binding it vp with clothes, conueyed her into her chamber, and prayed her to goe into her closet to enteraigne Amadour, tyll she were weary of his companie: whiche she did, thinking that there had bene somebody with hym: but finding him alone, and the doore shut vpon her, Amadour was not so well pleased as she was discontented: who nowe thoughte eyther with loue or force to get that, whiche hee had so long tyme defyred: and after he had spoken a fewe woordes vnto her, and found her in that mynde hee lefte her, and that to dye for it shee woulde not chaunge her opinion, desperatly he fayde vnto her: "By God

madame, the fruite of my labour shall not be thus taken from me for scruples and doubtes: and sith that Loue, pacience, and humble desires, cannot preuayle, I will not spare by force to get that, which except I haue it will be the meanes of mine overthrowe." When Florinda sawe his face and eyes so altered, and that the fairest die and colour of the world, was become so red as fier, with his most pleasaunt and amiable loke transformed into horrible hew and furious, and therewithall discried the very hote burning fier, to sparkle within his harte and face: and how in that fury with one of his strong fistes he griped her delicate and tender hands: and on the other syde shee seeing all her defences to fayle her, and that her feete and handes were caught in suche captiuitie as she could neither run away nor yet defend her selfe: knewe none other remedie, but to proue if he had yet remaining in him any griftes of the former loue, that for the honour therof he might forget his craultie. Wherefore she sayd vnto him: "Amadour, if now you doe accompt me for an enemy, I besech you for the honestie of the loue which at other times I haue found planted in your harte, to geue me leaue to speake before you doe torment me." And when shee saw him recline his eare, she pursued her talk in this wyse: "Alas, Amadour, what cause haue you to feke after the thing wherof you shall receiue no contentation, inflicting vpon me such displeasure as there can be no greater? you haue many times proued my wil and affection in the time of my youthfull dayes, and of my beautie farre more excellent than it is now, at what tyme your passion might better be borne with and excused, than nowe: in such wyse as I am nowe amased to see that you haue the harte to torment me at that age and great debilitie wherewith I am affected: I am assured that you doubt not but that my wyl and mind is such as it was wont to be: wherefore you can not obtayne your demaunde but by force: and if you sawe howe my face is arrayed, you would forget the pleasure whiche once you conceiued in me, and by no meanes would forcibly approche nere vnto me: and if there be lefte in you yet any remnantes of loue, it is impossible but that pitie may vanquishe your furie: and to that pitie and honestie whereof once I had experience in you, I do make my plaint, and of the same I do

demaund grace and pardon, to thintent that according to the effect of your wonted perfwasion and good aduise you may suffer me to liue in that peace and honestie, which I haue determined and vowed during life: and if the loue which you haue borne me be conuerted into hatred, and that more for reuengement than affection, you doe purpose to make me the mooste unhappy of the world, I assure you, you shall not be able to bryng your intent to passe, besydes that you shall constraine me against my determination, to vtter and reueale your villany and disordinate appetite towardes her which did repose in you an incredible affiance: by discouering whereof, thinke verely that your lyfe cannot continue without perill.” Amadour breaking her talke sayde vnto her: “If I die for it, I will presently be acquitted of my torment: but the deformitie of your face (whiche I thinke was done by you of set purpose) shall not let me to accomplishe my will: for fince I can get nothing of you but the bones and carcase, I will holde them so fast as I can.” And when Florinda sawe that prayers, reason, nor teares could not auayle, but that with crueltie he woulde nedes followe his villanous desire, which she had hetherto still auoided by force of resistence, she did helpe her selfe so long, till she feared the losse of her breath, and with a heauy and piteous voice she called her mother so loud as shee could crie, who hearing her daughter crie and cal with ruffull voyce, began greatly to feare the thing that was true: wherfore she ran so fast as she could into the wardenrobe. Amadour not being so nere death as he faide he was, left of his holde in suche good time, as the Ladye opening her closet, founde him at the dore, and Florinda farre enough from him. The Countesse demaunded of him, saying: “Amadour what is the matter? tell me the truthe.” Who like one that was neuer vnprouided of excuse, with his pale face and wanne, and his breath almosfte spent, sayde vnto her: “Alas, madame, in what plight is my lady Florinda? I was neuer in all my life in that amase wherin I am now: for as I sayd vnto you, I had thought that I had inioyed part of her good will, but nowe I know right well that I haue none at all: I thinke madame, that fithe the time she was brought vp with you, shee was neuer lesse wife and vertuous than shee is nowe, but farre more daungerous

and squeimishe in speaking and talking then behoueth, and euen nowe I would haue loked vpon her, but she would not suffer me: and when I viewed her countenaunce, thinking that it had bene some dreame or vision, I desired to kisse her hande, according to the fashion of the countrey, which shee vtterly refused. True it is Madame, I haue offended her, wherof I craue pardon of you, but it chaunced only for that I toke her by the hand, which I did in a maner by force, and kisst the same demaunding of her no other pleasure: but she like one (as I suppose) that hath sworne my death, made an outcry for you (as you haue hearde) for what cause I know not, except that shee were afraide I would haue forced some other thing: notwithstanding Madame, whatsoeuer the matter be, I protest vnto you the wrong is myne, and albeit that she ought to loue al your honest seruaunts, yet fortune so willeth as I alone, the mooste affectioned of them all, is clerely exempt out of her fauour: and yet I purpose still to continue towardes you and her, the same man I came hither, beseeching the continuance of your good grace and fauour, sithens that without desert I haue loste hers." The Countesse which partely beleued, and partelye mistrusted his talke, went vnto her daughter, and demaunded wherfore she cried out so loud. Florinda answered that she was afrayde: and albeit the Countesse subtilly asked her of many things, yet Florinda would neuer make other answere, for that hauing escaped the handes of her enemy, she thought it punishment enough for him to lose his labour: after that the Countesse had of long tyme communed with Amadour, she lefte him yet once againe to enter in talke with Florinda before her, to see what countenaunce shee would make him. To whom he spake fewe wordes except they were thanks for that she had not confessed the truthe to her mother, praying her at least wife that seing he was dispossessed out of her hart, she would suffer none other to receiue his place: but she answering his former talke, saide: "If I had had any other meanes to defend my selfe from you than by crying out, she should neuer haue heard me, and of me you shall neuer heare worse, except you doe constraine me as you haue done, and for louing any other man, you shall not neede to feare: for sithe I haue not found in your harte (which I esteemed the most

vertuous in all the world) the good successe that I desired, I wyll never beleue hereafter that vertue is planted in any man. And this outrage shall make me free from all passions that Loue can force." And in saying so she tooke her leaue. The mother which behelde her countenaunce, could suspecte nothing, and after that tyme, shee was perswaded that her daughter bare no more affection to Amadour, and thought assuredly that she was voyde of reason, because she hated al those things which she was wont to loue: and from that time forth there was such warre betwene the mother and the daughter, as the mother for the space of VII. yeares would not speake vnto her, except it were in anger: which she did at the request of Amadour: during which time, Florinda conuerted the misliking of her husband, into mere and constant loue, to auoyde the rigour and checkes of her mother: howbeit, seing that nothing could preuayle, she purposed to beguile Amadour, and leauing for a day or two her straunge countenance towards him, she counselled Amadour to loue a woman, whiche as she sayd, did commonly dispute and talke of their loue. This lady dwelt with the Queene of Spaine, and was called Lorette, who was very ioyfull and glad to get such a seruant: and Florinda founde meanes to caufe a brute of this newe loue to be spred in euery place, and specially the Countesse of Arande (being at the Court) perceiued the same, who afterwards was not so displeased with Florinda, as she was wont to be: Florinda vpon a tyme heard tel that a Captain the husband of Loret, began to be ialous ouer his wife, determining by some meanes or other, he cared not howe, to kill Amadour. Florinda notwithstanding her dissembled countenance, could not suffer any hurt to be done to Amadour, and therefore incontinently gaue him aduertisement thereof: but he retourning againe to his former follies, answered, that if it would please her to intertaigne him euery day three houres, he would never speake againe to Lorette, whereunto by no meanes shee would consent. Then Amadour faide vnto her: "If you will not haue me to liue, wherefore go ye about to defend me from death? except ye purpose to torment me aliue with greater extremitie then a thousand deathes can do: but for so much as death doth flie from me, I will never leaue to seeke him out, by whose ap-

proche only I shall haue rest." Whilst they were in these tearmes, newes came that the kyng of Granado was about to enter into great warres against the king of Spain: in suche wyse as the king sent against hym the Prince his sonne, and with hym the constable of Castile, and the Duke of Albe, twoo auncient and sage Lordes. The duke of Cardonne and the counte of Arande not willing to tarie behinde, besought the kyng to geue eyther of them a charge: whiche hee did according to the dignitie of their houses, appointing Amadour to be their guide: who during that warre, did sutche valiaunt factes as they seemed rather to be desperately than hardly enterpryfed: and to come to the effect of this discourse, his great valiaunce was tryed euen to the death: for the Moores making a bragge as though they would geue battayle, when they sawe the army of the Christians, counterfaited a retire, whome the Spaniardes pursued, but the olde Constable and the duke of Albe doubting their pollicie, stood still, against the will of the Prince of Spaine, not suffering him to passe ouer the Ryuer, but the counte of Arande and the Duke of Cardonne, (although they were countremanded) did followe the chafe, and when the Moores sawe that they were pursued with so small a number, they returned, and at one recountrie kylled the Duke of Cardonne, and the Counte of Arande was so sore hurte as hee was lefte for dead in the place. Amadour arriuing vpon this ouerthrowe, invaded the battayle of the Moores with sutche rage and furie, as hee rescued the twoo bodyes of the Duke and Countie, and caused them to be conueyed to the Prince's campe, who se lamented their chaunce, as if they had bene his owne brethren: but in searching their woundes, the Counte of Arande was founde to be aliue, and was sent home to his own house in a horselitter, where of long time he was sicke, and likewise was conueied to Cardonne the dead bodie of the yong Duke. Amadour in rescuing thosse two bodies, tooke so little heede to him selfe, as he was inclosed with a great number of the Moores, and because he would bee no more taken, as well to verifie his faith towardes God, as also his vowe made to his Lady, and also considering that if he were prysoner to the kyng of Granado, either hee should cruelly be put to death, or els forced to renounce his faith, he determined not to make his

death or taking glorious to his enemies: wherefore kissing the croffe of his sworde, and rendring his body and soule to the handes of almighty God, he stabbed him selfe into the body with sutche a blow, as there neded no second wound to rid him of his life: in this forte died poore Amadour, so muche lamented as his vertues did deserue. The newes hereof was bruted throughout Spaine, and came to Florinda who then was at Barfelone, where her husbande in his life tyme ordeined the place of his buriall: and after shee had done his honourable obsequies, without making her own mother, or mother in law priuie, she surrendred her selfe into the monasterie of Iesus, there to liue a religious life, receiuing him for her husband and friende, whiche had deliuered her from the vehement loue of Amadour, and from a displeasaunt life so great and vnquiet as was the company of her husband.

In this wife the conuerted all her affections, to pietie  
and the perfit loue of God, who after she had long  
time liued a religious life, shee yelded vp her  
soule in such ioye as the Bridegrom doth  
when he goeth to visite his spowes.

## THE FIFTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

*The incontinencie of a duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpose, with the iust punishment which he receiued for the same.*

In the Citie of Florence (the chiefest of all Thuscane) there was a Duke that maried the Lady Margaret the bastarde daughter of the Emperour Charles the fift. And bicause shee was very young, it was not lawfull for him to lye with her, but taryng till she was of riper yeres, he interteigned an vfed her like a noble gentleman. And who to spare his wife, was amorous of certaine other Gentlewomen of the citie. Amonges whom he was in loue with a very fayre and wyfe Gentlewoman, that was sister to a Gentleman, a seruaunt of his, whome the Duke loued so well as himselfe, to whome he gaue so muche authoritie in his house, as his word was so wel obeied and feared as the Duke's him self, and there was no secrete thing in the Duke's minde, but he declared the same vnto him, who might ful wel haue bene called a fecond himself. The duke seing his sister to be a woman of great honestie, had no wayes or meanes to vtter vnto her the loue that he bare her (after he had inuented all occasions possible) at length he came to this Gentleman which he loued so well, and said vnto him: "My friend, if there were any thing in all the world, wherein I were able to pleasure thee, and woulde not doe it at thy request, I should be afraid to say my fantasie, and much ashamed to craue your help and affiance: but the loue is such which I bare thee, as if I had a wife, mother, or daughter, that were able to saue thy life, I would rather imploy them, than to suffer thee to die in torment: and if thou doe beare vnto me that affection which am thy maister, thinke verely that I doe beare vnto thee the like. Wherefore I will disclose vnto thee suche a secrete and priuie matter, as the silence thereof hath brought me into sutche plight as thou seest, whereof I doe loke for none amendement but by death or by the seruice whiche thou maiest doe me, in a certayne matter which I purpose to tell thee." The Gentleman hearing the reasons of his maister, and seing his face not fayned,

but all besprent with teares, tooke great compassyon vpon him and sayd: "My Lorde, I am your humble seruaunt: all the goodes and worship that I haue doth come from you. You may faye vnto me as to your mooste approued frende. Affure your self, that all which resteth in my power and abilitie, is already at your commaundement." Then the Duke began to tell him of the loue that hee bare vnto his sister, which was of sutche force, as if by his meanes he did not enioye her, his life could not long continue. For he faide, that he knew right well that intreatie and presentes were with her of no regard. Wherfore he praied him, that if he loued his life, so well as he did his, to finde meanes for him to receiue that benefite, which without him he was in despaire neuer to recouer. The brother which loued his sister and honor of his kindred, more than the Duke's pleasure, made a certain reuerence vnto him, humbly beseeching him to vse his trauaill and pain in all other causes fauing in that, bicause it was a fute so flaunderous and infamous, as it would purchafe dishonor to his whole familie, adding further, that neither his hart nor his honor could serue him, to consent to do that seruice. The Duke inflamed with vn-speakable furie, put his finger betwene his teeth, and biting of the nayle, said unto him in great rage: "Well then sithe I finde in thee no frendship, I know what I haue to doe." The Gentleman knowing the crueltie of his Maister, being fore afraide, replied: "My Lorde, for so much as your desyre is vehement and earnest, I will speake vnto her and bryng you aunswere of her mynde." And as he was departing, the Duke sayde vnto him: "See that thou tender my life as thou wylt that I shall doe thyne." The Gentleman vnderstanding well what that woorde did meane, absented him selfe a day or twaine to aduise what were best to be done. And amonges diuers his cogitations, there came to his remembraunce the bounden dutie which he dyd owe to his Maister, and the goodes and honours which he had receyued at his handes, on the other syde, hee considered the honour of his house, the good life and chastitie of his syster, who (he knewe well) would neuer consent to that wickednesse, if by subtiltie shée were not surprised, or otherwyse forced, and that it were a thing very straunge and rare, that he should goe about to defame hymselfe and the whole

ftocke of his progenie. Wherefore hee concluded, that better it were for hym to die, than to commit a mischief so great vnto his sister, whiche was one of the honestest women in all Italie. And therewithall confidered how he might deliuer his countrie from sutch a tyrant, which by force would blemishe and spot the whole race of his auncient stock and familie. For he knew right wel that except the duke were taken away, the life of him and his affinitie could not be in securitie and safegarde: wherfore without motion made to his sister of that matter, he deuised how to saue his life and the reproche that should follow. Vpon the second daye he came vnto the duke, and tolde hym in what forte he had practised with his sister, and that although the same in the beginning was harde and difficult, yet in the ende he made her to consent, vpon condicion that hee would keepe the same so secrete as none but hymselfe and he myght knowe of it. The duke desirous and glad of those newes, dyd fone believe hym, and imbracing the messanger, promised to geue him whatsoeuer he would demaunde, praying hym with all speede that hee might inioye his desyred purpose. Whereupon they appointed a tyme: and to demaunde whether the duke were glad and ioyfull of the same, it were superfluous. And when the desired night was come, wherin he hoped to haue the victorie of her whom he thought inuincible, he and the gentleman alone withdrew themselues together, not forgetting his perfumed coif and swete shirte wrought and trimmed after the best maner. And when eche wight was gone to bed, both they repayred to the appointed lodging of his Lady, where being arriued they founde a chamber in decent and comly order. The gentleman taking of the Duke's night gowne, placed hym in the bedde, and sayde vnto hym: "My Lorde, I wil nowe goe seeke her, which can not enter into this chamber without blushing, howbeit I trusfe before to morrowe morning she wyll be very glad of you." Which done, he left the Duke, and went into his own chamber, where he founde one of his seruantes alone, to whome he sayde: "Haft thou the harte to followe me into a place where I shall be reuenged vpon the greatest enemie that I haue in the worlde?" "Yea sir," aunswere his man. Whereupon the Gentleman toke him with him so sodainly, as he had no leasure to arme him

selfe with other weapon but with his onely dagger. And when the Duke heard him come againe, thinking he had brought her with hym that he loued so derely, hee drewe the curteine, and opened his eyes to behold and receiue that ioye which he had so long loked for, but in place of seeing her which he hoped should be the conseruacion of his life, he sawe the acceleration of his death, which was a naked sworde that the Gentleman had drawen, who therewithall did strike the Duke, which was in his shirte voyde of weapon, although well armed with courage, and fitting vp in his bedde grasped the Gentleman about the body, and sayde: "Is this thy promise whiche thou haft kept?" And seeing that he had no other weapon but his teeth and nayles, he bitte the gentleman in the arme, and by force of his owne strengthe he so defended himselfe, as they bothe fell downe into the flower. The gentleman fearing the match, called for hys manne, who finding the Duke and his maister fast together, that he wist not whether to take, he drewe them both by the feete into the middest of the chamber, and with his dagger assayde to cut the Duke's throte. The duke who defended himselfe, till suche time as the losse of his bloud made him so weake and feeble that he was not able to contende any longer. Then the Gentleman and his man laide him againe into his bed, where they accomplished the effect of that murther. Afterwardes drawing the curteine, they departed and locked the dead body in the chamber. And when he saw that he had gotten the victorie of his enemy, by whose death he thought to set at libertie the common wealth, he supposeth his facte to be vnperfect if he did not the like to fise or fixe of them which were neref to the Duke, and best beloued of him. And to attaine the perfection of that enterpryse, he bad his man to doe the like vnto them one after another, that hee had done to the Duke. But the seruaunt being nothing hardie or coragious, said vnto his maister: "Me thinke, sir, that for this time ye haue done enough, and that it were better for you now to deuise waye howe to saue your owne life, than to seeke meanes to murder any more. For if we do confume so long space of time to kill euery of them, as we haue done in murdering of the Duke, the day light will discouer our enterprise before we haue made an ende, yea although wee finde them naked and

without defence." The gentleman whose euill conscience made him fearfull, did beleue his seruaunt, and taking him alone with him, went to the bishop that had in charge the gates of the citie, and the vse of the Postes, to whom he sayd: "This euening (my Lord) newes came vnto me that mine owne brother lieth at the point of death, and crauing licence of the Duke to goe se him he hath giuen me leaue. Wherefore I beseeche you commaunde the Postes to deliuer me two good horse, and that you will fende worde to the porter that the gates may be opened." The bishop which esteemed no leſſe his request than the commaundement of the Duke his maister, incontinently gaue him a billet, by vertue wherof both the gates were opened, and the horse made ready according to his demaunde. And vnder colour and pretence of visiting his brother, he rode to Venice, where after he had cured himselfe of the duke's bitinges fastened in his fleshe, he traauled into Turkey. In the morning the duke's seruauntes seing the time so late before their maister retourned, suspected that he was gone forth in visting of some Ladye, but when they sawe he taried so long, they began to feke for him in euery place. The poore Duchesse into whose harte the loue of her husbande strongly did inuade, vnderstanding that he could not be founde, was very penife and forowfull. But when the Gentleman which he so dearely loued, was not likewyse seene abroade, searche was made in his chamber, where finding bloud at the chamber dore, they entred in, but no man was there to tell them any newes, and following the tract of the bloud the poore seruantes of the Duke went to the chamber dore, where he was, which dore they found fast locked, who incontinently brake open the same: and seing the place all bloody, drew the curteine, and found the wretched caraffe of the Duke lying in the bedde, sleeping his endleſſe sleepe. The forrow and lamentation made by the duke's seruauntes, carying the dead bodye into his palace, is easie to be conieuctured. Wherof when the Bishop was aduertised, he repaired thether, and tolde how the Gentleman was gone awaye in the night in great hafte, vnder pretence to goe to see his brother: whereupon it was evidently knownen that it was he that had committed the murder. And it was proued that his poore fister was neuer priuie to the facte, who although ſhe was affonned with the

sodaynes of the deede, yet her loue towardes her brother was farre  
more increased, bicause he had deliuerner her from a Prince so cruell,  
the enemy of her honestie : for doing whereof he did not sticke to  
hazard his owne life. Whereupon she perfuered more and more  
in vertue, and although she was poore, by reason her houfe was  
confiscate, yet both her sister and shee matched with  
so honest and riche husbandes as were to be  
founde in Italie : and afterwardes they  
both liued in good and  
great reputation.

## THE FIFTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

*One of the Frenche kinge's called Frauncis the firſte of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume, that would haue killed him.*

IN Digeon a town of Burgundie, there came to the seruice of king Frauncis, (whiche was father to Henry the fecond of that name, whiche Henry was kylled by Mountier Mongomerie, in a triumphe at the Tilt, and graundfather to Charles the ix. that now raigneth in Fraunce) an Earle of Allemaigne called Guillaume, of the house of Saxon, whereunto the house of Sauoie is so greatly allied, as in old time they were but one. This Counte for so much as he was esteemed to be so comely and hardy a Gentleman as any was in Almaigne, was in futche good fauour with the king, as he tooke him not onely into seruice, but vſed him so nere his perfone, as he made him of his priuy chamber. Vpon a day the Gouernour of Burgundie, the Lorde Trimouille (an auncient knight and loyall seruaunt of the kyng) like one ſuspicioſe and fearfull of the euill and herte of his Maifter, had daylie eſpies ouer his enemies, vſing his affaires ſo wyſely, as very fewe thinges were concealed from hym. Among other aduertisementes, one of his friendes wrote vnto him that the Counte Guillaume had receiued certain ſommes of money, with promife of more, if by any meanes he could deuife which waye to kill the king. The Lorde of Trimouile hearing of this, failed not to come to the kyng to giue him knowledge thereof, and diſcloſed it lykewyſe to Madame Loyſe of Sauoye his mother, who forgetting her amitie and aliaunce with the Almaigne Earle, beſought the king forthwith to put hym awaie. The kyng prayed his mother to ſpeake no more thereof, and ſayde, that it was imposſible that ſo honest a Gentleman would attempt to doe a deede ſo wicked. Within a while after, there came other newes of that matter, conſirming the firſt: whereof the Gouernour for the intire loue he bare to his Maifter, craued licence either to expel him the countrye, or to put him in warde. But the king gaue ſpeciall

commaundement that he should not make any semblaunce of displeasure, for that hee purposed by some other meanes to knowe the truthe. Vpon a time when he went a hunting he girded about him the best sworde that hee had, to serue for all armes and assayes, and toke with hym the Counte Guillaume, whome he commaunded to wayte vpon him, the firste and chiefest next his owne perfone. And after he had followed the hart a certayne tyme, the kyng seing that his traynes was farre from hym, and no man neare him sauing the Counte, tourned hym selfe rounde about, and when hee sawe that hee was alone, in the mydde of the forest, hee drew out his sworde, and sayd to the Counte: "How faye you, (sir counte) is not this a fayre and good swoorde?" The counte feling it at the point, and well viewyng the same, aunswered that he never sawe a better in all his life. "You haue reason," sayde the kyng, "and I beleue that if a Gentleman were determined to kyll mee, and did knowe the force of myne armes, and the goodnesse of myne harte accompanied with this sword, he would bee twyse well aduised before hee attempted that enterprize. Notwithstanding I would accompt him but a cowarde, wee being alone withoute witnesse, if he did not attempt that, which he were disposed to do." The Counte Guillaume with bashfull and astonned countenaunce aunswere: "Sir, the wickednesse of the enterprize were very great, but the folly in the execution were no leffe." The king with those wordes fell in a laughter, and put the sworde in the skaberd againe: and hearing that the chase drewe neare him, he made to the same so faste as he coulde. When he was come thether, he said nothing of that which had passed betweene theim, and verelye thoughte that the Counte Guillaume although that he was a stonge and stoute gentleman, yet he was no man to do so great an enterprize. But the Counte Guillaume, fearing to be bewrayed or suspected of the fact, next day morning repayred to Robertet the Secretarie of the kinge's reuenues, and saide that hee had well wayed the giftes and annuities which the kinge would giue him to tarrie, but he perceiued that they were not sufficient to interteigne him for halfe a yeare, and that if it pleased not the king to double the same, hee should be forced to

departe, praying the sayde Robertet to know his grace's pleasure so sone as he coulde, who sayd vnto him, that he himselfe could without further commission disburffe no more vnto him, but gladly without further delay he would repaire to the king: which he did more willingly, because he had seene the aduertisements of the Gouernor aforesaid. And so sone as the kinge was awake, he declared the matter vnto him in the presence of Monsier Trimouille and Monsier Bouinet, lord admirall, who were vtterly ignorant of that which the king had done. To whom the kinge said: "Loe, ye haue bene miscontented for that I would not put away the Counte Guillaume, but now ye see he putteth away himselfe. Wherefore Robertet (quoth the king) tell him, that if he be not content with the state which he receiued at his first entrie into my seruice, whereof many gentlemen of good houes would thinke themselues happie, it is meete that he seeke his better fortune, and tell him that I would be lothe to hinder him, but wilbe very well contented, that he seeke where he may liue better, accordingly as he deserueth." Robertet was so diligent to beare this aunsweare to the Counte, as he was to present his sute to the kinge. The counte said that with his licence he would gladly go forthwith: and as one whom feare forced to depart, he was not able to beare his abode 24 houres. And as the king was sitting downe to dinner, fayning to be forye for his departure, but that necessitie compelled him to lose his presence, hee toke his leaue. He went likewise to take leaue of the king's mother, which she gaue him with so great ioy, as she did receiue him, being her nere kinsman and freind. Then he went into his countrie: and the king seing his mother and seruantes astonned at his sodaine departure, declared vnto them the Al Arme, which he had giuen him, saying, that although he was innocent of the matter suspected, soe was his feare greate ynoughe, to departe from a maister wyth whose condicions hitherto he was not acquainted.

## THE FIFTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

*A pleasaunt discours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampelunæ.*

THERE was in the time of king Lewes the XII. of that name, a young Lord, called the lorde of Auannes sonne to the Lorde Alebret, and brother to king John of Nauarre, with whom the said Lord of Auannes ordinarely remayned. Now this yong Lorde was of the age of xv. yeares, so comely a personage, and full of curtesie and good behauour, as he seemed to be created for none other purpose, but to be beloued and regarded: and so he was in deede of al those that did wel behold and note his commendable grace and condicion, but chiefly of a woman, dwelling in the citie of Pampelunæ in Nauarre, the wife of a rich man, with whom she liued honestly: and although she was but 23 yeres of age, and her husband very nere fiftie, yet her behauor was so modest, as she seemed rather a widow than a maried wyfe, who vsed not to frequent and haunte any mariages, banquets, or common assemblies without the company of her husbande, the vertue and goodnes of whom she so greatly esteemed, as she preferred the same before the beautie of al others. The husband, hauing experience of her wisedome, put such trust in her, as he committed al thaffaires of his house to her discretion: vpon a day this rich man with his wife, were inuited to a mariage of one that was nere kinne vnto him: to which place (for the greater honor of the mariage) repaireed the yong Lord of Auannes, who naturally was giuen to dauncing, and for his excellencie in dauncing there was not his like to be found in his time: after dinner when they prepared to daunce, the Lord of Auannes was intreated thereunto by the rich man: the said lord asked him with what gentlewoman hee shoulde lead the daunce. He aunswere him: " My Lord if there were any one more beautifull, or more at my commaundement then my wyfe, I would present her vnto you, beseeching you to do mee so much honour as to take her by the hande." Which the yong Lorde did, and by reasoun of his youthfull courage he toke more

pleasure in vaultinge and dauncinge, then in beholding the beautie of the Ladies: and she whom he ledde by the hand, contrarywyse regarded more the grace and beautie of the said yong Lord, then the daunce wherin she was, albeit for her great wisedome she made therof no semblance at al. When supper time was come, the Lord of Auannes badde the companie farewell and went home to the castle: whether the riche man accompanied him vpon his moile: and riding homewards together, hee saide vnto him: "My Lord, this day you haue done so great honor vnto my kinsemens and mee, that it were great ingratitude if I should not offer my selfe with all the goods I haue to do you seruice: I knowe sir that such Lordes as you be which haue nere and couetous fathers, many times do lacke money which we by keeping of smal household, and vsing good husbandrie do heape and gather together. Now thus it is sir, that God hauing giuen mee a wife accordinge to my desire he would not in this world altogether indue mee with heauenly pleasures, but hath left me voyde of one ioy which is the ioye that fathers haue of children. I know sir that it is not my dutie, and belongeth not to my state to adopt you for such a one, but if it maye please you to receiue mee for your seruaunt, and to declare vnto me your small affaires, so farre as a hundred thousandde Crownes shall extende, I will not sticke to helpe your necessities." The yong Lorde of Auannes was very ioyfull of this offer, for he had suche a father as the other had described vnto him: and after he had giuen him hartie thanckes, he called him his friendlye father. From that time forth the sayd riche man conceiued such loue in the yong Lord, as daily he ceased not to inquire of his lacke and want, and hid not from his wyfe the deuocion which he bare to the said Lorde of Auannes, for which she rendred vnto him double thanckes. And after that time the said yong Lord lacked not what he desired, and many times resorted to that rich man's to drincke and eate with him, and finding him not at home, his wyfe rewarded him with his demaunde: whoe admonished her by wyse and discrete talke to be vertuous, because he feared and loued her aboue all the women of the worlde. She which had God and her honor before her eyes, was contente with his sight and talke, wherin confissted the satiffaction of his honestie and vertuous

loue: in such wife as shee neuer made any signe or semblaunce, wherby he might thinke and iudge that shee had anye affection vnto him, but that which was both brotherlie and christian. During this couerte amitie, the Lord of Auannes through the foresaid ayde, was very gorgious and trimme, and approching the age of xvii. yeares, began to frequent the company of Gentlewomen more then he was wont to do: and although he had a more willing desire, to loue that wyse and discrete dame aboue other, yet the feare which he had to lose her loue (if shee misliked her sute) made him to hold his peace, and to seeke els wher: and gaue himself to the loue of a Gentlewoman dwelling hard by Pampelunæ, which had to husband a yong gentleman, that aboue all thinges loued and delighted in dogges, horsse, and Hawkes. This noble Gentleman began (for her sake) to deuise a thousand pastimes, as Torneyes, running at the Tilt, Mommeries, Maskes, feastes and other games, at all which this yong dame was present: but because that her husband was very fantasticall, and saw his wyfe to be faire and wanton, hee was ialous of her honour, and kepte her in so straite, as the sayde Lord of Auannes colde get nothing at her hands but words, shortly spoken, in some daunce, albeit in litle time and lesse speache, the sayde Lorde perceyued that there wanted nothing for full perfection of their loue, but time and place: wherfore he came to his new adopted father the rich man, and said vnto him that he was minded with great deuotion to visite our Lady of Montferrat, intreating him to suffer his houshoulde traine to remaine with him, because he was disposed to go thither alone. Whereunto he willingly agreed: but his wyfe whose hart the great prophet loue had inspired, incontinently suspected the true cause of that voyage, and cold not forbeare to saye vnto the Lord of Auannes these woords: "My Lord, my Lorde, the pilgrimage of the Lady whom you worshippe, is not farre without the walles of the Citie, wherefore I beseech you aboue all thinges to haue regarde vnto your health." Hee which feared her, and loued her, blushed at her words, and without talke by his countenaunce he seemde to confess the trothe: whereupon he departed, and when he had bought a couple of faire Genets of Spaine he clothed himself like a horsekeeper and so dis-

guised his face as no man knew him. The Gentleman which had maried that fonde and wanton gentlewoman, louinge aboue all thinges (as is sayde before) fayre horfes, espyed thoſe two Genets which the lord of Auannes did lead, and incontinently came to buy them: and after he had bought them, hee beheld the horſe-keeper which rode and handled them paffing well, and asked him if he were willing to ſerue him: the Lord of Auannes anſweared yea, and added further how he was a poore horſe-keeper vnskilfull of other ſcience but of keepinge of horſe, which practize hee could do ſo well, as he doubted not but he ſhould content and pleafe him: the Gentleman very glad thereof, gaue him charge of all his horſe, and called forth his wyfe vnto him, vnto whom he recommended his horſe and horſekeper, and told her that he himſelf was diſpoſed to go to the caſtel: the gentlewoman ſo well to pleafe her husband as for her owne delight and paſtime, wente to loke vpon her horſe and to behold her new horſekeper, who ſeemed to be a man of good bringing vp, notwithstanding ſhe knewe him not. He ſeing that ſhe had no knowledge of him, came to do reuerence vnto her after the maner of Spaine, and taking her by the hand kiſſed the ſame, and by kiſſing of her hand, he diſcloſed himſelf ſo much as ſhe knewe him: for in dauncing with her many times he vſed the like curteſie: and then ſhe ceaſed not to deuife place wher ſhe might ſpeake to him a part: which ſhe did the very fame euening: for being bidden to a eaſt wherunto her husband would faine haue had her to go, ſhe fayned herſelfe to be fiſke and not able: and her husband loth to faile his frends reuert, ſaid vnto her: "For ſo much (my good wyfe) as you be not diſpoſed to go with me, I pray you to haue regard to my dogges and horſe that they may lack nothing." The gentlewoman was very wel contented with that comiſſion: howbeit without chaung of countenance ſhe made him anſweare that fith in better things he would not imploie her, ſhe would not refuſe the leaſt, to ſatiſfie his deſire: and her husband was no foner out of the gaſtes, but ſhe went down into the ſtable, where ſhe founde faulte wyth diuers things: for prouifion whereof ſhe committed ſuch ſeueral busines to her men on euerie ſide, that ſhee remayned alone with the maſter horſekeper: and for feare leaſt any ſhould

come vpon them vnwares, she said vnto him: “ Go into my garden and tarie my comming in the litle house at the ende of the alley.” Which he did so diligently as hee had no leasure to thancke her, and after that she had giuen order to the yeomen of the stable, shee went to see the dogges, counterfaiting like care and diligence to haue them wel intreated: in such wise as she seemed rather a mayde of the chamber then a maistresse of the house: which done shee returned into her chamber, where she made her self to be so werie, as she went to bed, saying that she was disposed to sleepe. All her women left her alone except one in whom she reposeth her greatest trust, and vnto whom she said: “ Go downe into the garden, and cause him whom you shall finde at the end of the alley, to come hither.” The mayde wente downe and founde the Maister horskeeper there, whom forthwith shee brought vnto her maistresse: and then the gentlewoman caused her mayd to go forth to watch when her husbande came home. The lord of Auannes seing that he was alone with his maistres, put of his horsekeeper’s apparel, plucked from his face his false nose and beard, and not as a feareful horsekeeper, but like such a Lord as he was, without asking leaue of the Gentlewoman, boldly laied him downe beside her: where hee was of that foolishe woman receiued so ioyfully, as his estate and goodly personage did require, continuing with her vntil the retorne of her husband: at whose coming putting vpon him againe his counterfaite attire, left the pleasure which by policie and malice he had vsurped. The gentleman when hee was within, hearde tell of the dilligence which his wife had vsed vpon his commaundemente, and thanked her very hartlie. “ Husband (said the gentlewoman) I do but my dutie, and do assure you that if there be no ouerseer to checke and commaunde your negligent seruaunts, you shal haue neyther dogge nor horse well kept and ordred: forasmuche as I knowe their slouth, and your good wil, you shalbe better serued then you haue bin heretofore.” The gentleman who thought that he had gotten the best horsekeeper of the worlde, asked her how she liked him. “ I assure you sir (quoth she) he doth his busines so well as any seruaunt, howbeit he had neede to be called vpon, for you know seruaunts in these dayes without an ouerseer, wilbe be slow and careleffe.” Thus of

long time continued the husbande and wyfe in greater amitie and loue then before, and gaue ouer all the suspicion and ialoufie which hee had conceyued, because before time his wyfe louinge feastes, daunces and companies, was become intentife and diligente about her household: and perceiued that now many times she was contented in homely garmentes to go vp and downe the house wher before she was accustomed to be 4 houres in trimming of herselfe: whereof shee was commended of her husbande, and of euery man that knew not how the greater deuill had chased awaie the lese. Thus liued this yonge dame vnder the hypocrise and habite of an honest woman, in suche fleshlye pleasure as reason, conscience, order and measure, had no longer resting place in her: which infaciat lust the yong Lord of delicate complexion was no longer able to sustaine, but began to waxe so pale and feeble, as he needed no visarde for disfiguring of himselfe. Notwithstanding the folish loue which he bare to that woman so dulled his fence, as he presumed vpon that force which fayled in the monstorous giant Hercules, whereby in the ende constrainyd with ficknes and councelled by his maistresse, which loued not the fiche so well as the hole, demaunded leauue of his maister to go home to his frends: who to his great griefe graunted him the same: and caused him to make promise that when he was recovered hee shoulde returne againe to his seruice. Thus went the Lord of Auannes on foote away from his maister, for he had not paste the lenght of one streate to trauaile. And when he was come to the rich man's house his new father, he found none at home but his wyfe, whose vertuous loue shee bare him was nothing diminished for al his voyage: but when she saw him so leane and pale, she could not forbeare to say vnto him: "Sir, I knowe not in what staye your conscience is, but your body is litle amended by this pilgrimage, and I am in doubte that the way wherein you trauailed in the night, did wearie and paine you more, then that vpon the daye: for if you had gone to Hierusalem on foote, you myghte perhappes haue returned more Sunne burned, but more leane and weake it had bin impossible. Now make accompt of your pilgrimage here, and serue no more such Sainetes, for in place of rayfinge the deade from life, they do to death thosse that

be on liue: moreouer I shall faye vnto you, that if your bodye were neuer so sinfull, I see well it hath suffred such penaunce, as I haue pitie to renewe anye former payne.” When the Lorde of Auaunes had hearde all her talke he was no lesse angrie with him selfe then ashamed, and faide vnto her: “Madame, I haue sometimes heard tell that repentaunce insueth sinne, and now I haue proued the same to my cost, praying you to excuse my youth that could not be corrected but by experience of that euill, which before it would not beleuee.” The Gentlewoman chaunging her talke, caused him to lye downe vpon a fayre bedde, where he lay the space of xv. dayes, feedinge onely vpon restoratiues: and the husband and wyfe kept him so good companye, as one of theim neuer departed from him: and albeit that he had committed those follies, (suche as you haue heard) against the minde and aduise of that wyfe and discrete dame, yet shee neuer diininished the vertuous loue which shee bare him, for shee still hoped that after he had spent his yonger dayes in youtly follies, he would retire at length when age and experience should force him to vse honest loue, and by that meanes would be altogether her owne. And during those fifteene dayes that he was cherished in her house, she vfed vnto him womanly and commendable talke, onely tending to the loue of vertue, which caryed such effect as he began to abhorre the follie that he committed: and beholding the gentlewoman which in beautie passed the other wanton, with whom he had delt before, he imprinted in minde more and more the graces and vertues that were in her, and was not able to keepe in harte the secrete conceipt of the same, but abandoning all feare, he sayd vnto her: “Madame, I see no better means, to be such one, and so vertuous as you by wordes desire me for to be, but to fettle my harte, and giue my selfe to be holie in loue with vertue, and the qualities therunto appertinent. I humblie beseech you therfore (good madame) to tel me if your selfe wil not vouchsafe to giue me al your ayde and fauor that you possiblie can, for thobteyning of the same.” The maistresse very ioyful to heare him vfe that language, made him aunswere: “And I do promise you fir, that if you wilbe in loue with vertue as it behoueth so noble a state as you be, I wil do you the seruice that I can to bring you there-

unto with such power and abilitie as God hath planted in mee.” “ Well madame,” saide the Lorde of Anannes, “ remember then your promise, and vnderstande that God vnknownen of the Christian but by fayth, hath dayned to take flesh, like to that our sinful which we beare about vs, to thend that by drawing our flesh into the loue of his humanity, he may draw also our minde to the loue of his diuinitie, and requireth to be serued by thinges visible to make vs loue by fayth that diuinity which is inuisible: in like maner the vertue which I desire to imbrace all the dayes of my life, is a thing inuisible and not to be seen but by outward effects. Wherfore needful it is, that she now do put vpon her some body or shape to let herfelfe be knownen amonges men: which in deede she hath don by indning herfelf with your form and shape, as the most perfect that she is able to find amonges liuing creatures. Wherfore I do acknowledge and confess you to be not onely a vertuous creature, but enen very vertue it self. And I which see the same to shine vnder the glimfing vaile of the most perfect that euer was: I will honor and serue the same during my life, forsaking (for the same) all other vaine and vicious loue.” The gentlewoman no lesse content then marueling to here those words dissembled so wel her contented minde as she said vnto him: “ My Lord, I take not vpon me to aunswere your dininity, but like her that is more fearefull of euill then beleful of good, do humblie beseech you to cease to speake to me those words of prayse, that is not worthy of the least of them. I know right wel that I am a woman, not onely as another is, but so imperfect, as vertue might do a better acte to transforme me into her, then she to take my forme, except it be when she desires to be vnknownen to the world: for vnder such habite as mine is, vertue cannot be knownen, according to her worthines: so it is fir, that for mine imperfection, I wil not cease to bere you such affection, as a woman ought or maye do that feareth God, and hath respect to her honour: but that affection shal not appere, vntill your harte be able to receive the pacience which vertuous loue commaundeth. And now fir I know what kinde of speach to vse, and thincke that you do not loue so well, your owne goodes, purse or honour, as I doe with all my hart tender and imbrace the same.” The

lord of Auannes fearefull with teares in eyes, besought her earnestly that for her woordes assuraunce, shee woulde vouchsafe to kiffe him: which she refused, saying that for him, she would not breake the countrie's custome: and vpon this debate the husband came in, to whom the Lord of Auannes said: "My father, I knowe my selfe so much bounde to you and to your wife, as I besech you for euer to repute me for your sonne." Which the good man willingly did. "And for surety of that amitie, I pray you," said Monsier D'Auannes, "that I may kiffe you." Whiche he did. After he said vnto him: "If it were not for feare to offend the Law, I would do the like to my mother your wyfe." The husbande hearinge him faye so, commaunded his wyfe to kiffe him, which she did although she made it straunge, either for the Lord's desire or for husband's request to do the same: then the fier (which words had begunne to kindle in the harte of the poore Lorde) beganne to augmente by that desired kiffe, so strongly sued for, and so cruelly refused: which done the sayde Lord of Auan- nes repayred to the Castell to the kinge his brother, where he told many goodly tales of his voyage to Montferrat, and vnder- stode there, that the kinge his brother was determined to remoue to Olly and Taffares, and thinking that the iorney woulde be longe, conceiued great heauines, which made him to muse how he myghte assaye before his departure, whether the wise Gentle- woman bare him such good will, as shee made him beleue shee did: and therefore hee toke a house in the streate where she dwelt, which was old and ill fauoured and built of Timber: which house about midnight of purpose he set on fier, wherof the crye was so great throughout the Citie as it was hard within the rich man's house. Who demaunding at his window wher the fier was, vnderstode it to be at the Lord of Auannes, wherunto he in- contientlye repayred with all the people of his house, and found the yonge Lord in his shirt in the middest of the streat, whom for pitie he toke betweene his armes, and couering him with his nighte Gowne, caried him home to his house with al possible speede, and saide vnto his wife which was a bed: "Wife, I giue you to kepe this prisoner, vse him as my selfe." So fone as he was departed the sayd Lord of Auannes, who had good wil to be

interteigned for her husband, quicklie lept into the bed, hoping that the occasion and place would make that wife woman to chaunge her minde, which he founde to be contrary: for so sonne as he lept into the bed of thone side, shee speedelie went out of the other, and putting on her night Gowne she repaired to the bed's head, and said vnto him: "How now fir, do you thincke that occasions can chaunge a chaste harte? beleue and thincke that as gold is proued in the Fornace, euen so an vnspotted hart in the middest of temptacion: wherein many times an honest hart sheweth it selfe to be more stong and vertuous, then els where, and the more it is assailed by his contrary, the coulder be the desires of the same: wherefore be you assured that if I had bin affected with other minde then that which many times I haue disclosed vnto you, I would not haue fayled to finde meanes to haue satissfyed the same: praying you that if you will haue me to continue the affection which I beare you, to remoue from your minde for euer not onely the will but the thoughte also, for any thinge you be able to doe to make me other then I am." As she was speaking of these words her women came into the chamber, whom she commaunded to bring in a colacion of all sortes of comifts and other delicats: but that time hee had no appetite either to eate or drincke, hee was fallen into suche dispaire for fayling of his enterprise: fearing that the demonstracion of his desire, would haue caused her to giue ouer the secrete familiaritie betweene them. The hushande hauinge ceased the fier, returned and intreated the Lord of Auannes that night to lodge in his house, who passed that night in such nomber of cogitacions as his eyes were more exercised with weeping then sleeping, and early in the morninge he bad them farewell in their bedde, where by kissing the Gentlewoman hee well perceiued that she had more pitie upon his offence, then euill will against his person, which was a cole to make the fier of loue to kindle more fiercely. After dinner he rode with the king of Taffares, but before his departure he went to take his leaue of his newe alied father and of his wyfe: whoe after the furst commaundement of her husband, made no more difficultie to kisse him then if he had bin her owne sonne. But be assured the more that vertue stayed her

eye and countenaunce to shew the hidden flame, the more it did augment and become intollerable, in such wyfe as not able to indure the warres which honour and loue had rayfed within her hart, (who notwithstanding was determined never to shewe it, hauing lost the consolacion of her fight, and forgeuen the talke with him for whom she liued) a continuall feuer began to take her, caused by a Melancholicke and couert humor, in such wyfe as the extreme partes of her body waxed cold, and those within burnt incessantly. The Phisitions (in the hands of whom man's life doth not depend) began greatly to mistrust health by reason of a certaine opilacion which made her melancholicke: who counseiled the husbande to aduertise his wife to confider her conscience, and that she was in the handes of God (as though they which be in health were not in his protection): the husbande which intirely loued his wyfe, was wyth their woordes made so heauye and penifie, as for his confort he wrote to the Lord of Auannes, beseechinge him to take the paynes to vistite them, hoping that his fight would greatly ease and reliene the diseafe of his wife. Which request the Lord of Auannes immediatly vpon the recepte of those letters slacked not, but by poste arriued at his father's house: at the entrye whereof hee founde the seruautes and women makinge great sorrowe and lamentacion accordinglie as the goodnes of their maistresse deserued: wherewith the sayde Lorde was so astonned as he stode stiil at the doore like one in a traunce, vntil he sawe his good father: who imbracing him beganne so bitterlie to weepe, that he was not able to speake a worde. And so conueied the sayd Lorde of Auannes vp into the Chamber of his poore sicke wyfe: who casting vp her languishing eyes looked vpon him: and reaching his hand vnto her, she strayned the same with all her feeble force, and imbracinge and kissinge the same made a marueilous plainte, and sayd vnto him. "O my Lord, the houre is come that all diffimulacion must cease, and needes I must confess vnto you the troth, which I to my greate paine haue concealed from you: which is, that if you haue borne vnto me greate affection, beleene that mine rendred vnto you, hath bin no lesse: but my sorrow hath farre surpassed your grieve, the smarte whereof I do feele now against myne hart and will: wherefore, my lord, yee shall vnderstand, that GOD and mine

honour would not suffer mee to disclose the fame vnto you, fearing to increase in you that which I desired to be diminished: but knowe yee, my Lorde, that the woordes which so many tymes you haue vttered vnto mee, haue bred in me such grieve, as the fame be the Inſtrumentes and woorkers of my death, wherewyth I am contente fith God did giue mee the grace not to suffer the violence of my Loue, to blotte the puritye of my conscience and renowne: for leſſe fire then is wythin the kindled harte of mine, hath ruined and consumed moſt famous and stately buildinges. Nowe my hart is well at ease, fithe before I dye, I haue had power to declare myne affection, which is equall vnto yours, ſauing that the honor of men and women be not a like: beſeechinge you, my Lorde, from henceforth not to feare to addrefſe your ſelfe to the greateſt and moſte vertuous Ladies that you can finde: for in ſuch noble hartes do dwell the ſtrongeſt paſſions, and there the fame be moſte wiſely gouerned: and God graunt that the grace, beautie and honeſtie, which be in you, do not ſuffer your loue to trauell wythout fruite: haue in remembrance good, my Lord, the ſtabilitie of my conſante minde, and do not attribute that to crueltie which ought to be imputed to honor, conſcience and vertue: which are thinges a thouſande times more accep-table, then the expence and loſſe of tranſitorie life. Nowe, fare-well, my Lorde, recommendinge vnto your honour the ſtate of my husband your good father, to whom I pray you to reherfe the troth of that which you doe know by mee, to the intent that he may be certefied how dearely I haue loued God and him: for whose ſake I beſeech you to abſente your ſelfe out of my fight: for from henceforth I do meane holye to giue my ſelfe to the contemplacion of thoſe promifes which God hath louingly de-creed, before the conſtitucion of the world.” In ſaying ſo ſhee kiſſed him, and imbraced him wyth all the force of her feeble armeſ. The fayde Lorde, whose hart was dead for compaſſion, as her’s was in dying through grieve and forrow, without power to ſpeakē one onely worde, withdrew himſelfe out of her fight and laye downe vpon a bed within an inner chamber: where he fainted many times. Then the gentlewoman called for her huſ-bande, and after ſhee had giuen him many goodly leſſons, ſhee recommended him to the Lord of Auannes, affuringe him that

nexte to his parson, of all the men in the worlde shée had him in greateste estimacion: and soe kissinge her husbande shée badde him farewell. And then was brought vnto her the holye Sacramente, which shée receyued with such ioye, as one certaine and sure of her Saluacion, and perceyuinge her fighte begynne to fayle, and her strength diminishe shē pronounced aloude: *In manus tuas, &c.* At which erie the Lorde of Auannes rose vp from the bedde, and piteously beholding her, he viewed her with a swete sighe, to rendre her gloriouse ghost to him which had redemeit it. And when he perceiued that shée was dead, hee ran to the dead bodie, which liuing he durst not approche for feare, and imbraced and kisst the same in such wife, as muche a doe there was to remoue her corps out of his armes: wherof the husband was very much abashed, for that he neuer thought that he had borne his wife such affection. And in saying vnto him: “My Lord, you haue done enough:” they withdrew them felues together. And after long lamentation, the one for his wife, and the other for his Lady: the Lord of Auannes told him the whole discourse of his Loue, and howe vntill her death shē neuer graunted him not so muche as one signe or token of loue, but in place therof a rebellious minde to his importunate futes: at the reherfall whereof, the husbande conceiued greater pleasure and contentment than euer he did before: which augmented or rather doubled his sorrow and grieve for losse of such a wife. And all his life time after, in al seruices and duties he obeyed the Lord of Auannes, that then was not abone eightene yeres of age, who retourned to the Courte, and continued there many yeares without will to see or speake to any woman, for the sorrow which he had taken for his Lady, and more then two yeres he wore blacke for mourning apparell. Beholde here the difference betweene a wife and discrete woman, and one that was wanton and foolish, both which sortes exprest different effectes of loue: whereof the one received a glorious and commendable death, and the other liued to long to her great shame and infamie. The one by small fute sone won and obteyned, the other by earnest requestes and great payne pursued and followed. And till death had taken order, to ridde her from that pursute, shē euer continued constant.

## THE FIFTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

*A punishment more rigorous than death, of a husband towarde his wife that had committed adulterie.*

KING Charles of Fraunce, the eight of that name, sent into Germany a gentleman called Bernage, lorde of Cyure besides Amboise : who to make speede, spared neither daye nor nighte for execution of his Prince's commaundement. In sutch wylle as very late in an euening he arriued at the Castle of a Gentleman, to demaunde lodging, which very hardly he obtained. Howbeit, when the gentleman vnderstode that he was the seruaunt of such a kyng, he prayed him not to take it in ill parte the rudinesse of his seruantes because vpon occasion of certain his wiue's frends which loued him not, he was forced to kepe his house so straight. Then Bernage tolde him the caufe of his iourney, wherein the Gentleman offered to doe to the king his maister all seruice possible. Leading him into his house where he was feasted and lodged very honorably. When supper was ready, the Gentleman conueyed him into a parlor wel hanged with fayre Tapistrie. And the meate being set vpon the table, and he required to sit down, he perceiued a woman comming forth behind the hanging, which was so beautifull as might be seene, sauing that her head was all shauen, and apparelled in Almaine blacke. After bothe the Gentlemen had washéd, water was brought to the Gentlewoman, who when she had washéd she sat down also, without speaking to any, or any word spoken vnto her againe. The Lorde Bernage beholding her well, thought her to be one of the fayrest Ladies that euer he sawe, if her face had not bene so pale and her countenaunce so sadde. After she had eaten a litle, she called for drinke, which one of the seruautes brought vnto her in a straunge cup: for it was the head of a dead man trimmed with siluer, wherof she dranke twice or thrice. When she had supped and washéd her handes, making a reuerence to the Lord of the house, shee retourned backe againe that way shee came, without speaking to any. Bernage was so much amased at that straunge fighte, as he waxed very heauie and

fadde. The gentleman who marked hym, sayde vnto hym: "I see well that you be astonned at that you saw at the table, but seyng your honest demeanour, I wyll not keepe it secrete from you, because you shal not note that crueltie to be done without greate occasion. This gentlewoman whiche you see, is my wyfe, whom I loued better than was possible for any man to loue his wyfe. In such forte as to marry her I forgat all feare of friendes, and brought her hither in despite of her parentes. She likewyfe shewed vnto me suche signes of loue, as I attempted a thoufande wayes to place her here for her ioye and myne, where wee lyued a long tyme in suche reste and contentation, as I thought my self the happiest Gentleman in Christendome. But in a iourney whiche I made, the attempt whereof myne honour forced me, shee forgot bothe her selfe, her conscience, and the loue whiche shee bare towardes mee, and fell in loue with a Gentleman that I brought vp in this house, whiche her loue vpon my retourne I perceiued to be true. Notwithstanding the loue that I bare her, was so great as I had no mistrust in her, tyll sutch tyme as experiance did open myne eyes, and sawe the thynge that I feared more than death. For whiche caufe my loue was tourned into furie and dispayre, so greate, as I watched her so nere, that vpon a daye fayning my selfe to goe abroade, I hydde my selfe in the chamber where now shee remayneth. Into the whiche sone after my departure shee repayred, and caused the Gentleman to come thether. Whome I did beholde to doe that thinge, which was altogether vnmeete for any man to doe to her, but my selfe. But when I sawe him mounte vpon the bed after her, I stepped forth and tooke him betwene her armes, and with my dagger immediatly did kill him. And because the offence of my wife seemed so great as the doing of her to death was not sufficient to punish her, I deuised a torment whiche in mine opinion is worse vnto her than death. For thus I vse her, I doe locke her vp in the chamber wherein she accustomed to vse her delightes, and in the companie of hym that she loued farre better than me. In the closet of which chamber I haue placed the Anatomie of her friend, referueng the same as a precious Iewell. And to the ende shee may not forget him at meales, at the table before my face, she vseth his skulle in

steade of a cup to drinke in, to the intent she may behold him (aliue) in the presence of hym whom through her owne fault she hath made her mortal enemy, and him dead and slain for her sake, whose loue she preferred before mine. And so beholdeth those twoo thinges at dinner and supper which ought to displease her moste, her enemie liuing, and her friend dead, and al through her own wickednesse, howbeit I doe vse her no worse than my self, although shee goeth thus shauen: for the ornament of the heare doth not appertaine to an adultresse, nor the vayle or other furniture of the head to an unchaift woman. Wherefore shee goeth so shauen, in token she hath lost her honestie. If it please you, sir, to take the payne to see her, I wil bring you to her." Whereunto Bernage willingly assented. And descending into her chamber whiche was very richely furnished, they founde her sitting alone at the fier. And the Gentleman drawing a Curteine, whiche was before the Closet, he sawe the Anatomie of the dead man hanging. Bernage had a great desire to speake vnto the Ladie, but for feare of her husband he durst not. The Gentleman perceiuin the same, said vnto him: "If it please you to speake vnto her, you shal vnderstand her order of talke." Therewithall Bernage sayde vnto her: "Madame, if your pacience be correspondent to this torment, I deme you to be the happiest woman of the worlde." The lady with teares trickeling down her eyes with a grace so good and humble as was possible, spake thus vnto him: "Sir, I doe confesse my fault to be so great, as all the afflictions and torment that the Lorde of this place (for I am not worthy to call him hufbande) can doe vnto me, be nothing comparable to the forrowe I haue conceiued of myne offence." And in sayinge so, she began pitifully to weepe. Therewithall the Gentleman toke Bernage by the hande, and led him forth. The next day morning he departed about the businesse which the king had sent him. Notwithstanding, in bidding the Gentleman fare well, he sayde vnto hym: "Sir, the loue whiche I beare vnto you, and the honor and secretes wherewith you haue made me priuie, doth force me to faye vnto you howe I doe thinke good (seing the great repentance of the poore Gentlewoman your wife) that you doe shewe her mercie. And bicause you be yong and haue no children, it were a verie great losse and detriment

to lose such a houfe and ligneage as yours is. And it may so come to passe, that your enemies thereby in time to come may be your heires, and inioye the goodes and patrimonie whiche you doe leaue behinde you." The Gentleman which neuer thought to speake vnto his wife, with those wordes paused a great while, and in thend confessed his faying to be true, promising him that if she would continue in that humilitie, he would in time shew pittie vppon her, with whiche promise Bernage departed. And when he was retourned towardes the king his maister, hee recompted vnto him the successe of his iourneyes. And amonges other thinges he tolde him of the beautie of this Ladie, who sent his Painter called Iohn of Paris, to bring him her counterfaicte: which with the consent of her husband, he did. Who after that long penaunce, for

a desyre he had to haue children, and for the pitie  
hee bare to his wyfe which with great hum-  
blenesse receiued that affliction, tooke her  
vnto hym agayne, and afterwardes  
begat of her many  
children.

## THE FIFTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

*A President of Grenoble aduertised of the ill gouernement of his wife, took such order, that his honestie was not diminished, and yet reuenged the faute.*

IN Grenoble (the chiefe citie of a Countrie in Fraunce called Daulphine, which citie otherwife is named Gratianapolis) there was a President that had a very fayre wyfe, who perciuing her husbande beginne to waxe olde, fell in loue with a yong man that was her husband's Clark, a very propre and handsome felowe. Vpon a time when her husband in a morning was gone to the Palace, the clarke entred his chamber and tooke his Maister's place, whiche thing one of the presidente's men, that faithfully had serued him the space of xxx. yeres like a trustie seruant perciuing, could not keepe it secret, but tolde his Maister. The President whiche was a wise man, would not beleue it vpon his light report, but sayde that he did it of purpose to set discord betwene him and his wife, notwithstanding if the thing were true as he had reported, he might let him see the thing it selfe, whiche if he did not, he had good cause to thinke that he had deuised a lye to breake and diffolue the loue betwene them. The seruaunt did assure him that he would cause him to see the thing wherof he had tolde him. And one morning so sone as the President was gone to the Court, and the Clarked entred into his chamber, the seruaunt sent one of his companions to tel his maister that he might come in good time, to see the thing that he had declared vnto him, he himself standing stiil at the doore to watch that the partie might not goe out. The President so sone as he sawe the signe that one of his men made vnto him, fayning that he was not wel at ease, left the audience, and spedely went home to his house, where he founde his olde seruaunt watching at the chamber dore, assuring him for truth that the Clarke was within, and that he should with spedie to goe in. The President sayd to his seruant: "Do not tarrie at the dore, for thou knowest ther is no other going out or comming in but onely this, except a litle closet

wherof I alone do beare the keye.” The president entred the chamber, and found his wife and the Clarke a bed together, who in his shirt fell downe at the president’s feete, crauing pardon, and his wife much afraid began to weepe. To whome the President sayde: “For so muche as the thing which thou hast done is such, as thou maist well consider, that I can not abyde my house (for thee) in this sort to be dishonored, and the daughters which I haue had by thee to be disauanced and abased: therfore leave of thy weeping, and marke what I shall doe. And thou Nicolas (for that was his Clarke’s name) hide thy selfe here in my closet, and in any wife make no noyse.” When he had so done, he opened the dore and called in his olde seruaunt, and sayde vnto him: “Diddest not thou warrant and assure me that thou wouldest let me see my Clarke and wyfe in bedde together? And vpon thy words I am come hether, thinking to haue killed my wife, and doe finde nothing to be true of that which thou diddest tell me. For I haue searched the chamber in euery place as I will shewe thee.” And with that he caused his seruant to looke vnder the beddes, and in euery corner. And when the seruant founde him not, throughly astonned, he sayde to his maister: “Sir, I sawe him goe into the chamber, and out he is not gone at the dore: and so farre as I can see he is not here: therefore I thinke the Diuel must nedes carrie him awaie.” Then his maister rebuked him in these words: “Thou art a villayn, to set such diuision betwene my wife and me, wherefore I doe discharge thee from my seruice, and for that which thou haft done me, I will paye the thy dutie, with the aduaantage: therefore get thee hence, and take hede that thou doest not tarrie in this town aboue xxiiii. hours.” The President for that he knew him to be an honest and faithfull seruaunt, gaue him five or fixe yeares wages, and purposed otherwise to preferre him. When the seruaunt (with ill will and weeping teares) was departed, the President caused his Clark to come out of his Closet: and after he had declared to his wife and him, what hee thought of their ill behauour, he forbad them to shewe no likelyhode of any such matter, and commaunded his wyfe to attire and dresse her selfe in more gorgeous apparel, than she was wont

to weare, and to haunt and resort to company and feastes, willing the Clarke to make a better countenance on the matter then hee did before, but whenfoeuer he rounded him in the eare and bad him depart, he charged him after that commaundement not to tarry foure houres in the towne. And when he had thus done, he retourned to the palace Courte, as though there hadde no sutche thing chaunced. And the space of fiftene dayes (contrary to his custome) he feasted his frendes and neighbours, and after euery those bankettes, he caused the minstrels to play, to make the Gentlewomen daunce. One daye he feing his wife not to daunce, he commaunded his Clarke to take her by the hande, and to leade her forth to daunce, who thinking the President had forgotten the trespass past, very ioyfully daunced with her. But when the daunce was ended, the President faining as though he would haue commaunded him to doe some thing in his house, bad him in his eare to get him away and neuer to retourne. Now was the Clark very forowfull to leaue his Ladye, but yet no lesse ioyfull he was that his life was saued. Afterwardes when the President had made all his frendes and kinffolkes, and all the countrey, beleue what great loue he bare to his wife, vpon a faire day in the moneth of May, he went to gather a fallade in his garden, the herbes whereof after she had eaten, she liued not aboue xxiiii. houres after, whereof he counterfaited sutche sorrowe, as no man could suspect the occasion of her death. And by that meanes he was reuenged of his enemy, and saued the honour of his house.

“ ¶ I will not by this Nouell (said Emarsuitte) prayse the conscience of the President, but herein I haue declared the light behauiour of a woman, and the great pacience and prudence of a man: Praying you good Ladies all, not to be offended at the truthe.” “ If all women (quo Parlamente) that loue their Clarkes or seruauntes, were forced to eate such fallades, I beleue they would not loue their gardens so well as they doe, but woulde teare and plucke vp all the herbes bothe roote and rinde, to auoyde those thinges that by death might aduaunce the honor of their stock and ligneage.” “ If fallades be so costly (quod Hircan) and so daungerous in May, I will prouoke appetite with other fawces, or els hunger shall be my chiefeſt.”

## THE FIFTY-NINTH NOUELL.

*A gentleman of Perche suspecting iniurie done vnto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in proufe the cause of his suspicion.*

BESIDES the countrie of Perche, there were two Gentlemen, which from the tyme of theyr youthe lyued in futche great and perfect amitie, as there was betwene them but one harte, one bed, one house, one table, and one purse. Long time contynned this perfect frendship: betwene whom there was but one will and one woerde, no difference in either of them: in so muche as they not onely seemed to be two brethren, but also they appeared in al semblances to be but one man. One of them chaunced to mary: notwithstanding they gaue not ouer their frendship, but perfeuered in their vſual amitie as they were wont to doe: and whan they happened to be strained to straight lodging, the maried gentleman would not stick to suffer his friend to lie with him and his wife. But yet you ought for frendship sake to consider that the maried man lay in the mids. Their goodes were common betwene them, and the mariage did yelde no cause to hinder their assured amitie. But in processe of time, the felicitie of this worlde (whiche carieth with it a certaine mutabitie) could not continue in the houſe, which was before right pleasaunt and happy: for the maried man forgetting the faithfull fidelitie of his friend, without any caufe conceiued a greate suspicion betwene hym and his wyfe, from whom he could not dissemble the case, but sharply tolde her his mynde. She therewithall was wonderfully amazed: howbeit, he commaunded her to doe all thinges (one thing excepted) and to make so muche of his companion as of himselfe. Neuerthelesſe he forbade her to speake vnto hym except it were in the presence of many. All which she gaue her husbante's companion to vnderſtande, who would not beleue her, knowyng that hee had neither by thought or deede done anye thing whereof his companion had cause to be offended. And likewife because he used to kepe nothing secrete from hym, he tolde him what he

had sayde, praying hym to tell him the truthe of the matter, because he purposed neither in that, ne yet in any other thing, to geue occasion of breach of that amitie which of long time they had imbraced. The maried Gentleman assured him that he neuer thought it, and how they which had sownen that rumor, had wickedly belied him. Whereunto his companion replied: "I knowe wel enough that Ieloufie is a passion so intollerable as loue it selfe. And when you shall conceiue that opinion of Ialoufie, yea and it were of my selfe, I should do you no wrong, for your selfe were not able to kepe it. But of one thing which is in your power, I haue good matter whereof to complayne, and that is because you will concele from me your maladie, sith there was no passion or opinion which you conceiued, that before this time you kept secret from me. Likewise for my owne parte if I were amorous of your wife, you ought not to impute it as a fault vnto me, because it is a fier which I bare not in my handes, to vse at my pleasure. But if I kepe it to my selfe from you, and indeuour to make youre wife knowe it by demonstration of my loue, I might then be accompted that vntrustiest friend that euer liued: and for me I doe assure you that shee is a right honest and a good woman, and one that my fansie doth leſt fauour (although she were not your wife) of all them that euer I fawe. But now fithens there is no cause, I do require you that if you perceiue any suspiccion, be it neuer so litle, to tell me of it, because I would so vse myself, as our frendship which hath indured so long tyme, might not bee broken for a woman: and if I did loue her aboue any thing in the worlde, yet surely I would neuer speake worde vnto her, bicause I doe esteme our frendship better then the greatest treasure." His companion swore vnto him very great othes that he neuer thought it, praying him to vse his houfe as he had done before. Whereunto he aunswered: "Sithe you will haue me so to doe, I am content: but I praye you if hereafter you doe conceiue any finistre opinion in me, not to dissemble the fame, which if you doe I will neuer continue longer in your companie." In proesse of time, liuing together according to their custome, the maried Gentleman entred againe into greater Ieloufie than euer he did, commaunding his wife to beare no more that counte-

naunce towards him that she was wont to doe. Whiche com-  
maundement she tolde her husbande's companion, praying him  
after that time to forbeare to speake vnto her, for that she was  
forbidden to doe the like to him. The gentleman vnderstanding  
by wordes and certaine countenaunces, that his companion had  
not kept promise, he sayd vnto him in great choler: "To be Ia-  
lous (my companion) is a thing naturall: but bicause thou diddest  
sweare vnto me by othes not to dissemble, I can by no meanes  
forbeare any longer: for I did euer thinke that betwene thyne  
harte and mine, there could be no let and interruption: but to  
my great griefe and without anye fault on my part, I doe see the  
contrarie. For as muche as thou art not only very Ialous betwene  
thy wife and mee, but also thou wouldest dissimulate and couer  
the same, so that in the ende thy maladie and disease continuing  
so long, is altered into mere malice, and lyke as oure loue hath  
bene the greateste that hathe bene seene in oure tyme, euen so  
our displeasure and hatred is nowe moste mortall. I haue done so  
mutche as lyeth in mee, to auoyde this inconuenience, but fithe  
thou haft suspe&ted me to be an ill man, and I haue still shewed  
my selfe to be the contrary, I doe sweare, and therwithal assure  
thee, by my faith, that I am the same thou thinkest me to be, and  
therefore from henceforth take hede of me: for since suspicione  
hath separated the from my loue and amitie, despite shall denide  
me from thine." And albeit that his companion would haue made  
him belene the contrarie, and that hee mistrusted hym nothing at  
all, yet he withdrew his part of his moueables and goodes that  
before were common betwene them, so that then both their  
hartes and goodes were so farre separated as before they were  
united and ioyned together. In such wyse as the vnmaried  
Gentleman neuer ceassed till he had made his com-  
panion cockolode, according to his  
promise.

## THE SIXTIETH NOUELL.

*The piteous death of an Amorouse Gentleman, for the flacke  
comfort geuen him to late, by his beloued.*

BETWENE Daulphine and Prouence, there was a gentleman, more riche and better furnished with beautie, vertue, and good condicions, then with the goodes of fortune: who fill in loue with a gentlewoman that for this time shall want a name, for respecte of her parentes that are come of honorable houfes, and the Gentleman's name also shalbe vntolde, for like respecte, although altogether not so honorably allied, as the Gentlewoman that he loued, and yet the historie very certen and true. And bicause his degree was not so high as hers, hee durst not discouer his affection: for the loue which he bare her, was so good and perfect, as rather would he haue bene tormented with the panges of death, then couet the least aduaantage that might redounde to her dis-honor. And seing his state to base in respecte of hers, had no hope to marry her. Wherefore he grounded his loue vpon none other foundation and intent, but to loue her with all his power so perfectelye as was possible, which in the ende came vnto her knowledge. And the Gentlewoman knowing and seing the honest amitie which he bare her, to be ful of vertue, ioyned with chaste and comly talke, felt her selfe right happie to be beloued and had in prisfe, of a personage so well condicioned, practisifg dayly cherefull countinaunce towardes him (whiche was the best rewarde he pretended to haue) whereof he conceiued great ease and contentment. But malice the cancered enemy of all reste and quiet, could not long abide this honest and happie life. For some frowning at his good happe, (as malice euer accompanieth a well disposed mynde) tolde the mother of the mayden, howe they marueiled that the Gentleman should bee so familiar in her houfe, inferring therewithall that the beautie of her daughter was the only caufe, with whom they fawe him many times to vse secrete and priuat speach. The mother which by no meanes doubted the houestie of the Gentleman, no more then shee did

of her own children, was very sorie to vnderstand that some shold be offended at that their familiarity. She thought therfore to shunne the cause of their offence. And at length, (fearing that flaunder might be raised of malice) she required the Gentleman for a tyme to haunt no more her house, as he was wont to doe. A thing to him of harde digestion, knowing his own innocencie, and lesse desert to be estranged from the house, for respect of the honest talke he vfed to the yonge gentlewoman. Notwithstanding, to stoppe the rage of malicious tongues, he withdrew himself, till he thought the brute was ceased, and then retourned after his wonted maner: whose absence nothing abridged his auncient good will. And he began no soner to be familiar there again, but he vnderstode that the mayden shold be maried to a Gentleman, that was not so ritche and noble (as seemed to hym) and therfore he thought he should receiue great wrong, if she were bestowed vpon that Gentleman, and not on hym, that had bene so long a tutor. And thereupon conceiued corage to preferre hym selfe in playne tunes, if choyse were geuen to the maiden. Howebeit, the mother and other of her kynne, follicited and chose the other gentleman because (in dede) he was more welthie. Whereat the poore gentleman fretted with displeasure, seing that his Ladie should for worldly mucke be defrauded of her greatest ioye, by little and little without other maladie, began to languishe, and in litle tyme was so altered, as in his face appeared the visage of death. Neuerthelesse he could not forbeare the house of his beloued, but continually from time to time made his repaire thereto to fede himselfe with the baulme of that beautie, which he thought would prolong his dayes, but it was the onely abridgement. In thend the poyson he sucked by the viewe of that beautie, consumed his strength, and force failing him, was constrained to kepe his bedde. Whereof he would not aduertise her whome he loued, for greuing her, knowing well that she would bee tormented with the newes. And so suffring him selfe to runne the race of past recourye, lost also his appetite to eate or drinck, and therewithall his slepe and rest fayled, in suche plight as within shourt space he was consumed in visage and face, as it grewe to be vglie and cleane out of knowledge. Brought to

this lowe estate, one of his frends certified the mother of his mistres, that was a very charitable and kinde Gentlewoman, and loued so well the man, as if all their parentes and kinne had bene of her's and the mayden's opinion they would haue preferred the honestie of him, before the great substance of the other. But the frendes of the father's fide by no meanes would consent vnto it. Yet the good Gentlewoman and her daughter (for all the other's frowardnes) vouchsafed to visit the poor gentleman whom they founde, rather declining towards death, then in hope of life. And knowing his eude to approche, he was shriuen and receiued the holy Sacrament, purposing of present passage by panges of death, neuer to see any of his frendes againe. Being in this case and yet feing her, whome he counted to be his life and saftie, felte suche soudden recouerie, as hee threwe hym selfe alofte his bedde and spake these wordes vnto her: "What cause hath drieuen you hither (mistres myne) by takyng paines to visite him, who hath one of his feet alreadie within the graue, the other stepping after with conuenient speede, for execution whereof you bee the onely Instrument." "Howe so, fir?" sayde the mother. "Is it possible that hee, whom we so derely loue, can receiue death by our offences? I pray you fir to tell me, what reason leadeth you to speake these wordes." "Madame," sayde he, "so long as I could, I dissembled the loue that I bare to my deare mistres your daughter: so it is that my parentes and frendes speaking of a mariage betwene her and me, haue clattered thereof moe nedoles woordes then I desired, by wayng the mishap that might infue, and nowe doth happe past all hope not for my particular pleasure, but bicause I knowe with none other she shalbe so well intreated nor beloued as she should haue bene with me. The benefit which I see she hath lost, is the most perfect frende the best affected seruaunt that euer shee had in this worlde, the losse wherof summoneth death to arrest the carcase, that should haue bene imployed for her seruice, which intierly was conserued and should haue bene for her sake: but fithe nowe it can serue her to no purpose, the simple losse shall redounde to greatest gaine. I meane my selfe (good Ladies bothe) that lieth bewrapped in death before your faces, whose withered

clammes hath catched the same within her reach, and hath warned the clocke to tolle the dolefull bell for his poor lovyng ghoſte, nowe ſtretchynge out for the winding ſhete to throwde his maigre corps, all forworne with the watche and toile, that ſuch poore men (affeſted with like care) do feele. It is my ſelfe, that erſt was rouing amid the troupe of Courtlie knightes decked with comely face, whose hewe dame Nature ſtayned with the colours of her golden art. It is I that of late was loued of that Nymphe, and earthie Goddeſſe, who with courtinge countenaunce imbraced the place where I did ſtande, and kiſſed the ſteps wherein I trode. It is my ſelfe I ſaye, that whilom in painefull bliſſe, did bath my ſelfe, and fedde mine eyes with the happie viewe of the heauenlieſt creature that euer God did make. And by forgoing of thoſe ioyes by to to much miſhap, and ſacred famine of cursed mucke, I am thus pined as ye ſee, and wrapt in hopeles ſtate.” The mother and doughter hearinge this complainte, did their indeuour to cheere him vp, and the mother ſayde unto him: “Be of good courage ſir, and I promife you my fayth, that if God giue you health, my doughter ſhal haue none other husband but you, and behold her here, whom I commaunde to make you preſent promiſe.” The mayden weeping with a virginall shamefastnes, conſented to her mother’s heſt. But knowing when he was recouered, that he ſhould not haue her, and that the mother was ſo liberal of her fayre words, to recomfort him and affaye if ſhe might reſtore him: he ſaid vnto them, that if thoſe words had bin pronounced three monethes paſt, he had bin the luſtief and moſt happie gentleman of Fraunce: but helpe offred ſo late, was paſt belief and hope. But when he ſaw, that they went about to force him to beleeue it, he ſaid vnto them: “Now that I ſee ye go about to promiſe the good tourne which can neuer chaunce vnto mee, yea although conſent ioyned with vnfayned promiſe deſires the effect, for reſpect of the feeble ſtate wherein I am: yet let me craue one thing at your hands, farre leſſe then that ye offer, which hitherto I neuer durſt be ſo bolde to aſke.” Whereunto they both affented and ſwore to perorme it, intreating him not to be aſhamed to requyre it. “I humbly beſeech ye (quoth hee) to deliuer her into mine armeſ whom ye haue promiſed to be my

wife, and commaunde her to imbrace and kiffe me." The mayden not vsed to such priuie sutes, ne yet acquainted with such secrete facts, made some difficultie, but her mother gaue her expresse commaundement to doe it, perceyuing in him no likelihode or force of a man to liue. The maiden then vpon that commaundement, aduaunced herselfe upon the bedde of the poore pacient, saying vnto him: "Sir, I beseech you to be of good cheere." The languishing creature, so hard as he could for his extreeme debilitie, stretched forth his faint consumed armes, and with al the force of his body imbraced the canfe of his death, and kissinge her with his colde and wanne mouth, held her so long as he could, and then spake vnto the mayden: "The loue which I haue borne you hath bin so great, and the good will so honest, as neuer (mariage excepted) I wished anye other thinge of you, but that which I presentlye haue, throughe the wante whereof and with the same I will ioyfully render my spirite to God, who is the parfaicte Loue, and truest Charitie, whoe knoweth the greatness of my loue and the honestie of my desire: humblie beseeching him, (that nowe I hauing my desire betweene mine armes,) to interteigne my ghost within his blessed bosome." And in saying so he caught her againe betweene his armes with such vehemencie, as the feeble hart not able to abide that assault, was abandoned of all powers and mouinges: for the instant ioye so dilated and stretched forth the same, as the siege of the soule gaue ouer, making his repaire and flighte to his Creator: and because the fenceles bodye rested withoute life, it gaue ouer his holde. Howbeit the loue, which the Damofell had stll kept secrete, at that time shewed it self so strong and mightie, as the mother and seruauntes of the dead Gentleman had much a do to separate that vnion, but by force they haled away the liuing, almost deade with the deade. After the funerall was done with honourable execuies: but the greatest triumph was spent in teares, weepinges and cryes, special-ly by the gentlewoman, which so much more were manifeste after his death, as before in his life time they were diffembled, bestowinge them as an expiacion or sacrifice, to satissie the wrong she had done vnto him. And afterwards (as I haue heard tell) she was maried to one, for mitigacion of her forow, that neuer was par-

taker of the ioye of her harte. See here good Ladies an Image of perfect loue, that so muche had feazed vpon th'affection of this amorous Gentleman, as the pange neuer gaue ouer, till death (the rest of all troubles) had diuided life from the body. Yet some perchaunce for the desperate part of this hopeles louer, will terme him to be a fonde louing foole: and say that it is not meete that they should neglechte theiyr liues for womens fakes, which were not created but for their helpe and confort. And that being true as verifyed and auouched by Scriptures, there is no cause of feare to demaunde that of them, which God hath enioyned them to giue vs. In deede a sensuall loue, and such as is grounded to satissye beastly luste, is a thinge horrible to Nature, and abhominalle in the sight of him that made both those creatures, whom he fraughted with reason and knowledge for the refusall of those vices, which are onely to be applied to beastes voyde of reason. But loue founded in the soyle of Vertue, for auoyding carnall lust exer-cized in the state of Wedlocke, or first begonne and practized for that ende, is very ciuil and to be honoured. And if that loue attaine not equall succeſſe, through parents default or vnkindnes of frendes or other humane accidents, if that loue so perce the hart, or otherwyse afflicte the pacient with dispaire of helpe, and so occasioneth death, it is not to be termed follie or dotage, but to be celebrated with honourable titles. The honest amitie then of this gentleman, borne long time to this gentlewoman, meriteth euer-lasting praife: for to finde such great chaſtitie in an amorous hart, is rather a thinge deuine then humaine. A mocion moued  
aboue amongs the heauenly route, and not an ac  
wrought in the grofenes of man's  
infirmitie.

## THE SIXTY-FIRST NOUELL.

*A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleasauntly recompenced the seruice of a kinde seruaunte of her's, that pursued her with seruice of loue.*

IN the Courte of king Fraunces, the first of that name, not longe sithens Frenche king, the graunde father of Henry the 3 of that name now raigning: there was a Gentlewoman of good grace and interteignment, wanting not both minde and witte, such as the like of her sexe, are not to seeke, vnder what climate soeuer they be borne and bred, whose comly demeaner, curteous behauour and eloquent speache, was agreeable to her other qualitie's of nature's giftes: whereby she gayned the hartes and good minds of nombers of seruautes, with whom shee was cunning ynough to spend her time, (hauing respect to the sauftie and saufgard of her honor, which shee preferred before all other solace) by such delec-table consumption of time, as they that could not tell howe els to imploye their leasure, thoughte themselues most blessed, if they might attaine the delightfull presence of this well nourter-ed Dame. For they that made greatest assuraunce of her fidelitie, were in dispayre, and the most desperat were yet in some hope to winne her. Howbeit in deceyning the most nomber, she could not forbeare intirely to loue one, who for his part was not able to plaie the counterfeit, to colour the substance of his longe purfuite: but as nothing is sure and stable, their loue tourned to displeasure, and by frequent renewing of what was well knownen the hole Court was not ignoraunt, what deuocion thone did beare to thother. One day the Gentlewoman, aswell to let him know that his affection was not bestowed in vaine, as to make him to feele some smart and paine for his louing seruice, the more louingly to forde him on, with preety morsells of her dissembling concept, made shew vnto him of greater fauour, then euer she did before: for which cause he that was faultles either in deedes of armes, or in prowesse of loue, began liuely and valiantly to folow her, to whom long before with gentlenes and humilitie he

had many times bin a suppliante. Who fayning that she was not able any longer to rest obftinate, made semblance of a womanly pitie and accorded to his demaund. Telling him that for respect of his tedious trauaile, she was now dispoſed to go to her chamber, (which was in a Gallerie of the Castell where that time the kinge did lie) where ſhee knew was none that could hinder what they two intended: willing him not to faile but ſo ſone as he ſaw her depart the place ſhe was in, to folow after to her chamber, where he ſhould finde her alone, tarying for him with good deuocion. The gentleman beleeuinge her appointmente, was readie to leape out of his ſkinne for ioye: and therewithall began to dalye and ſport with other Ladies, attending the time of her departure. She wanting not the practize of any fine ſleight or ſubtile pollicie, moft pregnaunte in birds of her Ayrie, called two of the greateſt Ladies to the preſent chamber window and ſaid vnto them: "If it may pleafe you good Ladies, I will diſcouer vnto you the pretieſt paſtyme of the world." They which hard the grief of melancholie, beſougheſ her to tell what it was. "Thus it is" (quoth ſhee) "ſuſh a gentleman, whom you know very well, to be both honest and vertuous, hath longe time (as partlie you haue by to much expeſience ſeene,) gone about diuers wayes to winne that, which he ſhall neuer get: for when I began to applie my fancie towards him, he (vnconſtant) ceaſed not to couet and folow other Ladies with like purſute hee di me: whereat I conceyued ſuſh more then ſpitefull hatred, as notwithstanding my outwarde ſemblaunce, I coueted reuenge. Nowe therefore maiftrefſe, Occaſion hath lente me a porcion of oportunitie, to be requited of his vaine and fickle ſute: which is, that hauinge appointed him to come to my chamber, whither he meaneth preſently to follow me, it maye pleafe you to giue heedfull eye and watch: and that when hee hath paſſed alonge the Galerie, and is gone vp the ſtayers, that both of you wil recline your heads out of this window to helpe me ſinge the holding of the Caroll, that I meane to chaunte vnto him. And then ſhall you ſee the raging choler of this Gentleman, that at other times preſumed to be a quiet Suter: wherat perhaps through his malapert boldnes, it cannot daſh his bluſhles face, but yet if he do not deale vnto me like ſpiteful reproch in open

hearing, I know full well in hart he will wishe me x. m. mischifes." This conclusion was not spoken without treble laughter: for there was no gentlemen in all the Courte, that had warred so much with the woman kind as hee, and yet welbeloued and esteemed of euery one, that lifted not to be intrapped within his daunger. Therfore thefe Ladies thinking to carie awaye some part of the glorie, which one alone hoped to atchieue vpon this gentleman, were contente to assent to the other's liking. So sone then as they saw her depart, that purposed this enterprise, they began to espie the countenaunce of the betrayed partie, who pausd not long before he exchaunged the place: and when he was oute of the chamber, the Ladies trayned after, to lose no part of the sport, and went the faster that he might not be out of theyr sight. And he that doubted not the succeſſe, threwe his cape about his necke to hide his face, and went downe the staiers out into the Court, and afterwards mounted vp againe: but perceyuing some approche which he was loth should be a witnes, he went downe againe, returning another way on the other fide. All which the Ladies sawe, vnownken to him. But when he came to the stayers where he beleeued verely, that he might surely enter into his Maiftres chamber, the two Ladies put they heads out of the window, and incontinently perceyued the gentlewoman alofte, crying out a lowde, "A theefe, a theefe :" wherunto they two below aunſwered with ſo vehement voyce, doubling the other's outcrie, as all the caſtell ronge of it. I leaue for you to confider in what despite this gentleman fled to his lodging, but not ſo cloſely, but that he was ouertaken by thoſe that knew this mifterie: who afterwards often-times reproched this fact vnto him, ſpeciall ſhe that had deuifed the reuenge: but hee had armed himſelfe with [aunſwers and defences ſo readely, as he told them that he foreknew their deuife, and mente nothing by his pilgrimage but to folace his beloued. For of her loue long time before he was out of all hope, as hauing reasonable prooſe by his longe purſuite and ſeruice. Howbeit the Ladys would not hold his excuse for a veritie, which euen to this day hangeth in ſuſpence.

## THE SIXTY-SECOND NOUELL.

*The honest and maruellous loue of a mayden of noble house, and of a gentleman that was base borne, and howe a Queene did impeche and let their mariage, with the wife aunswere of the mayde to the Queene.*

THERE was in Fraunce a Queene, who in her company and traine broughte vp many maydens, that were issued of great and honourable progenie: amonges other that serued this Queene there was one named Rolandine, which was nere kinne to the Queene. But she for a certaine displeasure conceyued against her father, bare vnto the yonge gentlewoman no greate good will. This Maiden, although shée was none of the fayrest, yet so wyse and vertuous as many great Lords and personages made sute to her for mariage, to whom she rendred for earnest sutes, cold aunswares: because shée knew her father to be more bent to keeping of money, then to thaduancement of his children: and her Maistresse (as is before said) bare vnto her so little fauour as they which esteemed the Queene's good grace, woulde neuer make anye sute vnto her. Thus by father's negligence and Maistres disdaine, the poore gentlewoman remayned long time vnmaried. And as shée that forcibly was payned, not so much for grieve of mariage, as for that shée was not required or sued vnto, became so werie of worldly life, as deuoutly she bent herfelfe to God, and by forsakinge the toyes and brauerie of the Courte, passed her time in prayer, or els in other vertuous exercise: and by withdrawing herfelfe to this kinde of life, she spent her youth so soberlie and deuoutly as was possible for a woman to do. When she approached nere the age of xxx. yeares, there was a gentleman a bastarde borne, of right honorable house, a verry curteous and honest personage, whose every riches and beautie was such, as no Lady or gentlwoman for pleasure would haue chosen him to husband. This poore gentleman was voide of frends for maintenaunce of lyuing, and vnhappie in mariage sutes, although he pursued many, till at length he borded this poore Gentlewoman Rolandine: for their Fortunes, com-

plexions and condicions were very like, and by vse of feuerall complaints made one to another, ech of them fell in ernest loue with the other: and being both thrall vnto mishap, they sought desired comforte by vertuous and honest talke: and by that vse and frequentacion greater loue increased and grew betwene them. Those which had seene the maiden so straungly retired from wonted demeanor, as she would speake to none, now marking her continuallie to interteigne the bastard gentleman, incontinently conceiued ill opinion of her, and told the mother of the Queene's maids (called Modesta) that she ought not to suffer such familiaritie betwene them. Which report Modesta reuealed to Rolandine, sayinge that diuers persons did speake euill of her, for that she vsed to talke with the bastard, that neither was of sufficient abilitie for her to marie, ne yet of beautie worthie to be beloued. Rolandine which daily was more rebuked for her austoritie of life, then for worldly toyes, sayd vnto Modesta her gouernesse: "Alas, mother, you see that I cannot haue a husband according to the worthines of my bloud, and that dailye I haue auoyded those which be beautifull and yonge: for feare to incurre the inconuenience wherinto I haue feene other to fall: and now hauing chosen this wise and vertuous gentleman, who preacheth vnto me words that be good and godly, what wrong do they to me that make this report, sith in this honest order I doe receiue consolacion of my grieves?" The good old Lady who loued the maiden (which she called maistresse) as herselue, said vnto her: "I see well, that you are worse delt withall at your father and maistres handes then you deserue. Howbeit sith such reporte is made of your honor, you ought to refuse to speake vnto him, although he were your naturall brother." Rolandine weeping saide vnto her: "Mother, for so much as you aduise me therunto, I will performe your request, although it be very straunge that without flaunder, a woman can haue no comfort or seeke freedome without misreport." The bastard gentleman, as he was before accustomed, came to vistre her, but she tolde him (a farre of) those words which her gouernesse had said vnto her: and with teares prayed him to refraine for a time to speake vnto her, vntill the brute and rumor were somewhat appaied: which thing he did at her request. But

during this long time, either of them hauing loste their consolation, began to feele such torment within themselues, as shee for her part neuer felte the like. She ceased not from praying vnto God, from goinge on pilgrimage, and fasting: for this vnacquainted loue brought her to such disquiet as she could not rest the space of one houre. Wherewith the noble bastard was no leſſe tormented: but he which had alreadie minded in hart to loue her and pursue her till mariage, and hauing respeſte (for loue fake) to the honor he should acquire by the same, thought to finde meanes to declare his minde vnto her, and aboue al things to get the good wil of her gouernesse: which he did, declaring vnto her the miserie wherein her poore maistresse remayned, which was voide of al comfort and other frendship. Then the poore old Lady Modeſta, gaue him thankes for the honest affection that hee bare to her maistresse: and deuised meanes how the two louers might impart their minds together. Rolandine fayned herſelfe to be fiche of a Mygrim and paine in her heade, the brute of whose maladie was feared to be greater then it was, and so concluded betwene them that when her companion were gone into the chamber, they two ſhould remaine together alone to ſatisfie ech other with mutuall talke. The bastard gentleman was very glad, and ruled himſelfe holy by the councell of the Gouernesse, in ſuch ſort as when he liſte, he ſpake vnto his louer and vertuous Lady: but this contencaion did not indure: for the Queene who loued her but a little, inquired what Rolandine did ſo long in her Chamber, and one made aunſwere that it was by reaſon of her ficknes. Albeit there was another which knewe to well the cauſe of her abſence, ſayde vnto her, that the ioye which Rolandine had to ſpeake vnto the bastard was able to eafe her Mygrim. The Queene which found out the veniall finnes of other, by mortall offences in herſelfe, ſent for her, and forbad her in any wyſe not to ſpeake vnto the bastard, except it were in the hall or within her owne Chamber. The Gentlewoman made as though ſhe vnderſtode her not, but mildlie aunſwered that, if ſhee knew any talke betweene them might offend her maiefie, ſhe would neuer ſpeake vnto him againe. Notwithſtanding ſhe determined to finde out ſome other ſecret meanes that the Queene ſhould not know of their meeting: which

was this. The Wednesday, Fridaye, and Saturday, the gentlewoman vsed to fast, and for that purpose kept her Chamber with her Gouerneffe Modefta, where ſhe had leyſure to talke (whileſt the reſte diſſuppe) with him whom ſhe began ſo earnestlie to loue: and as conſtrainte of time diſſe force their talke to be ſhorte, the greater was their affection in vtterauce of the fame: because for the doing therof they ſtole time, as the theefe doth his diſired praye. This order of their contentacion could not proceede ſo ſecrety, but that a certayne varlet a yeoman of the Chamber, chaunced to fee him reſort vnto her vpon a fasting day, and told it in ſuch place wher of ſome hearer, it was diſclosed to the Queene herſelf, who was ſo fore offendēd as neuer after that time the poore baſtard gentleman durſte once attempt to go into the maiden's chamber againe. And to thintent that he might not loſe the commodity of talke with her, whom he ſo dereliqued, often-times he fayned himſelfe to go on pilgrimage, and in the euening returned to the Church and chapell of the Caſtel, in the habite of a frier, or Iacobin (ſo wel diſguifed and altered, as no creature could know him) and thither repaired the gentlewoman Rolandine, with her Gouerneffe to enterteigne him. He marking the great loue that ſhe bare him, feared not to ſay vnto her; "Madame, you fee the daunger which I haſard for your ſeruice, and the warnings that the Queene hath giuen for our talke. You fee on thother ſide what a father you haue, who careth not after what ſort he beſtow you in mariage: and you hauinge refuſed ſo many greate ſtates and noble men, I know not one, either farre or neare, that is minded to haue you. I confeſſe my ſelfe to be but poore, and that you may marie diuers gentlemen of greater reputacion and richeſſe, then I am: but if loue and good wil were deeneed treasure and richeſſe, then woulde I preſume to be the ričhest gentleman of the world. God hath indowēd you with great plentie of goodes, and you are yet in choife to haue more: and if I were ſo happy as you would vouchſafe to choſe me for your husband, I would accompt my ſelfe to be vnto you both husband, frend and ſeruaunt, all the dayes of my life: and againe, if you ſhould take one equall to your nobilitie (a thinge very harde to finde) he would rule and gouerne ouer you, and haue more reſpecte to your goodes, then to

your person, to your beautie then to your vertue: and in triumphinge with dispence of that you haue, hee maye chaunce to intreate you otherwise then you deserue. The desire of this contentacion, and the feare that I haue, least you should graunte it to some other, do force me to beseech you, that by one only meanes you would make me happie and your selfe the most contented and best intreated woman that euer was.” Rolandine giuing eare to that communication which shee herselfe ment to haue pronounced, aunswere him with stoute courage: “I am very glad and wel pleased that you haue begunne the fute your self, which I of long time haue determined to breake vnto you: for which cause these two yeres past as you know, I haue not ceased to thincke and deuise all the reas ons and arguments for and against you, that I could inuent: but in thend for so much as I do meane to take vpon me the state of Matrimonie, it is time that I begin to chose such husbande, with whom I shall in my conscience like to liue at rest and quiet all the dayes of my life: and amide all the troupe of my thoughts in choise, I cannot finde anye one, were he neuer so faire, riche or noble, with whom my hart and minde can so well agree and match as with you. I know that by maryng of you I shall not offend God, but rather do the thinge that hee commaundeth. And touching my Lord my father, he hath had so litle consideracion of my perferment, and so often refused it, as the law now will suffice, that I give my selfe in mariage withoute his consent, and therefore cannot disfenerite me, or worthely thincke ill of me: and by hauing a husband (a thing appertinent to women kinde) such as you be, I shall esteeme my selfe the richest woman of the worlde. As for the Queene my maistresse, I oughte not to take any care or remorse of conscience by displeasing her, to obey God: for she hath not ceased to hinder that aduauncement, which in my youth I mighte haue had, and by paine and diligence towards her did well deserue: but to thend you may vnderstand, that the loue and good will which I beare you, is founded vpon vertue and honor, you shall promise me, that if I doe accorde this mariage, you shall neuer purchase or require the consummacion thereof, Vntill my father be deade, or els do finde some meanes to make him consente hereunto.” Which

the bastard gentleman willingly did graunt: and vpon these promises and termes, either of them gaue eche other a ringe in the name of mariage, and did kisse together in the Church before God, whom they toke to witnes of their assurance, and neuer after betwene them was any other priuie fact committed, but only kissing. This litle easement of mind did greatly satissie the harts of these two perfect louers: and were a great while without seing ech other, liuing only by this assurance. There was no place where honour mighte be gotten, but thereunto the bastarde made his repaire with so great delight, as he thought he could neuer be poore for respect of that riche wife which God had prouided for him. Which wyfe in his absence, did euer continue her absolute amitie towards that gentleman: and although many made sute yet they receyued none other aunswere from her but deniall, and for that she had remayned so long time vnmaried, she was minded neuer to take vpon her that state. This her aunswere was so generall as the Queene heard of it, and asked her for what occasion shee was so determined. Rolandine saide vnto her, that it was to obey her: for that shee knew shee would neuer suffer her to marie, because in time and place where shee might haue bin honorablie matched to her well liking, she denied the same, and that the vertue of pacience had taught her to contente herselfe with the state wherein shee was. And still as shee was sued for in mariage, shee rendred like aunswere. When the warres were ended, and the bastarde returned to the Courte, shee neuer spake vnto him in open presence, but wente alwayes into some Church to interteigne him vnder colour of Confession: for the Queene had forbidden both him and her, that they should not talke together, vnlesse it were before compayne vpon paine of losse of their liues. But honest loue, which feareth no defence, was more prest to find meanes, for their mutuall talke, then their enemies were ready to separate the same: and vnder the habite or colour of all the religions they could deuise, they continued that honest amitie, vntil the king remoued into a house of pleasure, not so nere as the Ladies were able to go on foote to that Church, as they were to the Church of the Castell, which was not situate in such conueniente wyse for their purpose, as they could secretely re-

paire (vnder colour of confession) to talke together: notwithstanding if on the one side occasion fayled, loue found out another for their contentment: for there arriued a Lady to the Court, to whom the bastard was very nere kin. This Lady with her sonne were lodged in the king's house, and the chamber of this yong prince was far beyond the body of the lodging, where the king himselfe did lie: but so nere vnto Rolandine's Chamber as he might both see and speake vnto her, for their windowes were properlie and directly placed at either corner of the house: in which chamber (being ouer the hall) were lodged al the Ladies of honor, the companions of Rolandine. Who beholding many times the yong king at that window, caused the bastard to be aduertized therof by her gouerneffe: who after he had well beholden the place, made as though he had great delighte to read vpon a booke of the Knightes of the Round Table, that lay in the chamber window of the yong king: and when euery man was gone to dinner, he prayed the yeoman to suffer him to make an end of the historie, and to shut him within the chamber. The other which knew him to be the kinsman of his maistres, and an assured man, suffred him to read so long as he liste. On thother fide Rolandine came vnto her window, who to find occasion to tarrie there the longer, sayned to haue a paine in her leg, and dined and supped in so good time, as she went no more to the ordinarie of the Ladies: wher she began to set herselfe a worke about the making of a bed of Crimson filke, placing her worke vpon the window, as desirous to be alone. And when she saw no man to be there, shee interteigned her husband, to whom shee might speake in secret wife, so as none was able to vnderstande them: and when any person came nere, shee coughed and made a signe that the bastard might withdraw himselfe. They that were appointed to watche them, thought vndoubtedlie that their loue was past and ended, because shee went not out of the Chamber, wher safely he coulde not see her, for that hee was forbidden the same. Vpon a day the mother of the yong Prince being in her sonne's Chamber, repayred to the windowe where that great booke did lie, and shee had not staied there long, but one of Rolandine's fellowes which was within her Chamber saluted her. The lady asked her how Rolan-

dine did, who sayd that shee might very wel see her, if it were her pleasure: and caused her to come to the window wyth her night geare vpon her head. And after they had talked a while of her sicknes they withdrew themselues. The other ladie espying the great booke of the Round Table, sayde to her yeoman of the Chamber: "I do marueille much why yong men do imploie themselues to read such follies." The yeoman made aunsweare, that he marueled much more, why men of good yeres, counted and esteemed wife and discrete, shoulde haue greater delight in reading of such trifles, then thos that were yong. And to iustifie that maruel hee told her how her cosin the bastard did spend 4 or 5 houres in a day to read vpon the same. Vpon which words by and by she conceyued the cause of his deepe studie, and charged him to hide himselfe in some place to mark what he did. Which commaundement the yeoman performed, and perceiued that the booke which the bastard read vpon, was the window out of which Rolandine talked with him: and therewithal called to remembrance many wordes of the loue which they thought to keepe very secreete. The next day he rehersed the same vnto his maistresse, who sent for her cosin the bastard, and after many tales told him, she forbad him to resort thither any more, and at night she gaue like warning to Rolandine, threateninge her that if she continued in her fond and foolish loue, she woulde tell the Queene the whole circumstaunce of her lighte demeaner. Rolandine (nothing astonied with thos woordes) did sweare that sith the time she was forbidden by her maistresse the queene's maestey, she neuer spake vnto him: the troth whereof shee might learne a swel of the gentlewomen her companions, as of other seruauntes of the house: and touching the window whereof she spake, she boldly aduouched that she neuer talked with the Bastard there. Who (poore gentleman) fearing that his affayres would be reuealed, kept himselfe farre out from daunger, and longe time after did not retourne to the Courte. Howbeit, he wrote many times to Rolandine by such secret meanes as for all the espiall that the Queene had put, there passed no weeke but twise at least shee hearde newes from him: and when one meanes did fayle hym, hee deuised another, and many tymes sent a litle Page clothed

in colours (so often altered and chaunged as he was sent) who staying at the gates when the Ladies passed by, delyuered his letters priuelye in the middest of the preafe. Upon a time as the Queene for her pleasure walked into the fieldes, one which knew the Page and had charge to take hede vnto those doings, ranne after him: but the Page which was a fine boye, doubtinge leaste hee should be searched, conueyed hym selfe into a poore woman's house, where spedelie he burnt his letters in the fier, ouer whiche a potte was boyling with meate for her poore familie. The gentleman that followed him stripped him naked and searched his clothes, but when he sawe that he could finde nothing, he let him goe: and when he was departed, the olde woman asked him wherefore he searched the boye: who aunswere: "to finde letters which he thought he had about him." "Tush," (quod she) "serch no more, for he hath hidden them very well." "I pray thee tell me," (quod the Gentleman) "In what place:" hoping to haue recouered the same. But when hee vnderstode that they were throwen into the fire, he well perceiued that the boye was craftier then him selfe. All whiche incontinently hee tolde the Queene, notwithstanding from that time forthe, the bastard vsed no longer the Page, but sent one other of his olde seruauntes, whom he faithfully trusted, and he (forgetting feare of death which hee knewe well the Queene threatned on them that had to doe in those affaires) tooke vpon him to carie his maister's letters to Rolandine. And when hee was entred the Castell, hee wayted at a certen doore placed at the foote of a paire of staiers, by whiche the ladies passed to and fro: where he had not taried long, but a yeoman which at other times had sene him, knewe him and thereof told the maister of the Queene's house, who soudainly made searche to apprehende him. The fellowe which was wife and politique, seing that diuers loked vpon him a farre of, retourned towardes the wall (as though he would haue made his water) tearing his letters in so many small peces as he could doe for his life, and threw them behinde an old gate: who had no soner done the facte, but hee was apprehended and throughly searched, and when they could finde nothing about him, they made him weare whether he had brought any letters or not, vsing him

partly by rigor, and somewhat by faire perswasion to make him confess the truthe: but neither through promise or threate, they could get any thing at his handes. Report hereof was brought to the Queene, and one of the companie gaue aduise that searche should be made behind the gate, where he was taken: in which place they founde nothing but litle peces of letters. Then they caused the kinge's Confessor to be sent for, who recouering the peces layd them vpon a table, and red the lettre throughout, where the veritie of the mariage (so much dissembled) was throughly disciphered, for the bastard in those letters called her nothing els but wife. The Queene not meaning to conceale the fault of her kinswoman, (which she ought to haue done) fel into a great rage and storme, commaunding that the poore man by al meanes possible should be forced to confess the true tenor of that letter, to thintent that the same by his affirmacion might not be denied: but doe what they could, they were not able to make him alter his former tale. They which had commission to examine him, brought him to the Riuere side and did put him into a fack, saying that he did lie before God and the Queene, and against an approued trothe. He that had rather lose his life than accuse his maister, prayed them to suffer him to haue a ghostly father that like a Christian he might ende his life, and so entre the ioyes prepared for all repentant finners, and after that he had clered his conscience, he said vnto them: "Maisters, tell my Lorde and maister the Bastarde, that I recommend vnto him the poore estate of my poore wife and children, trusting his honour will haue consideracion of them for my sake, for so mucht as with good and loyall harte, I doe employe my life for his honor and suretie: and with me doe what you list, for you get nothing at my handes that shall redounde to his hurt and preiudice." Then to put him in greater feare, they bounde him within the facke and threwe him into the water, crying unto him, if thou wilt tell the trouth thou shalt be saued: but they seing that he would make no aunswere drew him out againe, making reporte to the Queene of his faith and constancie. Who then sayd, that neither the king nor she were so happy in seruauntes as the Bastarde was, that had not wherewith to recompence such fidelitie. The Quene did

what she coulde to get him from his seruice, but the poore fellowe would in no wise forsake his maister. Notwithstanding in thende by his said maister's leaue, he was put into the Queene's seruice, where he liued many happy dayes. The Queene after she vnderstode by the bastarde's letters the trouth of the mariage, fent for Rolandine, and in great rage, called her caitife and miserable wretche, in stede of cosin, reciting vnto her the disparagement of her noble house, and the villanie she had committed against the honorable race whereof she came, and against the will of her which was her Queene, kinswoman and maistres, by contracting mariage without the licence of the king and her. Rolandine whiche of long time knewe the small devocion that her maistres bare vnto her, vfed her with like affection: and bicause she was werie of the Quene's displeasure, thinking that her correclion vttered in presence of many proceded not of loue, but rather to make her ashamed, abandoned feare, and conceiuing courage, when she sawe the Queene in her chiefeſt rage, with gladsome and firme countenaunce answered her in this wise: "Madame, if you cannot conceiue the malice of your owne harte, I will set before your eyes the rancour and displeasure of the fame, which malice of long time you haue borne towrdes the Lorde my father and me: whereof madame, I doe fele the smarte, to my great losſe and grief: for if it had pleased you to haue borne vnto me that good wil which you do to thofe that are not ſo neare about you as I am, I had before this tyme been placed and preferred in mariage as well to the likyng of your honour as to my greate ſatisfaction: but you haue regarded mee as one forgotten, and cleane out of fauour, in ſuch wyſe as all the noblemen, with whome I might haue been matched, haue contempned me, as well through the negligence of my Lorde my father, as for the like estimation and accomp̄t that you haue made of me: by meanes whereof I fell into that dispaire which if my health could haue ſustained the order and ſtate of religion, I would willingly haue taken it vpon me, to haue ſeuered my ſelfe from the continuall hatred and enuy which your grace ful rigorously hath ſhowne vnto me: and being in this dispaire, I chaunced to finde out him, that is proceeded of ſo noble a houſe as my ſelfe. If the loue of twoo

persones is to be regarded, that meane to accomplishe the holy state of wedlock : for you knowe that his father in nobilitie farre excelled myne. He hath of long time loued me, and made great fute vnto me, but you madame, whiche neuer pardoned me for any small offence, ne yet praysed anye good acte of myne (although you know by experiance that I haue not vsed to talke of matters of loue or other worldlie affaires, and that I minded aboue all thinges to leade a more religious life then any other) doe make it an hainous matter that I should talke with a Gentleman (so infortunate as my selfe), by whose loue, I thought or fought for nothing els but the easse and comfort of my minde. And seing my selfe voyde and frustrate of mine expectation, I shall imploie indeuour so well to seeke my rest and quiet, as you haue gone about to dispoyle me of the same: and then will celebrate the mariage which is already assured by promises and by a ring. Wherefore, madame, I thinke that you doe me great wrong by terming me to be a wicked woman, fithe that in so great and perfect amitie I might haue founde occasion (if I would) to haue committed euills: but there was neuer betwene him and me any priuie fact, other then that is honest, hoping that God wil shewe me such fauour, as before the mariage be consummat, I shall obtaine the fauour and good will of my Lorde my father: wherby I do neither offend God, nor my conscience, for I haue taried till the age of xxx. yeares, to see what you and my father would doe for me. I haue kept my selfe so chaste and honest, as no man liuing is able to laye the contrarie to my charge. And with that reason wherewith God hath indued me, being olde and voyde of hope, to finde a husbante agreeable to my nobilitie, I am determined to marie sutche a one as I like beste, not for the pleasure or satissfaction of the eye (for you know he is not faire) nor for lust of the flesh (for there hath bene no carnall fact committed) ne yet for pryde and couetousnes (for he is but poore and of litle estimation) but I haue a sincere respecte and pure regarde to his vertue, honestie and good grace, for whiche the worlde doth geue him praise, and the great loue also that he beareth me, maketh me hope to finde with him great rest and quiet. And after I had deuised and confidered the good and euill that might infue by

this my choise, I still perfisted in that mind, and haue well wayed and pondered the same these twoo yeares past, being throughly resolued to wafte and spende the rest of my dayes with him which I meane still firmly to kepe in despite of all the tormentes and cruelties, that the greatest enemies I haue, be able to make my poore bodie suffre, no not death it selfe shall force me to refuse hym. Wherefore Madame, I beseech you to accept this my reasonable excuse, whereunto your self is nowe made priuie, and suffer me to liue in that peace, whiche I hope for euer through him, in these mine elder to finde.” The Queene wel marking her stout wordes and countenaunce, and knowing the same to be very true, was not able to aunswere her againe with reason: but continuing, her rebukes and taunting checkes began to wafte, and at length fell out into this rage: “Ah, presumptuous drabbe, and caitife wretch, in stede of humbling thy selfe and repenting thine offence, thou carpest boldly without dropping or sheading any teare, whereby thou doest manifestly declare that stubbornes and hardnes of thy harte: but if the king, and thy father, would follow mine aduise, they should put thee into a place, where force should make thee to vse other language.” “Madame,” said Rolandine, “because you haue accused me of bolde talke and presumptous speache, I meane from henceforth to hold my peace, except you geue me leaue to make mine aunswere.” And when she was commaunded to tell forth her mynde, she said: “It is not my part, Madame, boldly or without duetifull reuerence to speake before your maiestie (whiche is my maistresse, and the greatest Princesse in Christendome). The wordes which I haue said, be not spoken (Madame) of presumption, but to declare that I haue none other aduocate to pleade for me, but the trouth of my cause. And therefore am bolde without blushing feare to disclose the same, hoping that if your grace did knowe the secret concept of my poore faithfull harte, you woulde not iudge mee to be that woman which you terme me to be. I doe not doubt that any mortall creature vnderstanding my behauour in those matters wherwith I am charged, would blame me, for my liberall speache, fithe I am sure that God and myne honor in no point I haue offended. The caufe which maketh me

thus without feare to saye my minde is, because I am assured that he whiche feeth my harte, is the geuer of my life also, and remaineth with me. If then such a Judge and Guide doe order and dispose my life, why should I be afrayd of them that be subiect vnto his judgement? And why then Madame, should I wayle or wepe, fithe mine honor and conscience without remorse or grudge do wel like of these my doings, which if they were newly to begin, I would not repente me to doe the same againe. But it is you (Madame) that hath good cause to wepe, as well for the great displeasure, euer borne me from my youthfull dayes, as for the wrong you doe me nowe by reprehending me before the face of all the worlde for a faulte, whiche ought rather to be imputed vnto you then vnto me. For if I had offended God, the king, or you, my parentes, or my conscience, I were well worthy to be counted very obstinate, if with great repentaunce I did not lament the same, but for a dede that is right good and vertuous, I ought not to wepe, whereof there was neuer other rumor spred but verie honorable, except the slander which your selfe hath raised, whereby your desire to increase my shame and dishonor appeareth to be greater then the respecte you haue to conferue the nobilitie of your house, or kindred wherof you come. But because it pleafeth you, Madame, so to vse me, I purpose not to withstand you. For when you shall ordeine that punishment for me, which you like best, I shal reioyse no lesse to suffer the same without desert, then you be willing to bestowe it vpon me without cause. Wherefore Madame, commaunde my Lorde my father to put me to what tormentes you will, for the execution wherof you shall not finde him vnwilling. And I shall not be altogether without ioy, to see him prest and redie to obey your wilfull mynde. But I haue a father in heauen, who (I am sure) will geue me suche pacience, as I shall be able to abide and indure, what affliction souer you prepare for me, in whom only is al my hope and trust." The Queene, so angrie as she could be, commaunded her out of her sight, and to be shutte into a chamber alone, that none might speake vnto her. In which imprisonment shee was not deprived from the companie of her gouernesse, by whose meanes she let the Baftarde vnderstande all her fortune, and she likewise

vnderstode what he thought best for her to doe. Who thinking that the seruice which he had done to the king, would stand him in some stede, came vnto the Court with all sped, and founde the king in the fieldes, to whome hee rehearsed the trouth of the faute, beseeching his maiestie that vnto him (who was a poore gentleman) he would shewe such fauour and grace as the rigor of the Queene's maiestie might be appeased, and the mariage fully consummat and ended. The king made him none other aunswere, but saide: "Is it true that thou haft maried her?" "Yea sir," saide the Basterde: "by wordes only as yet: but if it please your maiestie, the same may be throughly made perfit." The king nodded his hed, and for that time geuing him none other aunswere, hee retourned straite to the Castell, and when he was almost there, he called the Captaine of his Guarde, and commaunded him to apprehend the Basterde. Notwithstanding one of his frendes which knewe the kinge's countenaunce, willed him to absent himselfe, and to retire to one of his houfes, and if the king made serche after him (as he suspected) he would incontinently aduertise him therof, that he might auoyde the realme: and when the king's displeasure was pacified, he would fende him worde. The Basterde beleued him, and vsed such diligence as the Captain of the Guarde could not finde him. The king and the Queene councelled together what they might doe with this poore damfell, whiche was their kinswoman, and by the Queene's aduise it was concluded, that she should be sent home to her father, with the true aduertisement of the whole matter. But before she was sent, diuerse Diuines and learned men of the Clergie, were demaunded their opinions of the priuat mariage, and the Counsell also did fit vpon the same, who concluded that for so muche as the mariage was not celebrated but by wordes, it might easely be vndone, vntill one of them had acquited the other. Which the king commaunded to be performed for the honor of the house wheroft she came. But she made them aunswere, that in all thinges she was redie to obey the king, except it were in matter against her conscience, sayinge, that those whome God had coupled together by heauenly aduise, could not bee separated by man's decree, praying them not to attempt a thing so vn-

reasonable: for if loue and good will founded vpon the feare of God, were the true and sure knot of mariage, then she was so wel bounde and tied, as neither iron, fier, or water coulde breake that band, but death alone. Wherunto, and to none other constitution, she was determined to rendre her ring and othe, praying them not to speake, do, or proceede, to any thing that were contrarie vnto that: wherin she was so stedfastly resolued, as she had rather die by keping her faith, then liue to denie the same. The Commissioners returned to the king and Queene the constant answere of the Gentlewoman, and when they sawe no remedie could be found to make her renounce her husband, they conueyed her home to her father, in such pitifull forte, as by the way she passed, eche man and woman lamented her fortune. And albeit shee had offended, yet the punishment and affliction she suffred was so great and her constancie so firmlye bent, as she made her fault to be esteemed a vertue. The father receiuing those pitifull newes, would not see her, but sent her to his castell that stooode in a forest, which he had before time bulded for an occasion, worthy to be rehersed hereafter, and there kept her in prison a long time, fending worde vnto her, that if shee would forfake her husband, he would take her for his doughter, and set her at libertie. Who for all that offer was firme and constant, and loued her prison the better by obseruing the bond of mariage, then al the libertie of the world, without the hauing of her husband. And it semed by her countenaunce, that al the paynes she had indured were most pleasaunt pastimes, for that she suffred the same for his sake, whome she loued best. What should I speake of men? This Bastarde at length became vnmindful of her, and fled into Alemaine, where he had many frendes. Whose inconstancie afterwards appeared so manifest, as the vertue of true and perfitt loue outwardly seming to remain in him, was conuerted into the vice of odible ingratitude, whereby it was euident, that the causes that made him so hotte a Suter, were the vglie monsters of Auarice and Ambition, where he fill in loue with an Almaine Ladie, he forgetting to visite her with letters, that for his sake had susteined so great and manifold tribulations. For what rigor or affliction souer Fortune offred, coulde neuer before that tyme put

awaye the meanes from wrting one to an other, but onely the vices before named, and the foolish and wicked loue wherin he suffred him selfe to fall. Which sudden and newe loue so perced the hart of Rolandine, and so fiercely assailed the same, as she could no more content and rest her self. Afterwards vpon the viewe of his wrytinges and letters, seing him to be so chaunged and altered from his accustomed stile, what tormentes then she suffred, they doe knowe that haue felte and tafted the bitter cup of like paffions. And yet her perfecte loue would not suffer her to fixe certayne iudgement vpon this aduertisement, and therefore deuised secretly to fende one of her seruaunts whome shee trusted best, to espie, and priuely make serche whether the same were true or not. Whiche her seruaunt being retourned, hee truely tolde her, howe the Bastarde Gentleman was in loue with a Ladie of Almaine, and howe the brute was that he made great sute vnto her for mariage, because shee was very ritche. These newes brought sutche extreme sorrowe and grief to the harte of poore Rolandine, as being not able to abide the bruntes thereof, shee fell very sicke. Those whiche vnderstode the originall of her disease, fayde vnto her (in the behalfe of her father) that for so muche as nowe she knewe the great villanie of the Bastarde, shee might iustly forfake hym: persuading her thereunto with the greatest reasons they could deuise. But for all those persuasions, no remedie could be founde to make her chaunge opinion: in whiche her laste tentacion shee declared the great constancie wherewith she was affected: for like as loue was decreased in him: so the same augmented in her, whiche remained and perfisht in despite of all the malice of the worlde. For that loue, whiche fayled, and was fledde from him, tourned and retired into her. And when she perceiued her selfe alone fully possest with that whiche before was deuided betwene them bothe, shee determined to obserue the same vntill death had made an ende of her fatal dayes. Wherfore the goodnes of God (which is perfect charitie and true loue) had pitie vpon her sorrowe, and regarded her pacience in such wife, as within few daies after the Bastarde died in the pursute of the other ladie's Loue. Wherof Rolandine being dauerified by those which saw him buried, prayed them to trauell

with her father by humble sute, that he would vouchsafe to giue her leane to speake ynto him. Who at their request, (although he neuer spake vnto her before, during the tyme of her imprisonment) incontinently was pleased so to doe. And after that he had herde the discourse of her iuste reasons, in place of rebukes, and his promise made to kill her (which many times he threatened by woordes) he cleped her betweene his armes, and bitterly weeping, sayde vnto her: "Daughter, I wel perceiue your vertue and constant mynde, which farre surmounteth any thing that is good in mee, for if there be any faulfe or lacke of confideration of your estate, I am the principal occasion thereof: but sith the goodnes of God hath thus ordeined it, I wil make satiffaction for mine offence past." And afterwardes he sent her home to his house, where he vsed and interteigned her like his derest and eldest daughter. In the ende she was demaunded in mariage by a Gentleman of name and armes, to her estate and blond not inferior. Who was bothe wife and vertuous, and so louingly regarded Rolandine (whome he many times visited) as he attributed vnto her the pris of prayse for that, which others accompted worthy of rebuke, knowing that her intent of former loue was grounded vpon the foundation of vertue. The mariage was well liked of her father, was acceptable to Rolandine, and was forthwith concluded. True it is that a brother she had, the only inheritour of her father's landes, who would not agree that she should receiue her childe's porcion, obiecting that she had disobeied her father. And after the death of the good old man (her father) her brother vsed her very rigorously and cruelly. For her husbante was but a yonger brother, and had wherewithal scarce able to liue: for which want, God bountifullly prouided: for the brother whose greddie minde did craue in one daie to be posseffor of al, by sodain death was depriued, as well of his fister's porcion as of al the rest. By whose death she remained the whole inheritour of that honorable house: and afterwardes liued an honorable and stately life, in great wealth and pleasure, and was welbeloued and duetifullly intreated of her husband. Finally hauing by her husband two goodly sonnes, she very vertuously brought them vp, and finishing her aged dayes, she ioyfully rendred her soule vnto him,

in whom of long time she had reposed her onely trust and confidence. Now good ladies let them come forth that be the common displaiers of women's inconstancie, and let them bring forth in prefence, so good and perfect a husband as this was a good and constant woman, indued with semblable faith and vertue. I am sure to bring this to passe the matter wilbe very difficult: and therfore I had rather discharge them of this my chalenge, then put them to payne to trauell and seeke for such a one. Whose vertuous loue and godlye continuance of the same, is worthye to bee founded by Trompe of fame to the extreame partes of the Earth. And yet I would aduise yonge Ladies and gentlewomen to beware how they be inamoured, and pursue the trade of loue, contrarie to the will of parentes, who ought in time of infancie to be their guide, and also in riper yeares to procure them mariage according to their worthines: which they may the better and soner do, if by vertuous education they arme and instruct their tender and youthly age.

## THE SIXTY-THIRD NOUELL.

*The Wisedome of a woman to withdrawe the foolishe loue of her husband, wherwith he was tormenteth.*

MANY yeares are not yet expired fithens there was a Gentlewoman of noble houfe (whose name I may not discloſe), ſo wife and vertuous as ſhee was wel beloued and eſteemed of her neigbours: her husband (not without good caufe) truſted her in al his affaires, which ſhe ordred and gouerned ſo wiſely, as her houfe by her meanes grew to be one of the richeſt and beſt appareled, that was in the countrie wherein ſhe dwelled. Liuing thus a long time with her houſbande, by whom ſhee had many goodly children, their happie ſtate and felicitie (after which daily iſſue their contraries) began to decaie, becauſe that he, defatigated with to much quiet, abandoned reſtfull life, to ſeeke after troubleſom trauell: and had gotten a cuſtome when his wife was a ſleepe to riſe from her ſide, and not to returne vntill it was very nere morning. The gentlewoman miſliking this maner of life, became very ielous of her husband, and yet made as though ſhe miſtrusted nothing: but that ſpitefull paſſion entred her ſtomacke ſo farre, as in thende ſhee forgot thaffayres of her houfe, the diligēce of her perſon, and good gouernment of her familie, like vnto one that verely ſuppoſed that (do what ſhee could) ſhe had loſt the fruite of her paine and labour, which was the great loue of her houſband, for continuance whereof ſhee ſpared no trauaile or toile: but loſinge altogether as ſhee maniſteſtly perceiued, ſhee grew to be ſo careleſſe of her houſhould ſtate and houſwiferie, as ſpeedelie appeared the fruities of ſlouth and negligence: for her houſband for his part ſpent without order, and ſhe ſtaied her trauell from matters of houſhould: in ſuſh wife as the ſame was growen to ſo great penurie, as the high and ſtately woodes were felled downe to the ſtubbe, and the goodly maners deliuered into the handes of fir Mathewe Morgage. One of the gentlewoman's frendes and kinſmen which knew her diſeaſe, tolde her of her fault, and rebuked her for that careleſſe life: ſayinge, that if loue

of husband could not make her to haue respecte of houshalde profite: zeale and regarde of poore children's state ought to moue her thereunto. This good councell of her frende touched her very nere, and the pitie of her children at lengthe made her to recouer her spirits, and to affaie by all meanes possible to wynne againe her husbande's loue. See here the nature of honestie, and condicion of well disposed life: this gentlewoman was infected with the plague of Ieloufie (an ordinarie diseafe in women,) and not without iust cause: for what Grifilde could suffre her wedded husband, assembled in bedde, in depthe of slepe, to rife and runne a straie like a wylde horse, neyng after the straied female kinde of that sorte? This good Gentlewoman, I saye, almoste besides her wittes for alienation of her deserued loue, now growen careles of worldly thinges, as you haue heard, is vpon the louing admonicion of her neref frend, pricked with naturall regarde of Infantes: launching forth that festred sore of Ialoufie, serched meanes by policie to wynne that which Ialoufie could not get, whiche was her husbande's loue, whom with curteoufie wiuely shame not before assemblie of neighbours, or straungers audience, by huy and crye as many doe, but in domesticall boundes, within the compas of houshalde, and within the circuit of secreit chambre, shee made him blushe from former life, and to deteste all filthie and beastly factes in future time. Suche be the frutes of a right matrone's life. Suche be the gaines of the milde and quiet wife. Such a wife, I say, is the honor of her husband's name, the onely vpholder and restoratif of his renowme and fame. But turne we againe to the experienced wisedome of this Gentlewoman. The next day she diligently watched by false slepe, the time of his vprisifg from her: and when he was gone, shee rose likewyse, putting her night gowne about her, causyng the bedde to bee made, and saying her prayers, she waited the retourne of her husband, who being retired into his chambre, she came before him to kiffe hym, and brought him a basen with water to washe his handes: and musing at the vnaccustomed order of his wife, he tolde her that he was come but from the priuie, and therfore neded not to washe. Whereunto she answered, that although it were no great matter, yet cleanly and honest, to washe the handes, being come

from an vncleane and stinking place, by which wordes she was desirous to let him vnderstante his follie thereby to hate his dishonest and filthie life. But for all that wyfe and pretie taunte hee amended nothing at all: Howbeit she continued that ordre the space of one yere. And when shee sawe, that her diligence could not reforme his vsuall trade of lyfe, on a tyme wayting for her husband, which taried longer then he was wont to doe, shee was desirous to seeke hym out, and went from chamber to chamber, till at lengthe shee founde hym a bedde in a back chambre and a sleepe with the mooste ill fauoured, foule and filthiest Slutte of her house, such a homely pece and durty beaste, as the lyke was not to be founde in a countrie. The gentlewoman beholding this manerly sight, thought to teache him a lesson howe to remembre the difference betwene the sweete and pleasaunt lodging, with a fayre and duetifull wife, and the vncleanly couching with a stinking and lothsome Queane. Wherupon she caused a burden of Strawe and worne rushes to be brought vnto her, setting the same on fier in the middes of the chamber, but when she sawe her husband almoste choked with the great smother, she waked hym, and plucked hym out of the bed by the armes, crying: "fier, fier." If the husbande were ashamed, and offended with him selfe to be founde in a bedde with such an vncleanly matche, by his faire and honest wife, I referre the iudgement to all indifferent men, that be coupled with like wines. Then his wyfe said vnto him: "Sir I haue assayed the space of one whole yeare, to withdrawe you from this vile and wicked life, by gentlenes and pacience, and shewed example by waching you without, that you might also clenue your selfe within. But when I sawe myne endeouour could take no place, I attempted to helpe my selfe with the element that shall ende and consume vs all: assuring you, sir, that if this doe not amende you, I cannot tell if the seconde time, I be able likewise to ridde you from the daunger that may happen. I praye you sir to thinke and consider that there is no greater dispayre or dispite, then that whiche is conceiued of loue: and had I not set before mine eyes the feare of God, I could not haue practised suche pacience, as I haue done." The husband very glad, that he had escaped that miffortune, promised her neuer to geue occasion,

that shee should take like Payne to bring him to order. Whiche promise the Gentlewoman very willingly beleued, and with her husbande's consent, shee expelled out of her house, that which did displease her moste: and from that time forth, they louingly liued together, and the former faultes of this reformed life, was an increase of ioyful and mutuall delights. I beseche you Gentlewomen (if there be any in the place where this nouell is redde) if God doe geue you such husbandes to beware of dispaire, vntill ye haue assayed all possible meanes to reduce them to good ordre. For there be in the daye xxxiii. hours, in euery of whiche hours a man may chaunge opinion: and a woman ought to ac-compt her selfe moste happie, if by pacience and long suffraunce she wynne her husbande, excepte fortune and frendes haue pro-cured one that is alreadie perfecte. This example therefore maye serue al sortes of maried women. Let her take example that list (quod Dame Partelot) for it is impossible for me to vse suche long pacience. But let Dame Partelot speake her pleasure,

I would aduise all husbandes to lyue honestly with  
their honest wiues, and doe prai to God to plant  
mo sutch wiues to store the barren worlde  
that neuer or seldome bryngeth forth such  
increase.

## THE SIXTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

*The notable charitie of a woman of Tours towards her husband.*

ANOTHER hystorie of like example I thincke meete to bee annexed: which telleth howe in the Cittie of Tours in Fraunce, there was a fayre and honest wylfe which for her vertues was not onelye beloued, but also feared and esteemed of her husband. So it was that he followinge the fragilitie of those men, which be wearie of delicate fare, fell in loue with a woman of the Countrye that kepte his house there, and many times departed from Tours to visite his countrye woman, where he commonlye taried ii. or iii. dayes before his retorne: and when he came home againe to Tours, he ordinarely did take cold, whereof his good wife had much to do to recouer him. And so sone as he was hole, hee failed not to returne to the place, where pleasure made him forget all his former griefe and ficknes. His wife which aboue all thinges loued his life and tended his health, feinge him commonly broughte into so poore estate, went into the Countrye, where she founde out the yong woman that her husband loued. Vnto whom (not in choler but with smilinge cheere and countenaunce) shee sayd: "How she knew well that oftentimes her husband repaired thither to visite her, and that she was not well content that she vsed him no more carefully, for when he came home from her he toke so great cold as long time after she had much a doe to recouer him." The poore woman as wel for the reurence of the Dame, as for the trouth of the matter, could not denie the facte, and therefore fallinge downe vpon her knees, asked her forgiuenes. The maistresse required to see the bedde and chamber, where her husband laie, which she perceiued to be so cold, ill fauoured, and out of order, as she pitied and lamented the case: wherefore incontinently she sent for a good bedde furnished with sheetes, blanquets and Couerlet, accordingly as she knew her husband loued, causing the chamber to be repaired, hanged, and dressed vp, after the best maner: she gaue her also plate and vessell to serue her husband at meales, together with a punction of wyne, spice, and other

confections: and then prayed the woman to fende home her hus-  
bande, no more so fische, but to interteigne and cherishe him after  
the most delicate and carefull maner she could. The husband  
taried not long at home, but after his olde custome wente againe  
into the countrie to visit his woman, and marueiled much to finde  
her poore lodging so trimlye garnished, but much more he wondred  
when calling for drincke he fawe her to bringe him a filuer potte,  
asking her where she had gotten all those goodes. The poore  
woman fayde vnto him weeping, that it was his wife, which  
hauing so great pitie vppon his ill intreatie, had furnished her  
house, and had committed vnto her the charge and regard of  
his health. Hee seing the greate humilitie and goodnes of  
his wyfe, and that shee for the vnkindnes he shewed vnto her,  
had requited him with that curtesie and louing kindnes, well  
pondering and regarding his owne frailtie, and the honeste de-  
meanor of his wyfe, afterwards rewarded the poore woman with  
money, and perswaded her from that time foorth to liue an honest  
life. And then returned home to his wyfe, confessing vnto her the  
negligence of his dutie, and that excepte she had vsed that kinde  
of curtesie and goodnes towards him, it had bin impossible for him  
to forsake and giue ouer his vngodlye life: and afterwardes vtterly  
abandoning his behaumour past, they liued together in great rest  
and quietnes. Belieue me if ye list (to you good wiues I speake)  
that there be verye few ill husbands, whom the pacience and loue  
of the wyfe, is able at lengthe to winne, or els they be more harde  
then stones, which the soft and feble water by continuance of  
time, is able to weare and make holow: for when the wiue's lenitie  
shall enter his careleffe stomacke, and her pacient suffraunce  
renew remembraunce of dutie, then doth conscience bite, and  
gnaw the cancred cord that tyeth vp the good consideracion of his  
office, and regarde to maried life: then doth age abhorre the lewd-  
nes of former life, and commeth home to cherish the holosome  
Nourice of his pleasant state. Then regardeth he the bande  
wherewith matrimonie hath bound him, and both at bedde  
and borde obserueth the ful perfections of the same.

## THE SIXTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

*The simplicitie of an olde woman, that offered a burning candle to S. Iohn of Lions.*

IN the Church of S. Iohn at Lions, there was a very darke Chappell, and within the same a Tombe made of stone, erected for great personages, with pictures liuely wroughte, and about the same Tombe there doe lie manye worthie knightes of great fame and valiaunce. Vpon a hote Sommer's daye, a souldiour walking vp and downe the Church had great delight to sleepe, and beholding that darcke chappell which was colde and fresh of ayre, thoughte to reste vpon the Tombe as other did, besides whom he layde him downe to sleepe. It chaunced that a good old woman very deuoute, came thether when the souldiour was in the depth of his sleepe. And after shee had sayd her deuocions, wyth a wax candle in her hande, she would haue fastened the same vpon the Tombe, and repayring nere the place where the souldiour lay, desirous to sticke it vpon his forehead, thinking it had been the stome, the waxe would take no hold. The old woman, which thought the cause that her candle would not cleaue was the coldnesse of the Image, she warmed the souldiour's forehead with the flame of the candle, to sticke it faste. But the Image which was not insensible, beganne to cry oute, whereat the poore woman was so afraide, as like one straught of her wittes, she brake into exclamacion crying: "A miracle! A miracle!" They within the Church hearing an outcry of a miracle, ranne in heapes as though they had been madde, some to ring the belles, and some to see the miracle: whom the good woman broughte to see the Image, which then was remoued: whereat many began to laughe. But diuers priestes not willing so to give ouer so great a Miracle, determined afterwards to vse that tombe in reuerence, therby to get money.

## THE SIXTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

*A Doctor of the Lawes boughte a cup, who by the subtiltie of two  
false varlets, lost both his money and the cuppe.*

To conclude our nomber of Nouels, I haue thought good (gentle reader) to bringe in place a Doctour and his wyfe, to giue thee a merye farewell: because thou haſte hitherto fo frendly and pacientlye ſuffered thy ſelfe to be ſtayed in reading of the reſte: wherefore with a plefaunt Adieu in a ſhort and merie tale, which diſcloſeth the subtiltie of two falſe knaues to beguile a poore Doctor and his wyfe, I meane to end. And therfore do ſaye, that in the Citie of Bologna in Italie, there was a worshipful Doctor of the Lawes, called Maifter Florien, which in other thinges ſauing his profeſſion was but a ſlouen, and of ſo ill behauour as none of his facultie the like: who by ſauing of many crufteſ, had layed vp ſo good ſtore of Crownes, as he cauſed to be made a very great and costly Cup of filuer, for payment of which Cup he went to the Goldſmithe's houſe, and haſinge payed for the filuer, the guilt, and for the fashion, being without his Clarke to carie it home, he prayed the Goldſmithe to lend him his man. By chaunce there were newly come to the Citie, two yonge men that were Romayneſ, which ranged vp and downe the ſtreates with eares vpright, to view and marke euery thinge done in the fame, bearing about them counterfaſt Iewels and lingots, guilt of S. Martine's touche, to deceiue him that would playe the foole to buy them. One of them was called Liello and the other Dietiquo. Theſe two Marchantes being at good leafure to wander the ſtreates, beholding the paſſangers to and fro, by fortune eſpied the Goldſmithe's man, who (to ſet forth the workemanship and making of the cup) caried the fame open. Theſe gallants bearing a ſpite to the cup, more for the filuer than for other malice, purpoſed to inuenſome ſleight to get the Cuppe, and a farre of with flie pafe, followed the Goldſmithe's man, of whom they craftelie inquiered of the owner of the Cup, and where hee had left maifter Florien. When they had concluded vpon their enterprife, Liello (the fineſt boye of

them both) went straight to buy a Lamprey of great price, and hiding the same vnder his cloake, repayred directly to Maister Doctour's house, where finding his wife of semblable wit and behauiour that her husband was, with vnshamefast face and like grace, said vnto her: "Maistresse, Maister Florien your husbande hath sent you a fishe, and prayeth you to dresse it and to make dinner readie, because he bringeth a company of other Doctoures with him: in the meane time he requireth you, to retorne vnto him the Cuppe againe, whiche hee sent you this morning by the Goldfmithe's man, because he had forgotten to stampe his armes vpon it." The woman receyuinge the fishe, franckly deliuered him the Cup, and went about to prepare dinner. Liello (which hunted after gaine but better caught his prey) hied him a pace and conueyed himselfe with speede to the house of one of his Countriemen, and there rcioyced with his companion, attending for the comming of the Royster Dietiquo, who taried in the Towne, wayting and viewing what pursute was made after his fellowe. Sone after maister Florien retourned to his house and finding his dinner more delicate than it was wont to be, marueyled, and asked his wyfe who was at all that coste. His wyfe very scornefully aunswered: "Why fir, haue you forgotten that you fente me word this morning that you woulde bring home with you diuers Gentlemen to dinner?" "What" (quoth the Doctour) "I thincke you be a foole." "I am not" (sayd shee) "and for better witnesse you sent mee this fishe, that I would you had been better aduised before you had bestowed such coste." "I affuse thee:" quoth hee, "I sent thee no fishe, but belike it was some folishe knaue that had forgotten his arrant and mistaken the house: but howsoeuer it was wyse, we at this time will be content to fare well, at other mennes charge." "Why fir (sayd his wyfe) call your selfe to better remembraunce, for hee that brought the Lamprey, came to me for your Cup, by this token that you would haue your armes engrauen vpon the same." At those words the poore Doctour, after he had discharged three or foure Canons laden with haile shot of scolding words wente out into the streate, running hither and thither demaunding of al them he met, if they saw none carrie a Lamprey home to his house. And you would haue said if you

had seen the Doctour wyth his hode hanging at one fide, that he had been out of his wittes. Dietiquo stode still in a corner, and beheld the Doctour's frantike order, and albeit that he was sure the stealinge of the Cuppe by Liello his companion was impossible to be knowen, yet being forye that the Lampry cost so much, determined also to play his part, and feinge the doctour stayed from making further complaintes and pursute, he went home to the Doctour's house, where smiling with a good grace and bould countenaunce faide vnto his wyfe: " Maistresse Doctour, good newes, the Cup is founde, one whom you know caused the same to be done in sport to bring your husband Maister Florien in a choler, who now is amonges diuers of his frendes iesting at the pleasuant deceipt, and hath sent me hither to fetch their dinner, wherein they praye you to remember the Lamprey, and to come your selfe to take part of the same, bicause they purpose to be mery." The woman ioyful of those newes, began some what to complaine of the griefe which she had taken for losse of the cup, and deliuered to Dietiquo the rosted Lamprey with the fause, betwene two platters who incontinently hid the same vnder his cloke, and wthy so much speede as he could, went to seeke out his companion Liello, and their countrimen, which all that while had taried for him: and God knoweth whether those good fellowes did laugh and mocke the poore Doctour, and his wife or not, and when she had made herself gay and trimme to go eate part of the Lamprey, as she was going out she met Maister Florien lookinge lowringlie vpon the matter, to whom she said (smiling like a frumenty pot) " How now, fir, come they hither to dinner? I haue sent you that Lamprey ready dressed." Then Maister Doctor after faire talke, beganne to discharge his double Cannons, callinge his wyfe Whore, bitch, and beaste, and vnderstandinge that he was twice begiled and could not tell by whom, for spite and despayre he tare of his beard, and the heare of his head, which bruted and knownen in the Citie, the Iesters and pleasaunt felowes bent themselues to laugh, and deuise pastime at the poore begiled Doctour and his wyfe.

FINIS.





The second Tome  
of the Palace of Pleasure,  
conteyning storie of godly Histories,  
Tragicall matters, and other Mo-  
rall argument, very re-  
guisite for delighte  
and profit.

*Chosen and selected out of  
divers good and commen-  
dable Authors;*

By William Painter, Clerke of the  
Ordinance and Armarie,  
ANNO. 1567.

Imprinted at London, in  
Pater Noster Rowe, by Henry  
Byneman, for Nicholas  
England.



*To the Right Worshippful Sir George Howard Knight,  
Maister of the Quene's Maiestie's Armayne.*

EVERY science hauing his peculier commodity, and conducedinge to the trauayler and dilligent searcher, a due deserued benefyte (befydes the exercisfe and shunninge the pestilent monſter Idlenes) discloſeth the miraculouſe effecte of the Diuinity, and the excellencye of his Creature: who breathing life into that fenceleſſe worke, framed within the mould of humayn Conception, forceth in him by nature and timely institution ſuſh capacitye of Science, as not onelye by that knowledge hee glorifyeth his Creator, but also beſydes himſelfe, helpeth and doth good to other. For profe whereof the Science of that ſurpaſſing and delightfome paſture of Theologie, is profitable to teache, argue, reproue, and inſtruct, that by pacience and conſolation, we may conceiue hope of Eternitye. The knowledge of Philofophie cureth the Mynde, auoydeth childiſh care, expelleth feare, and ſhunneth fond defyres. O Philofophye, the guide of life, (exclameth Tullie) the inquisitor of Virtue and expeller of vice. Rethorike (affirmeth he) caufeth vs to learne that we know not and that we know to teach to other: by the ſame we exhort, with that we perſwade, with that we comfort the afflieted, by it we encourage the aſtonned, and appeafe the outragious. Muſike, easeth the troubled mynde, lenifyeth ſorrowe, comforteth the heauye harted, and erecteth a contemplatyon of heauenlye thinges. Aſtronomye, reuealeth the nature of the Starres and Planets, prefageth dayes and times for the helpe and maintenaunce of life. Poefie teacheth amendment of manners, direc̄teth what things be mete for imitation, and with what detriment wantonnes annoyeth the bodye of man. By meanes of it (Saint Augustine faſth,) he learned many good leſſons

to profite himselfe and do good to other. To be shourt euery science is so necessary, as the same taken away, reason is depriued and the Life of Man (of due order and gouernment) defrauded. Thinke (sayth a Greke Oratour) the knowledge of many thinges to bee more precious and excellent, then a Chest heaped vp with abundance of money: for the one quickly fayleth, and the other for euer lasteth. For Scientia (affirmeth hee) is the onelye immortall storehouse of all possesstions. Amonges which troupe of Sciences, the knowledge and search of Histories deserueth a place in the chefest rank, and is for example of humaine affayres, a Chriftal light to shew the pathes of our Auncestors. The same displaith the counsels, aduises, policies, actes, succeſſe, and endes of Kinges, Princes and great men, with the order and discription of time and place. And like a liuely image repreſenteth before our eies the beginning, end and circumſtaunce of ech attempt. The same (like a Mistrefſe of our life) by probable examples stirreth vp our ſluggiſh mindes, to aſpyre the eternal glorie of praife and fame, and terrifyeth the desperate and aduenturous, from enterprife of things vnſeemely. The same is a paſſing picture of verity, and an absolute paterne framinge the matter greater nor leſſe then it is. And becauſe I am not ignorant what Encomia innumerable Authors in time paſt, and wryters of our tyme do attribute vnto that ſcience, and with what titles the Prince of them all decketh the praife of Historicall knowledge, I only refer the worthines to the practiſers, and the ſyngularitye of Histories trauel and delight, to ech willing minde that imploie their leaſure and tyme therin. And I for my parte do confeſſe (that by reading of Histories) I fynd the ſaying which Tullie aduoucheth of Publius Scipio to bee true: that he was neuer leſſe idle, then when he was idle, and neuer leſſe alone, then when he was alone, meaning therby, that when he was at beſt leaſure, he was neuer idle, nor when he was alone vnoccupiſed. For when labor reſteth him ſelfe in me, and leaſure refresheth other affaires nothing delights more that vacant tyme, than readinge of Histories in ſuch vulgar ſpeache, wherein my ſmall knowledge taketh re-paſt. And for that my priuat readinge might not delyte and

pleasure me alone, to auoid the nature of that cankred churle and foe of humain compayne, Timon of Athens, that liued but for him selfe, I haue (after my skill) culled some floures and fruites from that pleasaunt store of thosē my readinges to impart for vniversal gayne and benefite, chofyng rather hereby to followe the liberalitye of Cimon a gentleman of that Cittye, who knowynge hymselfe to bee borne to profite other and for the enriching of his Coutry, not only attchiued maruailous matters for furtherance of Comon wealth, but lefte his Gardens and Orchards open for all men to participate the Fruictes of his pleasure and trauell. Wherby so wel as I can I follow the tract and practice of other, by whose meanes, so manifold sciences in our known toungh and translation of Histories be frequent and rife amonge vs. Al which be done after our commodity, pleasure, solace, preferuation and comfort, and without the which we cannot long be fustayned in this miserable lyfe, but shal become not much vnlyke the barbarous, ne discrepant from the sauage sorte. The inuestigatours and bringers to light, wherof direct their eyes and meaning to none other end but for the benefyte of vs and our posteritye, and that our faces be not taynted with the blushing coloure to se the passing diligence of other Countryes by curious imbelishinge of their states with the troublous trauaile of their brayne, and laboursom course of penne. Who altogeaither imploie those paynes, that no Science lurke in Corner, that no Knowledge be shut vp in cloysters, that no History remaine vnder the maske and vnknowne attyre of other tonges. Among which crew (I say) I craue an inferiour place and haue vndertaken the vnfolding of fundry Histories from the couerture of foren language for none other purpose and intent but to vniuersal benefyte. Part whereof, two yeares past (almost) were made commune in a former boke, now succedeth a second, furnished withlike ornaments that the other was. The first (by duties chalenge) was addressed to the right honorable the Earle of Warwik, for respect of his honour, and my calling. This the second by lyke band, your worship may iustly clayme as a iust tribute now this moneth of Nouember, payable. Or if your curtesye would not deale so

roughly with youre bounden creditoure, yet for duty sake I must acquite and content that which hath so long ben due. The same I offer now not with such vsury and gayne as your beneuolence and syngular bounte, by long forbearing hath deserued, but with such affected will and desyre of recompence, as any man alyue can owe to so rare a friend. Your worship I haue chosen for the firste person of this boke, and the protector of the same (the matter moste specially therin comprised, treating of courtly fashions and maners, and of the customes of loue's gallantise, and the good or yll succeſſe therof,) because you be an auncient Courtier, and one of the eldest Trayne, and such as hath bene employed by sundry our Princes, in their affayres of greatest wayght and importance, and for that your ſelfe in your luſtiest tyme (euer bred and brought vp in Court,) haue not ben vnaquaunte with thofe occurrents. If I ſhoulde ſtand particularlye to touch the originall of your noble Aunceſtry, the ſucceſſion of that renowmed line, their fidelity for graue aduife and counſel, your honowrable education, the mariage of a mighty kyng with one of your ſisters, the valiant exploites of your parents againſte the Frenche and Scottes, the worthye ſeruice of your ſelfe in fielde, wherby you deseruedly wanne the order of Knighthode, the truſt which her maieftie reposeth in you, by diſpoſing vnder your charge the ſtore of her Armure, and your worthye preferment to be Maiiſter of her Armary generall. If I ſhould make recitall of your careful industry and painful trauel ſuſtayned, for aūſwearing her Maieftey's expeſtation, your noble cheriſhing of the ſkilful in that ſcience, your good aduancemente of the beſt to ſupply the vacan̄t romes, your refuſall of the vneworthy: and finally of your modeſt and curteous dealings in that office, I feare lacke of ability (and not of matter) would want grace and order by further circumstaunce to adde ſufficient prayſe: yea although my ſelfe do fay nothinge, (but referue the fame in ſilence to auoyd ſuſpēcte of adulatōn) the very armure and their furnitures do ſpeake, vniuerſal testimony doth wonder, and the Readines of the fame for tyme of ſeruice doth aduouch. Which care of things continually reſting in your breaſt, hath atchyued ſuch a tymely

diligence, and succeſſe, as when her Maiefthy's aduerſary ſhal be readye to moleſt, ſhe ſhal be preſt (by God's affiſtance) to defend and march. But not to hold your worſhip long by length of preamble, or to diſcourse what I miſt further ſaye, either in fauour of this boke, or commendation of youre ſelfe, I meane (for this iſtant) to leauē the one to general iudgment, and the other to the particular ſentence of ech of your acquaintance. Humblye making this onely ſute that my good wil may ſupplye the imperfection of myne abilitye. And ſo with my harty prayer for your preferueration to him that is the auctor of life and health, I take my leauē.

From my pore house beſides the Tower of London,  
the iiiij. of Nouember,

1567.

Your moſt bounden

WILLIAM PAINTER.

## TO THE READER.

**A**S shewed curtesie deserueth grateful acquital and frendly fauour forceth mutual merit. So for gentle acceptation of my other boke, I render to thy delite and profit a second Tome, for which I craue but like report: albeit, neither worthy of any: or other then the rude artificer gayneth by tryal of his art. Who hauing committed to his skil and workmanship, some substance of gold, or other precious matter, fashioneth the same with such bungled shape and order, as (besydes disprayse) it carieth the vnablenes of the workman. Howsoeuer (then) the ablenes or perfection herof vniuersally shal content or particularly displease: the boke craueth mild construction, for imploied paines. And yet the same (liking or lothing the licorous diet, and curious expectation of som) shal beare regarde with those that more delite in holsom viandes (voyd of variety) than in the confused mixture of foren drugges fetched farr of. Who no doubt will supply with fauorable brute, default of ablenes and riper skil in the Histories of forren spech. Which is the guerdon (besides publike benefyte) after which I gaze, and the best stipend that ech wel willinge mind (as I suppose) aspireth for their trauel, and briefly to touch what comodity thou shalt reape of these succeding Histories, I deme it not vnapt for thine instruction, to vnfold what pith and substance, resteth vnder the context of their discourse.

In the Nonel of the AMAZONES, is displayed a straunge or miraculous port, (to our present skill) of womens gouernment, what state they subdued, what increase of Kingdome, what combats and conflictes they durst attempt contrary to the nature of that fexe.

In ALEXANDER the greate, what ought to bee the gratitude and curtesye in a puissant Prince, toward his slauie and captiue, and to what perilous plunge he flippeth by exchange of vice for vertue.

In TIMOCLIA and THEOXENA the stoutnesse of two noble Dames to auoyde the beastly lust and raging fury of Tyrantes.

ARIOBARZANES telleth the duty of a subiect to his Prince: and how he ought not to contende with his souerayn in matters of curtesy, at length also the condition of courting flatterers: and the poison of the monster Enuy.

ARISTOTIMVS disgarboyleth the intralles of Tiranny, describing the end whereunto Tirants do attein and how that vice plagueth their posterity.

The two Romayne QUEENS do point (as it wer) with their fyngers, the natures of Ambition and cruelty, and the gredy lust (hidden in that feeble sexe) of souerainty.

SOPHONISBA reporteth the force of beauty, and what poyson distilleth from that licourous fappe to inuenim the hartes of valiant gentlemen.

The gentlewomen of HYDRVSA the ficlesnes of Fortune.

The Empresse FAUSTINA, and the countesse of CELANT, what blosioms blome of whorish life, and what fruictes therof be culling.

The letters of the Emperour TRAIANE, do paynt a right shape of vertue, a good state of gouernment, and the comly form of obedience.

Three Amorous Dames reueale the sleights of loue the redines of Nobles to be baited with the amorous hoke, and what desire such infamous strumpets haue to be honored.

Queene ZENOBLIA, what the noble Gentlewomen (whom the fates ordayne to rule) ought to do, how farre their magnanimity ought to stretch, and in what boundes to conteine their souerainty.

EVPHIMIA a king's daughter of Corinth, and the vnfortunate Duchesse of Malfi, what match of mariage Ladies of renowne, and Dames of Princelye houes ought to chuse.

Mistresse DIANORA, MITHRIDANES and NATHAN, KATHERINE of Bologna, and SALADINE, the mutual curtesies of noble and gentle Personages, and for what respectes.

Quene ANNE of Hungarie, the good nature and liberalitye of a Quene: and with what industry Gentlewomen of priuy chamber

ought to preferre the futes of the valiant, and of such as haue wel serued the common welth.

ALEXANDRE de Medices, Duke of Florence, the iustice of a Prince, and gouernour to the wronged party, what vertues ought to shine in Courtiers, and with what temperance their insolence is to be repreffed.

IVLIETTA and RHOMEO disclose the harty affe<sup>t</sup>ions of two incomparable louers, what secret sleights of loue, what danger either fort incurre which mary without the aduise of Parentes.

Two Gentlewomen of VENICE, the wisedom and policy of Wiues to chaftice and restrain the follies of husbands, and the stoutnes they ought to vfe in their defense.

The Lord of VIRLE, and the widow ZILIA, geue leſſons to Louers, to auoyde the immoderate panges of loue, they prognosticate the indiscretion of promiſed penance, they warne to beware al vnſeemly heſtes, leſt the penaltyes of couetife and vayn glory be incurred.

The Lady of BOEME, ſchooleth two noble Barons that with great boſt auſſured themſelues to impair her honor.

DOM DIEGO and GINEVRA, record the cruelty of women bent to hate and the voluntarye vow performed by a paſſionate Knight, with the parfect friendſhip of a true frenſt in redrefſe of a frenſt's miſhap.

SALIMBENE and ANGELICA, the kindnes of a gentleman in deliuerie of his ennemy, and the conſtant mynd of a chaſt and and vertuous mayden.

Miſtrefſe HELENA of Florence diſcouereth what lothſom luſtes do lurk vnder the bark of fading beauty, what ſtench of filthy affe<sup>t</sup>ion fumeth from the ſmoldring gulf of diſhonest Loue what prankes ſuch dames do play for deceit of other, and shame of themſelues.

CAMIOLA reproueth the mobility of youth ſuch chiefly as for noble auncentry regarded ritches more than vertue, ſhe lyke a miſtrefſe of conſtancye leſſoneth her equalles from wauering myndes, and not to aduenture vpon vnſtedie contracts: with thoſe that care not (vnder what preſtence) they com by riſhes.

The lords of NOCERA fortel the hazardes of whordom, the

rage of Ieloufy, the difference of duty betwene Prince and subiect, the fruities of a Rebell, the endes of Traity and Tiranny, and what monstruous successe such vices do attain.

The king of MAROCCO describeth the good nature of the homely and loial subiect, the maruaylous loue of a true and symple Countryman towarde his liege and soueraygne Lorde, and the bountie of a curteous Prince, vpon those that vnder rude attyre, be garnisht with the floures of vertue.

To be short, the contentes of these Nouels from degré of higheſt Emperour, from ſtate of greateſt Quene and Lady, to the homelye Cuntry peafant and rudeſt vilage girle, may conduce proſite for iuſtrion, and pleaſure for delight. They offer rules for auoiding of vice and imitation of vertue to al eſtates. This boke is a very Court and Palace for al fortes to fixe their eies therein, to vew the deuoyres of the Nobleſt, the vertues of the gentleſt, and the dutyes of the meanest. Yt is a ſtage and Theatre for ſhew of true Nobilitye, for profe of paſſing loialty and for tryal of their contraries. Wherfore as in this I haue continued what erſt I partelye promiſed in the firſt fo vpon intelligence of the ſecond figne of thy good wil, a third (by Gods affiſtance) ſhal come forth.

Farewell.

*Authorities from whence these Nouelles be collected : and in the  
same auouched.*

Strabo.	Trebelius Pollio.
Plinie.	Xenophon.
Quintus Curtius.	Homere.
Plutarche.	Virgilius.
Titus Liuius.	Baptista Campofulgofus.
Dionysius Halicarnassæus.	Bandello.
Appianus Alexandrinus.	Bocaccio.
Ouide.	Gyraldi Cynthio.
Horace.	Belleforrest.
Propertius.	Boustuau.
Cicero.	Petro di Seuiglia.
Valerius Max.	Antonio di Gueuarra.

# The Palace of Pleasure.

---

## THE FIRST NOUELL.

*The hardineſſe and conqueſts of diuers stout, and aduenturous wo-  
men, called Amazones, the beginninge, and continuance of their  
Reigne, and of the great iourney of one of their Queenes called Tha-  
leſtris to viſt Alexander the great : with the cauſe of her traualle.*

WHERE the firſte booke beegan with a Combate fought, and tried betweene two mighty Citties, for Principality, and Gouernement, the one hight Rome after called the head of the World (as ſome thinke by reaſon of a man's head found in the place where the Capitole did stand) the other Alba. To which Combat fiue Gentlemen of eyther city were appoyncted, and the victory chaunced to the Romayne fide: In this ſecond parte, in the Forefront, and firſt Nouell of the fame, is deſcribed the beginninge, continuauance and ende of a Woman's Commonwealth (an History rare and ſtroung to the vnlerned, ignorant of the world's fickle rulē ſtay) which contented with the mighty Princes and puissant Potentates for deſence of their kingdome, no leſſe than the Carthaginians and Romaynes did for theirs. But as it is no wonder to the ſkilful that a whole Monarche, and kingdome ſhould be intierly peopled with that Sexe: ſo to the not well trained in Histories, this may ſeeme miraculous. Wherefore not to ſtaye thee from the diſcourse of thofe ſtroung and Aduenturous women, diuers be of diuers opinions for the Etimologie of the word: whereof amongethe Grætians be diuers iudgements. Theſe Amazones were moft excellent warrires, very valiaunt, and without man's aduice did conquer mighty Coun-

treyes, famous Cities, and notable Kingdomes, continuinge of longe time in one Seigniory, and gouernment. These people occupied and enioyed a great part of Afia. Som writers deuide them into two Prouinces, one in Scythia in the North part of Afia: other by the hill Imaus, which at this day is called the Tartarian Scythia, different from that which is in Europa: the other sort of the Amazones were in Libia a prouince of Africa. But because the common sort of Authors doe vnderstand the Amazones to be those of Afia, I meane to leaue of the difference. The Scythians were a warlike people, and at the beginninge of their kingdome had two kinges, by whom they were gouerned. Notwithstandinge the nature of dominion beinge of it selfe ambitious, cannot abide any companion or equall: which caused these two kinges to be at variaunce, and afterwards the matter grew to ciuill warres, wherein the one beinge Victor, two of the principal and chiefe of the contrary faction, called Plinius and Scolopithos, were banished with a great number of their adherentes, al which did withdraw themselfes to the limits of Cappadocia in the lesser Afia, and in despite of the Countrey Pesantes, dwelled alonges the riuier of Thermodon, which entreth into the Sea Euxinum, otherwisse called Pontus. And they beinge made Lordes of the countrey, and of the places adioyninge, raygned for certayne yeares, vntill the Peasantes and their confederates made a conspiracy agaynst them: and assemblinge by Pollicy, ouercame and fleewe theym all. The newes of theyr death knownen to their Wyues dwellinge in theyr countrey, caused them to conceine great heauiness, and dolor extreme: and although they were women, yet did they put on manly courage, and determined to reuenge the death of their husbandes, by puttinge theyr hands to weapons wherewithal they did exercise themselfes very ofte: and that they might all be equall, and their sorrow common, they murdred certaine of their husbandes which remayned there, after the other were banished. Afterward beinge altogether, they made a great army, and forsooke their dwellinge places, refusinge the mariage of many futers: and arriuinge in the lande of their enemies (that made small account thereof, although foretolde of their approche) they sodaynly came vpon them vnprouided, and put them all to the sword. This beinge done, the

women tooke the gouernment of the Countrey, inhabitinge at the beginninge alonge the Riuier of Thermodon, where their husbandes were slayne. And although many Authors do differ in the situa-  
tion of the place where the Amazones did dwell, yet the truth is,  
that the beginning of their kingdome and of their Habitation was  
vpon that Riuier. But of their manyfolde conquestes, be engen-  
dered diuers opinions declared by Strabo, and others. They forti-  
fied themselues in those places, and wan other countreys adioyn-  
inge, choo singe amoung them two Queenes, the one named Martesia, and the other Lampedo. These two louingely deuided the  
army and men of Warre in two partes, eyther of them defendinge  
(with great hardinesse) the Landes which they had conquered: and  
to make themselues more dreadfull (sutch was the credite and va-  
nity of men that time) they fayned to be the daughters of Mars.  
Afterward these miraculous women liuing after this maner in peace  
and iustice, confidered that by succeffion of time, for want of  
daughters that might succeede, warres, and time, would extinguish  
their race. For thys cause they treated maryage with their neygh-  
bors named Gargarians (as Plinie fayeth) with condition, that  
vpon certayne tymes of the yeare, their husbandes should assemble  
together in some appoincted place, and vse them for certaine  
dayes vntyll they were with chylde, whych beinge done and  
knowen, they should returne home agayne to their own hou ses.  
If they brought forth daughters, they norished and trayned them  
vp in armes, and other manlik exercis, and to ride great Horse:  
they taught them to run at Base, and to followe the Chace. If they  
were deliuered of males, they fent them to their fathers, and if by  
chaunce they kept any backe, they murdred them, or else brake  
their armes and legs in sutch wife as they had no power to beare  
weapons, and serued for nothyng else but to spin, twist, and to  
doe other feminine labour. And for as much as these Amazones  
defended themselues so valiantly in the Warres with Bowe, and  
Arrowes, and perceyued that their breastes did very much impech  
the vse of that weapon, and other exercis of armes, they feared  
vp the right breastes of their yonge daughters, for which cause  
they were named Amazones, which signifieth in the Greeke  
tongue, wythout breastes, although some other do geeue vnto that

name any other meaninge. Afterwards, increasing by course of time in number and force, they made greate preparation of Weapons and other Engins for the Warres, and leauing their countrey (which they thought was very small) in the keepinge of some, whom they specially trusted, the rest marched abroade, conqueringe and subduinge all those which they found rebellious. And hauing passed the river of Tanais, they entred Europa, where they vanquished many countreys, directing their way towrdes Thracia, from whence they returned a while after, with great spoyle and victory, and comminge agayne into Afia, they brought many prouinces vnder their subiection, proceedinge euen to Mare Caspium. They Edified, and peopled an infinite number of good citties, amongs which, according to the opinion of diuers, was the famous City of Ephesus, the same beeinge the chiefe of al their Empire, and the principal place that stooode vpon Thermodon. They defended themselues in Warres with certayne Ter-  
gats, made in fashion of a halfe Moone, and entring into bat-  
taile vsed a certaine kinde of Flutes to geue the people corage to  
fight, as the Lacedemonians were wont to do. In this wise in-  
creased more and more the fame of those women, and so continued  
vntill the tyme that Hercules, Theseus, and many other valiaunt  
men liued in Græcia. The sayd Hercules, kinge Euristeus of  
Athenes commaunded, to proeceede with great force of people  
against the Amazones, and that hee should bringe vnto him the  
armures of the two Queenes, which then were two fisters, that is  
to say Antiopa and Oritia. At this commaundement Hercules  
incoraged with desire of honor and glory, accompanied with Theseus,  
and other his frends, sayled alongst Pontus, and arriuied in  
most conuenient place vpon the shoare of Thermodon, where he  
landed in sutch secret manner and with sutch oportunity of tyme,  
as Oritia, one of the two Queenes was gone out of the countrey  
with the greatest part of her women, to make Warre, and con-  
quer new Countreyes, in so mucht that he found Antiopa,  
which doubted nothinge, ne yet knewe of his comminge. Vpon  
which occasion, Hercules and his people surprisinge the Amazones  
vnwares, and although they entred into Fielde and did put them-  
selues in defence with sutch diligence as they could, yet they

were ouercome, and put theym to flight, and many of them slayne and the rest taken: amongst whom were the two sisters of the Queene, the one named Menalipe whych was Hercules prysoner, and the other Hipolita, the prysoner of Theseus. Certane Historians do say that they were subdued in a pitched field, and appoynted battle. And that afterwards the two sisters were vanquished in singuler Combat. The Queene Antiopa then seeinge this ouerthrow, and the takinge of her sisters, came to composition with Hercules, to whom shee gaue her armure to cary to Euristeus, vpon charge that he shoulde render vnto her, her sister Menalipe. But Theseus for no offer that she coulde make, woulde deliuer Hipolita, with whom he was so farre in loue, that he caried her home with him, and afterward toke her to wyfe, of whom hee had a sonne called Hippolitus. Hercules satisfied of his purpose, returned very ioyful of his victory. Oritia certified of these news, beinge then out of her countrey, conceyued no lesse shame than sorrow, who fearing greater damage, returned speedily with her women, the greater part whereof beinge of her opinion, perswaded Antiopa to be reuenged vpon the Grekes. For which purpose they made great preparation of warre. Afterwards leuyinge so great a number of the Amazones as they could, they sent to Sigilus king of Scythia for succour: who sent them his sonne Pisagoras, with a great number of horsemen, by whose helpe the Amazones passing into Europa, and Countrey about Athenes, they greatly annoyed their ennemy: but Pisagoras entred in quarel agaynst the Queene and her women, by meanes whereof, the Scythians could not fight, but withdrew themselues aside, whereby the Amazones (not able to support the force of the Greekes,) were ouercome, and the greatest part of them cut in peeces. Those which did escape, ran to the Scythians Campe, of whom they were defended: afterward being returned into their countrey, they liued in lesse force, and surety than before. In proesse of time the Greekes passed into Asia, and made a famous conquest of the Citty of Troy, when Penthefilea was Queene of the Amazones, who remembreinge the iniuries receyued by the Greekes, went with a great army to helpe the Troians: where the Queene did thinges worthy of remembraunce, but the Troianes vanquished, in many Skirmishes al the Amazones

were almost slayne. And Penthesilea amonges other, was killed by the hand of Achilles. Wherefore those that remained, returned into their countrey with so little power (in respect of that they had before) as with great difficulty they susteyned, and defended their old possessions, and so continued till the time that Alexander the great went into Afia, to make warre against the Hircanians. In which time one of their Queenes named Thalestris accompanied with a great number of the Amazones, went out of hir countrey with great desire to see and know Alexander. And approchinge the place where hee was, shee sent her Ambassadour vnto him to the ende that shee might obtayne safe conduct to see him, makinge him to vnderstand how mutch the Renoume of his personage had inflamed hir heart to see him. Whereof Alexander beeinge tolde, graunted hir hys safe conduct. By meanes whereof, after shee had chosen out some of hir principall women, leauinge the rest in a certayne place in very good order, shee went towardes Alexander, of whom shee was curteously entayned, and then with very good countenaunce, shee offered vnto him the effect of al her ability. Who prayed hir to tell him, if he were able to do her pleasure, and promised that hir request should be accomplished. Shee aunswere that hir comminge was not to demaund either landes or dominions, (whereof shee had sufficient) but rather to knowe and be acquainted with sutch a famous Prince as hee was, of whom shee had heard maruellous and straunge report. But the chiefeſt cause of hir comminge was, to pray him of carnal copulation, that shee might be conceiued with childe, and haue an heire begotten of ſo excellent a Prince, telling him that ſhe was come of noble kinde, and of high parentage, and that he ought not to disdaine hir vfe. Promifinge hym that if it pleased the Gods, that ſhe ſhould haue a daughter, ſhe would nourishe it her ſelfe, and make it her vniuersall Heire, and if it were a Sonne, ſhe would ſend it vnto him. Alexander asked her if ſhee woulde go with hym to the warres, which if ſhe would, hee promised hir his company. But ſhe excusinge hir ſelfe, aunswere that ſhe could not goe with hym without great shame, beſides the hazardinge the loſſe of her kingdome. Wherefore ſhe prayed him agayne to ſatisfie hir request. Finally ſhe kept company with Alexander by

the space of XIII dayes in publike and secret fort, which beinge expired, she tooke hir leaue, and returned home to hir prouince. But as it is the property of tyme to consume all thinges: euen fo the kingdome and power of the Amazones grew to vtter decay, no one futch nation at this day to be found. For what monstrosous Sexe was this that durst not only by many armies encountre with puissant nations, but also by singele Combate, to fight with that terrible personage Hercules, whose vnspeakable and incredible labours and victories, are by antiquity reported to be futch, as none but he, durst euer aduenture the like. What nation euer comparable to the Greekes, or the Athenian City? and yet these mankinde women for reuenge shronke not to peerce their Prouince. What like besieged towne as that of Troy was? and yet Penthefilea one of their Queenes with hir mayny, indeuoured to rayse the Greekes, that so many yeares had lien before the same. What Queene (nay what Stalant) durst sue for company of meanest man? any yet one of these presumed to begge the matche of the mighiest Monarch that euer ruled the world. The maners and qualities of which nation, bycause they were Women of no common spirite and boldnesse, bee thought good in the front of this seconde Volume to be described: bycause of dyuers Womens liues plentifull variety is offered in the sequele. And for that some mention

hath bin made of the great Alexander: and in what wise from vertue hee fell to vice, the seconde Nouell ensu-  
inge shall geue further aduer-  
tisement.

## THE SECOND NOUELL.

*The great pitie and continencie of Alexander the great and his louinge entertayntment of Sisigambis the wyfe of the great monarch Dariuſ after he was vanquished.*

GREAT Monarchs and Princes be the Gods, and only Rulers vpon Earth, and as they be placed by God's only prouydence and disposition, to conquere and rule the same, euen so in victorius batayles and honorable Exploytes, they ought to rule and order their conquestes like Gods: that is to saye, to vſe moderate behauour to their Captiues and flaues, ſpecially to the weaker ſort and feminine kynde, whom like Tyrauntes and barbarous, they ought not to corrupt and abuse, but like Chriftians and vertuous victors, to cheriſh and preſerue their honour. For what can bee ſafe to a woman (ſayde Lucrece, when ſhe was rauished by the Romayn Tarquine) her chrafty beinge defiled? Or what can be ſafe to a man, that geueth himſelfe to incontinency? For when he hath depoyled the virgin, robbed the wyfe, or abuſed the Wydow of their honor and good name, they protrude themſelues into many Myseries, they bee impudent, Vnſhamefaste, Aduenturous, and Careleſſe howe many myſchieves they doe. And when a Prince or Gouerner doth geue himſelfe to licentious life, what miſchieues, what rapes, what murders doth hee commit? No frende, no Foe, no ſubiect, no enemy doth he ſpare or defende. Contrarywife, the merciſull and continent captayne, by ſubduinge hys affeſtions recovereth immortall fame, which this History of kinge Alexander full well declarereth. And because before we ſpake of that great conqueror in the Nouell of the Amazones, and of the repaire of Queene Thaleſtris for vſe of his body, at what tyme (as Curtius ſayth) he fell from vertue to vice: we purpose in thyſ, to declare the great contyencie and mercy that hee vſed to Sisigambis, the wife of the Perſian prince Dariuſ, and briefly to touch the time of his abuſed life, which in this maner doth begin. Alexander the great hauing vanquished Dariuſ and his infinite army, and retiringe wyth hys hoaſt from the purſute and slaughter of the Perſians, entred into

their campe to recreate himselfe. And beinge with his familiers in the mids of his banquet, they sodaynly heard a pitifull cry, with straung howlinge and cryinge out, which did very much aston them. The Wyfe and Mother of Darius, with the other noble women newly taken Prisoners, were the occasion of that present noyse, by lamentinge of Darius, whom they beleeuued to be slayne, and which opinion they conceyued through one of the Eunuches, which standinge before Their tent doore, saw a Souldier beare a peece of Darius Diademe. For which cause Alexander, pityinge their misery, sent a noble man called Leonatus to signifie vnto them that they were deceyued, for that Darius was liuing. Repayring towards the Tent where the women were with certayne armed men, he sent word before, that he was comminge to them with message from the kinge. But when sutch as stoode at the tent doore saw armed men, they thought they had bene sent to murder the Ladies: for which cause they ran in to them, cryinge that their last houre was come, for the souldiers were at hande to kille them. When Leonatus was entred the Pavillion, the Mother and wife of Darius fell downe at hys feete, intreatinge him that before they were slayne, he would suffer them to bury Darius, accordinge to the order and maner of his Countrey, after the performance of which obsequies, they were content (they sayd) willingly to suffer death. Leonatus assured them, that both Darius was aliue, and that there was no harme ment towardes them, but should remayne in the same stafe they were in before. When Sifigambis heard those wordes, she suffered her selfe to bee lifted vp from the grounde, and to receyue some comforte. The next day, Alexander with great diligence buried the bodies of sutch of his owne men as coulde be founde, and willed the same to be done to the noble men of the Persians geuinge licence to Darius mother to Bury so many as she liste, after the custome of her Countrey. She performed the same to a few that were next of her kin, accordinge to the habillity of their presente fortune, for if shee should haue vsed the Persians Pompe therein, the Macedonians might haue enuyed it, whych beinge victors, vsed no great curiositie in the matter. When the due was performed to the dead, Alexander signified to the women prisoners, that hee himselfe would come to

visite them, and causinge futch as came with him to tary without, he onely with Ephestion entred in amongs them. The same Ephestion of all men was best beloued of Alexander, brought vp in his company from his youth, and most priuy with him in all thinges. There was none that had futch liberty to speke his mynde playnly to the kinge as hee had, whych hee vsed after futch forte, that he seemed to doe it by no authority, but by sufferaunce. And as he was of like yeres vnto him, so in shape and personage he did somewhat excell him. Wherefore the Women thinkinge Ephestion to be the kinge, did fall down and worship him (as their Countrey maner was to do to kinges) till futch time as one of the Eunuches that was taken prisoner, shewed which of them was Alexander. Then Sisigambis fell down at his feete, requiringe pardon of her Ignorance, forsomutch as she did neuer see him before. The kinge tooke her vp by the hande, and sayd: "Mother you be not deceiued: for this is Alexander also." Then he behaued himselfe after futch a maner, that hee exceeded in contynency and compasssion, all the kinges that had bin before his time. He entartayned the two Queenes with those virgins that were of excellent beauty, so reuerently, as if they had bin his sisters. He not onely absteyned from al violation of Darius wyfe, which in beauty excelled all the women of hir time, but also tooke great care and diligence, that none other should procure her any dishonour. And to all the women he commaunded their ornaments, and apparell to be restored: so that they wanted nothinge of the magnificence of their former estate, sauinge only the assured trust that creatures want in misery: which thinges confidered by Sisigambis, she said vnto the kinge: "Sir, your goodnes towards vs, doth deserue that we should make the same prayer for you, that whilome we did for Darius: and we perceive you worthy to passe so great a king as he was, in felicity and good fortune, that abound so in iustice and clemency. It pleafeth you to terme me by the name Mother and Queene: but I confesse my selfe to bee your handmayde. For both I conceiue the greatnesse of my stafe past, and feele that I can bear this present seruitude. It lieth only in your hands how we shal be delt withall, and whether you will make vs notable to the worlde through your clemency or cruelty." The king comforted them al

that he might, and willinge them to be of good cheere tooke Darius sonne in his armes. Thereat the childe was nothing afraid, hauing neuer seene him before, but toke and imbraced him about the necke. He was so moued with the constancy of the childe, as he beheld Ephestion, and sayde, "Oh, I would that Darius had had some part of this childe's gentlenesse." Which mercy, contynency, humility and constancy of minde in Alexander, if hee had still kept to his latter daies, might haue bin accoumpted mutch more fortunate than he was, when hauinge subdued all Asia from Hellefond to the ocean Sea, he did counterfayte the Triumphes of Bacchus. Or if amonges the residue of his conquests, hee would haue trauyaled to ouercome his pride and wrath, beinge vices inuincible. Or in his dronkennes abstayned from the slaughter of his Nobility, and not to haue put to death those excellent men of warre without iudgement, which helped him to conquer so many Nations: but at this time the greatnes of his fortune had not yet altered his nature, although afterwards he could not beare his victories with that Vertue, wherewith he wan them: for when he gaue himself to feasting and banquettinge, he vsed the company of Harlots: amonges whom there was one Thais, who vpon a day in hir dronkennesse, affirmed to Alexander, that he should wonderfully win the fauour of the Greeks, if hee commaunded the Palace of Persepolis to be set on fire. The destruction whereof (she sayd) they greatly desired, for so mutch as the same was the chiefe seat of the kings of Persia, which in times past had destroyed so many great Citties. When the dronken harlot had giuen her sentence, there were other present, who being likewise dronken, confirmed hir wordes. Alexander then that had in him more inclination of heat than of pacience, sayd: "Why do we not then recouer the fauour of the Greeks by settinge this Citty on fier?" They were all chafed with drinkinge, and rose immediately vpon those words to burne that city in their dronkennesse, which the men of warre had spared in their fury. The kinge himselfe first, and after his guestes, his seruautes and his Concubines, set fier in the Pallace, which beinge builded for the most part of Ceder trees, became so denly in a flame. When the army that was encamped neere vnto the City, sawe the fire, which they thought had ben kindled by

some casuality, they came runninge to quenche the same againe. But when they sawe the kynge there prefente increasyng the fyre, they poured downe the water whych they broughte, and helped lykewyse the matter forwardes. Thus the Pallace that was the heade of the whole Orient, from whence so many nations before had fetched their lawes to liue vnder, the Seat of so many kynges, the onely Terror sometyme of Greece, the same that had bin the sender forth of 9000 Ships, and of the armes that ouerflowed all Europa, that made Brydges ouer the Sea, and vndermined mountaynes where the Sea hath now his course, was consumed and had his ende, and neuer rose againe in all the age that did ensue: for the kynges of Macedon vsed other Citties which be now in the Persians handes. The destruction of this city was sutch, that the foundation thereof at thys day could not be found, but that riuer of Araxes doth shew where it stooode, which was distant from Persepolis xx. furlonges, as the Inhabitants rather doe beleue than know. The Macedonians were ashamed that so noble a Citty was destroyed by their kinge in his dronkennes: yet at length it was turned into an earnest matter, and were content to thincke it expedient that the Citty shoulde haue ben destroyed after that maner. But it is certayne, that when Alexander had taken his rest, and was become better aduised, hee repented him of his doinge: and after he had kept company with Thalestris aforesayde, which was Queene of the Amazones, hee tourned his contynency and moderation (beinge the most excellent vertues appearinge in any kind of estate) into pride and voluptuousnes, not esteeminge his countrey, customes, nor the holosome temperance that was in the vsages, and discipline of kynges of Macedon. For he iudged their ciuill vsage and maner, to be ouer base for his greatnesse, but did counterfaite the height and pompe of the kings of Persia, representinge the greatnesse of the Gods. Hee was content to suffre men there to fall downe flat vpon the grounde and worship him, and accustomed the victors of so many nacions, by little and little to seruile offices, couetinge to make them like vnto his Captiues. He ware vpon his head a Diademe of Purple interpaled with white, like as Darius was accustomed: and fashioned his aparell after the maner of the Persians, without scrupulosity of any euil token that is signi-

fied, for the victorer to change his habite into the fashyon of him whom he had vanquished: and although he vaunted, that he ware the spoyles of his enemies, yet with thofe spoiles he put vpon him their euil maners, and the insolency of the mynde followed the pride of the apparell. Befides he fealed futch Letters as he fent into Europa, with his accustomed feale, but all the Letters he fent abroade into Afia, were fealed with Darius Ringe. So it appeared that one minde could not beare the greatneffe that appertayned to two. He apparelled also his frends, his Captayns, and his horfemen in Perfian apparell, wherat though they grudged in their mindes, yet they durft not refuse it, for feare of his displeasure. His courte was replenished with Concubins, for he still maintained thrie hundred, and threescore that belonged to Darius, and amonge them were flocks of Eunuches accustomed to performe the vfe of women. The olde Souldiours of Philip naturally abhorringe futch thinges, manyfestoyle withftoode to be infected with futch voluptuousnes, and strange customes: wherevpon there rose a general talke and opinion throughout the campe, that they had lost more by the victory, than they won by the wars. For when they fawe themfelues ouercome in futch exceffe, and forayne customes fo to preuayle, they iudged it a fimple guerdon of their longe beeinge abroade, to returne home in prisoners maner. They began to be ashamed of their kinge, that was more like to futch as were subdued, than to them that were victorious: and that of a kinge of Macedon, was become a Prince of Perzia, and one of Darius Courtiers. Thus this noble Prince from continency and mercy fell into all kynde of disorder, the originall whereof, hee tooke by delite in Women, which beinge vfed in fort lawfull, be great comfortes and delights, otherwife, the very fpringe of all cruelty and mischife.

## THE THIRD NOUELL.

*Timoclia, a gentlewoman of Thebes, understandinge the couetous desire of a Thracian knight, that had abused hir, and promised her mariage, rather for her goods than loue, well acquited hir selfe from his falshooде.*

QVINTUS CURTIUS, that notable Historiographer, remembreinge the stout fact of thys Thebane gentlewoman, amonges other the Gestes and Facts of Alexander the great, I haue deemed not alto-geather vnfitt for this place, to reueale the fine and notable pollicy deuised by her, to rid hir selfe from a couetous caitife of the Thracian kniude, who for lucre rather than loue, for gayne than grati-tude, promyfed golden Hyles to thys dystressed poore Gentle-woman. But shee in the ende payinge hym hys well deserued hyre, was liked and praysed of Alexander for hir aduenturous faęte, beinge not one of the least vertues that shined in him, before hee grewe to excessyue abuse: but bycause Plutarch in hys Treatyse *De claris mulieribus*, more at large recounteth this Hystory, I haue thought good almost (*verbatim*) to follow him. Theagenes a Gentleman of Thebes, ioyninge hir selfe wyth Epaminondas, and Pe-lopidas, and with other noble men, for preseruation of their coun-try of Greece, was slayne in the chace of his enemyes, as he pur-sued one of the chyefe of hys aduersaries, the same cryinge oute vnto him: "Whether doest thou pursue vs, Theagenes?" "Euen to Macedonia :" aunswered hee. Thys Gentleman thus slayne had a sister, whose vertue and neerenesse of kin by noble deedes, she well witnesseed, although she was not well able to manifest her vertue, for the aduersity of the tyme, but by pacient sufferance of the common calamityes. For after Alexander had won the Citty of Thebes, the Souldiours greedy of Spoyle runninge vp and downe the Citty, euyer of them chauncinge vpon futch Booty as Fortune offred them, it hapned that a Captayne of the Thracian horfmen, a barbarous, and wycked wretch, came to the house of Timoclia, who somewhat neere the kynge both in name, and Kyn, in manners, and conditions, was greatly different from him: hee

neyther regardynge the noble houfe, ne yet the chasfity of hir forepast life, vpon a tyme after supper, glutted and swilled wyth abundance of wine, caused Timoclia forcibly to be haled to his dronken Couch: and not contented with the forced wronge, as they were in talke together, diligently demaunded of her, if she had in no place hidden any Golde or Siluer, and partly by threates, and partly by promise to keepe her as his wyfe, endeououred to get that he desired: but shee being of ready wit, takinge that offered occasion of her aduersary: "I would to God," (sayd shee) "that it had beene my lucke to haue died before thys night, rather then to liue: for hitherto haue I kept my body pure and vntouched from all despite, and villany, vntill vnlucky fate forced mee to yelde to thy disfordinate lust: but sith my hap is futch, why shold I conceale thos thyngs that bee thine owne, thou beinge mine onely tutor, lord and husband (as thou sayst) when the Gods shal please to bringe the same to passe: for by thy will and pleasure must I vnhappy Thebane Wench be ruled and gouerned. Ech vanquished wight must subdue their wyl and minde to their lord and victor: I beinge thy flauue and prisoner, must needes by humble meanes yelde vp my selfe to the vnfaciate heft of thy puissant heart: what shall let me to disclose the pray that thou defirest, that we both, if thy minde be futch, may rather ioye the same, than the foyle filth of stinkinge Earth, shold deuoure futch spoyle, which for feare, and hope of future fortune, I buried in the bowels of the same. Then marke my words, beare them well in mynde, sith lot had wrought me this mishap. I hauinge plenty of coyned siluer, and of fyned gold no little store befydes futch Jewels as belongeth to the settinge forth of the grace of woman's beauty, of valure and price inestimable: when I saw this Citty brought to futch distresse as vnpossible to be sauad from takinge, all the same I threw away, or more truely to say, I whelmed altogether in a drye Ditche voyde of water, which my fact fewe or none did knowe. The Pit is couered with a little couer aboue, and thickly round about beset with bushes and thornes. Those goods will make thee a welthy perfonage, none in all the Campe to be compared to thee, the riches and value whereof, wyl witnes our former fortune, and the state of our gorgeous, and stately houfe: all those doe I be-

queathe to thee, as on whom I thinke them well bestowed.” This greedy Lecher, laughinge to him selfe for this fodaine pray, and thinking that his lady fast holden within his barbarous armes had tolde him truth, routed in his filthy Couch till the day had discouered the morning light, then gapinge for his hoped gaine, he rose and prayed her to tell the place, that he might recouer the same. She then brought him into her Garden, the doore whereof she commaunded to be shut, that none might enter. He in his Hose and Doublet, went downe to the bottome of the Pit: when Timoclia perceiued him down, she beckned for certaine of her maids, and rolled downe diuers great stones with her own hands, which of purpose she had caused to be placed there, and commaunded hir maides to tumble downe the like. By which meanes she killed that lecherous and couetous vilayne, that rather carked to satisfie his desire, than coueted to obserue hys promisd faith. Which afterwardes beinge knownen to the Macedonians, they haled his body out of the Pit: for Alexander had made proclamation, that none should dare to kill any Thebane, and therefore apprehendinge Timoclia, they brought her to the kinge, accusinge her for doinge that murder: who by her countenaunce, and stature of body, and by her behauour and grauity of maners, beheld in her the very image of gentle kinde. And first of al, he asked her what she was: to whom boldly with constant cheere, she stoutly answered: “Theagenes was my brother (said she) who beinge a valiaunt Captaine, and fightinge against you for the common safegard of the Greeks, was flaine at Chæronea, that we together might not sustaine, and proue the miseries, wherewith we be now oppressed: but I rather than to suffer violence vnworthy of our race and stocke, am in your maiestie’s presence brought ready to refuse no death: for better it were for mee to dye, than feele futch another night, except thou commaunde the contrary.” These wordes were vttered in futch ruffull plight, as the standers by could not forbeare to weepe. But Alexander sayinge, that hee not onely pitied the woman endewed with so noble wit, but mutch more wondred at her vertue and wisedome, commaunded the Princes of his army, to foresee no wronge or violence to be done to the Gentlewoman. He gaue order also, that Timoclia and al

her kin, should be garded and defended from slaughter or other wronges. What say yee (good Ladies) to the heart of this gentlewoman that durst be so bolde to stome this Caytife wretch to death, and for wronge done to her bodie til that tyme vntouched, to wronge the corps of him that fauoured of no gentle kinde: who rather for earthly mucke, than for loue of such a pleasaunt prisoner, exchaunged Loue for Gold? but note hereby what force the puritie of mynde vnwilling of beastlye lust doth carye in it selfe: a simple woman voyde of helpe, not backed with defence of husbande's ayde, doth bring a mighty Captayne, a strong and lofty lubber to enter into a Caue, and when shee saw her best aduauntage, thacked him with stones, vntil he groaned foorth his grieslye ghost. Such is the might and proweſſe of chas-  
titie: no charge to burdennous or weightye for such  
a vertue, no enterprize too harde for a mynde  
so pure and cleane.

## THE FOURTH NOUELL.

*Ariobarzanes great steward to Artaxerxes king of Persia, goeth about to excede his soueraigne lord and maister in curtefie: where in be conteyned many notable and pleasaunt chaunces, besides the great patience and loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd Ariobarzanes.*

A QUESTION is mooued manye times among learned men and Gentlemen addi&ted to the seruice of the Court, whether commendable deede, or curteous and gentle fact done by the Gentleman or Courtier towardes his soueraine Lord, ought to be called Liberalitie and Curtesie, or rather Band and Dutie. Which question is not proponed with out greate reason. For so muche as ech man doth know, that a seruaunt do what he can for his Mayster, or lette him employ the vttermost of his endeouour, al the labor and trauayle he bestoweth, all trouble and daunger which he sustayneth, is to little, yea and the same his very bounden duty. Haue wee not red of many, and knowne the lyke that to gratifye their prince and mayster, haue into a thoufande daungers and like number of deaths, aduentured their own propre liues? Marcus Antonius that notable oratour beying accused of incest, and broughte to the iudgement seate, his accusers required that his seruante should be called, for because he bare the candel before his maister, when hee went to do the deede, who feyng his mayster's life and death to depend vpon his euidence, vtterly denied the fa&t: and notwithstanding that he was whipped, racked, and suffered other cruel tormentes, would rather haue loste his lyfe than accuse and betray his mayster. I could alleage and bring forth in place, the example of Mycithus, the seruaunt of one Anaxilaus Messenius, the fidelitye of the seruauntes of Plotinus Plancus, the faythful mayden called Pythias, that waited vpon Octavia, the chraft Empreffe and wife of that monster Nero, with diuers other: but that I thinke they be to the learned wel knownen, and of the vnlearned the vertue of seruauntes fidelitye is greatly liked and commended: but if the faythful seruaunt know that his desertes do gayne the grace and fauoure of

his mayster, what trauayles, what payns ought he to suffer to mayntayne his reputation and to encrease the fauour obtayned? for as the common prouerbe and wise sayinge reporteth, that the vertve is no lesse to conserue Frendship gotten, than the wisedome was great to get and win the same. Other there be which do contrarily contend, and with very stonge argumentes do force to proue that al which the seruant doth besydes his duetye and beyond the obligation, wherein he is bound to his mayster, is and ought to be termed, Liberality, which is a matter to prouoke his patronē and mayster to deuyse new benefytes for his seruaunte: and that at al tymes when a man doth his duty and seruice appoynted by his mayster, executing the same with all diligence and industry requisite therunto, that then he deserueth to be rewarded. Which is not to be discommended. For no true and honest seruant will refuse any trauayle for commodity of his mayster, ne yet discrete and wyse mayster will leaue the same vnrewarded according to that portion of ability wherewith he is possessed: but leauinge questions and disputation aside procede we to that which this Nouel purposeth. I say then that there was in the kyngdome of Persia, a kyng called Artaxerxes, a man of most noble mynde, and of great proweſſe in armes. This was he that firſte beyng a priuate man of armes, not hauing as yet obtayned any degree in the fielde, kylled Artabanus the laſt kinge of the Arsacides, whose ſouldiour he was, and recouered the Persian kingdome, which was then in the Macedonians ſubiection (by the death of Darius, which was vanquished by Alexander the great) the ſpace of 538 yeares. This noble gentleman hauing deliuered all Persia, and created king, kept a princely court, wherin were many magnificent faſtes and vertuous deedes exercized and done, and hee himſelfe moſte noble in all affayres, besydes the tytles which hee worthelye wanne in many bloody battels, was eſtemed throughout the eaſt part of the worlde, to be the moſt liberal and magnanimous prince that in any age euer raigned: in feaſtes and bankets he was an other Lucullus, royally entertaining ſtrangers that repayred to his court. This king had a Senescall or ſteward, named Ariobarzanes, whose office was, that when the king made any pompos or publike eaſt, to mount ypon a whyte Courſer with a Mace of gold in

his hand, and to ride before the esquiers and Sewers for the king's own mouth, and those also that bare the king's meat in vessel of gold couered with fine napery, wrought and purled with most beautiful workmanship of filke and gold. This office of Senefcall was highly estemed and commonly wont to be geuen to one of the chiefest Barons of the Realm. Wherfore this Ariobarzanes besydes noble Linage and incomparable ritches was the most curtious and liberal knight that frequented the court whose immoderate expence was such, as leuing the mean, wherin al vertu confisteth, by reason of outrage which many times he vfed he fel into the vice of prodigality, wherby he femed not only in curtious dedes to compare with the king, but also contended to excel him. One day the king for his recreation called for the chessebord, requiring Ariobarzanes to kepe him company, which game in those dais among the Persians was in greate vfe, in such wise as a player at the Chestes was no les commended then amonge vs in these dais an excelent Oratour or famous learned man: yea and the verye same game in common vfe in the Court, and noble mens houses of oure time, no doubt very commendable and meete to be practised by all states and degrees. The king and Ariobarzanes being sette downe at a table in the greate Hall of the Pallace, one right against another, accompanied with a great number of noble personages and Gentlemen lookinge vpon them, and marking their playe with greate silence, they began to counter one another with the Chesse-men. Ariobarzanes, whether it was that he played better than the kinge, or whether the kinge took no heede to his game, or what so euer the occasion was, hee coursed the king to such a narow straight, as he could not auoid, but within two or three draughtes, he must be forced to receive the Checkemate: which the king perciuing, and considering the daunger of the Mate, by and by there grew a greater colour in his face than was wont to bee, and imagininge how hee mighte auoyde the mate, besydes his blushing he shaked his head, and fetched out diuers fighes, whereby the standers by that marked the game, perciued that hee was dryuen to his shifte. The Senefcall espyinge the kinge's demeanour, and seeing the honest shamefastenesse of the king, would not suffer him to receiue such a foyle, but made a draught by remouing his

knighte backe, to open a way for the King to passe, as not onely hee deliuered him from the daunger of the Mate, but also lost one of his Rockes for lacke of taking hede: whereupon the game rested equall. The King (who knew the good nature and noble mynde of his seruaunt, by experiance of the same in other causes) fayning that hee had ouerseene the takinge of hys rocke, gaue ouer the game, and rysing vp, sayd: "No more Ariobarzanes, the game is yours, and I confesse my selfe ouercome." The king thought that Ariobarzanes did not the same so much for curtefie, as to bynde his soueraigne lorde and king by benefit to recompence his subiecte's like behauour, which he did not very well like, and therfore would play no more. Notwithstanding the king neither by signe or deede, ne yet in talke, shewed any token of displeasure for that curtefie done. How be it, he would that Ariobarzanes in semblable a<sup>c</sup>t, shoulde abstayne to shewe himselfe courteous or liberal, except it were to his inferiours and equalles, because it is not conuenient for a seruant to contend with his maister in those qualityes. Not long after the kinge beyng at Persepolis (the principal citye of Persia,) ordayned a notable day of hunting of diuers beastes of that countrey breed: and when all thinges were in a readinesse he with the most part of his Court repayred to the pastyme. When they were come into the place, the king commaunded a woodde to be set about with nettes and toiles, and appointed eche man where he shoulde stand in most conuenient place, and he himselfe attended with the dogs and hornes to cause the beastes to issue forth oute of their Caues. And beholde, they raysed a wyld beast, which with greate swyftnesse leapte ouer the nettes and ranne awaie with greate sped. The King feyng that strange beast, purposed to pursue him to death: and makinge a signe to certayne of his noble men which hee desired to keepe him compaニー hee gaue the rayne and spurre to his horse, and followinge the chace Ariobarzanes was one of those noble men which pursued the game. It chaunced that day the kinge rode vpon a horse, that was the swiftest runner in his stable, which hee esteemed better then a thousande other, as wel for his velocity, as for his readinesse in factes of armes. Thus following with bridle at will, the flying rather then running beast, they wer deuided far from their

company, and by reason of the kinge's spedines, none was able to followe him but Ariobarzanes, and behind him one of his seruants vpon a good horse which alwaies he vsed in hunting matters, which horse was counted the beste in all the court. And thus following the chace with galloping sped Ariobarzanes at length espyed the horse of his soueraigne lord had lost his shooes before, and that the stones had surbated his hoofes, wherupon the kyng was driven either to geue ouer the chace or else to marre his horse: and neyther of these two necessities but would haue greatly displeased the kinge, that perceiued not his horse to be vnshod. The Senescall did no sooner espye the same but sodainly dismounted from his owne, caused his man to deliuer vnto him a hammer and nailes (which for such like chaunces he always caried aboue him) and toke of two shooes from the horse feete of his good horse, to set vpon the kynge's not caring for his own rather then the king should forgoe his pleasure: wherfore hallowing the kinge which was earneftly bent vppon the chace, tolde him of the daunger wherein his horse was for lacke of shooes. The kinge hearinge that lighted from his horse, and seyng two shooes in Ariobarzanes manne's hand, thinking that Ariobarzanes had brought them with him, or that they were the shooes which fell from his owne, taried stil vntil his horse was shod. But when he saw the notable horse of his senescall vnshod before, then he thought that to be the curtefie of Ariobarzanes, and so did let the matter passe, studying by lyke meanes to requite him with Curtefie, which forced himselfe to surmount in the same: and when his horse was shod, he gaue the same to Ariobarzanes in rewarde. And so the king chose rather to lose his pleasure of hunting, then to suffer himselfe by his man to be excelled in curtefie, wel noting the stoutnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde which seemed to haue a will to contend with his prince in factes renoumed and liberal. The senescall thought it not conuenient to refuse the gyft of his liege lord, but accepted the same with like good will as before he shod his horse, still expectinge occasion how he might surpas his master in curtefie and so to bind him to requite the same againe. They had not taried there long, but many of those that followed did ouertake them. And then the king got vp vpon a spare horse and

returned to the city with all his company. Within few daies after the king by proclamation sommoned a solemne and pompos iust and tryumph at the tilt, to be done vpon the kalends of May next ensuing. The reward appointed the viitor and best Doer in the same was a couragious and goodly curser with a brydle and byt of fine gold rychly wrought, a saddle correspondent of passing great pryce, the furniture and trappers for the brydle and saddle of like cost and workmanship, the rayns wer twoo chaynes of golde very artificially made, the barbe and couerture of the horfe of cloth of golde fringed round about with like gold, ouer which horfe was placed a fine sword the hiltes an chape wherof together with the scabard wer curiously beset with Pearles and Precious stones of Inestimable value. On the other syde was placed a very beautiful and stonge Mace, verye cunninglye wrought with damaskin. The Horfe was placed in forme of triumph, and besydes the same all the Armours and weapons meete for a Combatante Knyghte, riche and fayre without comparison. The Placart was marueyous and stonge, the Launce was guilte and bygge, as none greater in all the troupe of the chalengers and defendauntes. And all those furnitures were appoynted to be geuen to him that should do best that day. A greate assembyle of straungers repayred to that solemne feast, as wel to doe deedes of Armes, as to looke vpon that pompos tryumph. Of the kynge's Subiectes there was neither knyghte nor baron, but in ryche and sumptuous apparell appeared that day, amonges whom, of chiefest fame the kynge's eldest sonne was the fyrist that gaue his name, a Gentlemanne very valorous, and in deedes of armes of passing valour brought vp from his very youth, and trayned in the felde and other warlyke exercisces. The Senescall also caused his name to be inrolled: the like didde other knyghtes as wel Persians as other straungers: for that the proclamation was general, with safeconduete for all forrayners, noble men or other that should make their repayre. The king had elected three auncient Barons to be Judges and Arbitratours of their deedes, futch as in their tyme for their owne personages had bene very valiant, and in many enterpryses well exercised, men of great discretion and iudgement. Their stage was placed in the middes of the Listes, to viewe and

marke the Counterbuffes and blowes of the Combatants. We nede not to remember, ne ought to forget the number of ladies and gentlewomen assembled out of al partes to behold and view this triumphe, and peraduenture eche knight that ran that day was not without his amorous lady to note and behold his actiuity and prowesse, euery of them wearing his ladie's sleeue, gloue, or other token, according to the common custome in such lyke cases. At the day and houre appoynted appeared all the Combatantes in greate Tryumphe and Pompe, with rych furnitures as wel vpon them selues as vpon their horse. The triumphe begon and many Launces broken in good order, on either fides Iudgement was geuen generally that the Senescall Ariobarzanes had wonne the prise, and next vnto him the kinge's sonne did passe them all, for that none of al the combatantes hadde broken past v. staues, and the sayd yong Gentleman had in the face of his aduersary broken in pieces ix. at the leaft. The Senescall brought for the eleuen launces, which were couragiously and honourably broken, by breaking of the last staffe which was the twelfth he was iudged most worthy. The condition wheroft was, that euery combatant should runne twelue courses with twelue launces, and he whiche should first breake the same should without doubt or further controuerſie obtayne the reward. What pleasure and delight the king did conceiue to fee his sonne behauing him selfe so valiantly that day, I referre to the iudgement of fathers, that haue children endued with like actiuity. But yet it greued him that the Senescall had the greater aduantage, and yet being a matter so wel knownen and discerned by the Judges, like a wyfe man he discembled his countenaunce. On the other fyde, the yong Gentleman which did combate before his amorous ladye was very sorrowful for that he was voyde of hope of the chiefest honour. So that betwene the father and the sonne, was one very thought and desire: but the vertue and valor of the Senescall did cut of eythers greefe. Now the tyme was come that the Senescall should runne with his last staffe mounted vpon the horse which the king gaue him when he was an huntyng, who knowing wel that the king was very desirous that his son should excell all men, perceyued likewyse the inflamed mynd of the yonge gentleman for the prefence of his lady to

aspyre the honour, purposed to geue ouer the honour atchieued by himselfe, to leaue it to the sonne and heir of his lorde and mayster : and yet hee knewe ful wel that those his curtesies pleased not the king, neuertheleffe he was determined to perseuer in his opinion, not to bereue the king of his glory, but onely to acquire fame and honour for him selfe. But fully mynded that the honour of the tryumphe should be geuen to the kynge's sonne, he welded the staffe within his reste, and when he was ready to encounter (because it was he that shold come agaynst him,) he let fal his launce out of his handes, and said : " Farewel this curtesie of myne, sith it is no better taken." The kinge's sonne gaue a gentle counterbuffe vpon the Placarde of the Senescall, and brake his staffe in many pieces, which was the x. course. Many heard the wordes that the senescall spake when his staffe fell out of his handes, and the standers by well perceiued that he was not minded to geue the laste blowe, bicause the king's sonne might haue the honor of the triumph, which he desyred so much. Then Ariobarzanes departed the listes: and the Prince withoute any great refistance wan the prise and vi<sup>t</sup>ory. And so with sounde of diuerse instruments the prise borne before him, he was throughout the citie honorably conueyed, and among other, the senescall stille waited vpon him with mery countenance, greatly praising and exalting the valiance of the yong Prince. The king which was a very wise man, and many times hauing experience of the chialry of his Senescall at other Tourneis, Iustes, Barriers, and Battels, and always finding him to be prudent, politike, and for his person very valiant, knewe to well that the fall of his launce was not by chaunce but of purpose, continuued his opinion of his Senescall's liberalitye and courage. And to say the trouth, such was his exceeding curtesie, as fewe may be found to imitate the same. We daily se that many be liberall of Fortune's goods inuestinge some with promotion, some with apparel, Gold and Siluer, Iewels and other things of great value. We see also noble men, bountifull to theyr seruaunts, not onely of mouable thiugs, but also of Castels, Lands, and Cities: what shal we speake of them, which will not sticke to sheade their owne bloud, and many tymes to spende theire lyfe to do their frendes good? Of those and such like examples, all re-

cordes be full: but a man that contemneth fame and glorie or is of his owne honour liberal, is never founde. The vi&torious Cap-tayne after the bloody battayle, giueth the spoyle of his ennemis to his fouldiours, rewardeth them with prisoneours, departeth vnto them the whole praye, but the glory and honor of the battel he referueth vnto himselfe. And as diuinely the father of Romaine eloquence doth say, how that philosophers by recording the gloriouſ gestes and dedes of others, do ſeke after glory themſelues. The king was diſpleased with theſe noble dedes and curteſie of his Senefcall, becauſe he thought it not mete or decente that a Subie&te and ſeruant ſhould compare with his lord and mayſter: and therfore did not bare him that louing and chereſul countenance which hee was wont to doe. And in the ende, purpoſed to let him know, that he ſpent his brayns in very great errour, if he thought to force his mayſter to be bound or beneficial vnto him, as heraſter you ſhal perceiue. There was an auncient and approued cuſtome in Perſia, that the kinges yerely did ſolemnize an Anniuersarye of theyr Coronation with greate feaſt and tryumph, vpon which day all the Barons of the kyngdome were bounde to repayre to the courte where the king by the ſpace of viii. dayes with ſumptuous bankets and other feaſtes kept open house. Vpon the Anniuersary day of Artaxerxes' coronation, when al thinges were diſpoſed in order, the king defirous to accompliſh a certayne conceiued determination commaunded one of his faythful chamberlaynes ſpedely to ſeeke out Ariobarzanes, which he did, and telling him the kinge's meſſage, ſayde: "My lorde Ariobarzanes, the king hath willed me to ſay vnto you, that his pleaſure is, that you in your own perfon euēn forthwith ſhal cary your white ſteede and Courſer, the mace of gold, and other enſignes due to the office of Senefcal vnto Darius, your mortal enemy, and in his maiestye's behalfe to ſay vnto him, that the kyng hath geuen him that office, and hath clerely diſpoſeffed you thereof." Ariobarzanes hearing thoſe heauy newes, was like to dye for ſorroe, and the greater was his grief, becauſe it was geuen to his greatest enemy. Notwithſtanding lyke a gentleman of noble ſtomacke, would not in open appearaunce ſignifie the diſpleaſure which hee conceiued within, but with mery cheare and louing countenaunce

answering the chamberlayne: "Do my right humble commendations vnto the king's maiesty, and say vnto him, that like as he is soueraine lord of all this land, and I his faythful subiecte, euen so mine office, my lyfe, landes and goods, be at his disposition, and that willinglye I wil performe his heft." When he had spoken those woordes hee rendred vp his office to Darius, who at dinner serued in the same. And when the king was set, Ariobarzanes with comly countenance sate downe among the rest of the lords, which sodenlye deposition and depriuation, did maruelously amaze the whole assembly, euery man secretly speking their mind either in praise or dispraise of the fact. The king all the dinner time, did marke and note the countenance of Ariobarzanes, which was pleasaunt and merie as it was wont to be, whereat the kinge did greatly maruell: and to attaine the ende of his purpose, hee began with sharpe wordes in presence of the nobilitie to disclose his discontented minde, and the grudge which he bare to Ariobarzanes: on the other syde the king suborned diuers persons diligently to espy what he faide and did. Ariobarzanes hearing the king's sharpe wordes of rebuke, and stimulated by the persuasion of diuers flatterers, which were hired for that purpose, after he perceiued that his declared pacience, that his modest talke and his long and faithful seruice, which he had done to the king, his losse and hinderance sustained, the perill of his life, which so many tymes he had suffred preuayled nothing, at length vanquished with disdayne he brake the bridle of pacience, and forted out of the boundes of his wonted nature, for that in place of honoure he receiued rebuke, and in stede of reward was depryued of his office, began in a rage to complayne on the king, terminge him to bee an vnkynd prince, which among the Persians was estemed a worde of great offence to the maiesty: wherefore faine he would haue departed the court, and retired home to his countrey, which he could not doe without speciall licence from the king, and yet to craue the same at his handes, his heart would not serue him. Al these murmures and complaintes which he secretly made, were tolde the king, and therefore the king commaunded him one day, to be called beforne him, vnto whome he sayd: "Ariobarzanes, youre grudging complaintes and enuious quarels, whyche you

brute behinde my backe throughout my Courte, and your continuall rages outrageously pronounced, through the very Windowes of my Palace haue pierced mine eares, whereby I vnderstand that thing which hardly I would hane beleued: but yet being a Prince as well inclined to fauoure and quiet hearinge of all causes, as to credite of light reportes, would faine know of you the cause of your complaints, and what hath moued you therenvto: for you be not ignorant, that to murmure at the Persian king, or to terme him to be vnkinde, is no lesse offence than to blasphem the Gods immortall, bicause by auncient Lawes and Decrees they be honored and worshipped as Gods. And among all the penaltyes conteyned in our lawes, the vyce of Ingratitude is mooste bytterlye corrected. But leauing to speake of the threates and daungers of our lawes, I pray you to tell me wherin I haue offended you: for albeit that I am a king, yet reason persuadeth me, not to giue offence to anye man, which if I should doe (and the Gods forbid the same) I ought rather to be termed a tyrante than a Kinge.” Ariobarzanes hearing the king speake so reasonably, was abashed, but yet with stoute countenaunce he feared not particularly to remember the woordes which he had spoken of the king, and the cause wherefore he spake them. “ Wel (said the king) I perceiue that you blush not at the words, ne yet feare to reherse the same vnto my face, wherby I do perceiue and note in you a certayne kind of stoutenes which naturally procedeth from the greatnes of your mynd. But yet wisdome would that you should consider the reason and cause why I haue depryued you from your office. Do you not know that it appertaineth vnto me in all myne affaires and deedes to be liberal, curtious, magnificent, and bounteous? Be not those the virtues that make the fame of a Prince to glister among his subiectes, as the Sunne beames doe vpon the circuit of the world? Who oughte to rewarde wel doers and recompence ech wight whiche for any trauell haue al the dayes of their lyfe, or els in some perticular seruice vfed their endeuer, or aduentured the peril of their life, but I alone being your soueraygne Lord and Prince? To the vertuous and obedient, to the Capayne and the Souldiour, to the pollityke and to the learned and graue, finally, to ech wel deseruing wight, I know how to vse the noble princely vertues of curtesie and liberality. They be the

comly ensignes of a kynge. They be the onely ornaments of a prince. They be my particular vertues. And will you Ariobarzanes, being a valiaunt Souldioure, a graue counsayler, and a pollyke personage, goe about to dispossesse me of that which is myne? Wil you whiche are my seruaunte and Subiecte of whome I make greateste accompt and haue in dearest estimation, vpon whom I did bestow the greatest dignity within the compas of my whole Monarchie, grate benefite at my handes, by abusinge those vertues whiche I aboue other do principally regard? You do much abuse the credite which I repose in youre greate wisedome. For hee in whome I thought to fynde most graue aduise, and deemed to bee a receptacle of al good counsel, doth feeke to take vpon him the personage of his Prince, and to vsurpe the kinglye qualitie which belongeth only vnto him. Shal I be tyed by your desertes, or bound by curteous deedes, or els be forced to rendre recompence? No, no, so long as this imperiall crowne shal rest on royal head, no subiect by any curteous deede of his, shal straine vnwilling mynde, which mente it not before. Tel me I beseech you what reward and gift, what honour and preferment haue I euer bestowed vpon you, fithens my first arriall to this victorious raigne, that euer you by due desert did bynde me thereunto? Which if you did, then liberal I cannot be termed, but a flauish Prince bound to do the same, by subiects merite. High and mightie kinges doe rewarde and aduaunce their men, hauing respect that their gift or benefite shal excede deserte, otherwise that preferment cannot bee termed liberal. The great conquerour Alexander Magnus was a great and notable Citie for wealth and spoyle. For the principalitie and gouernment wherof diuers of his noble men made sute, alleging their painful seruice and bloody woundes about the getting of the fame. But what did that worthy king? was he moued with the bloudshead of his captaynes? was he styrred with the valiaunce of his men of warre? was he prouoked with their earnest futes? No trulye: But calling vnto him a poore man, whome by chaunce he found there, to him he gaue that riche and wealthy citie, and the gouernmente thereof, that his magnificence and his liberalitie to a person so pore and base, might receiue greater fame and estimation: and to declare that the conferred benefyte didde not

proceede of deserte or dutie, but of mere liberalitie, very curtefie, true munificence and noble disposition, deriuied from princely heart and kinglye nature. Howbeit I speake not this that a faythful seruaunt should be vnirewarded (a thing very requisite) but to inferre and proue that reward should excell the merite and seruice of the receiuer. Now then I say, that you going about by large deserte and manifold curtefie to binde mee to recompence the same, you seeke thy next waye to cut of the meane whereby I should be liberall. Do not you see that through your vnatuyfed curtefie I am preuented, and letted from myne accustomed liberalitye, wherewith dayly I was wont to reward my kynde, louing and loyal seruautes, to whom if they deserued one talent of golde, my manner was to geue them two or three: if a thousand crownes by the yeare, to geue them v. Do you not know that when they loked for most rewarde or preferment, the foner did I honour and aduaunce them? Take heede then from henceforth Ariobarzanes, that you liue with such prouidence and circumspection as you may bee knownen to be a seruant, and I reputed (as I am) for your souerayne Lord and mayster. All Princes in myne opinion requyre two thinges of theire seruantes, that is to fay, fidelity and loue, which being hadd they care for no more. Therefore he that list to contende with me in curtefie, shal fynde in the ende that I make smale accompte of him. And he that is my trusty and faithful seruant, diligente to execute and do my commaundementes, faythful in my secret affayres, and duetyfull in his vocation, shal truely witte and most certaynlye feele that I am both curteous and liberall. Which thou thy selfe shal wel perceiue, and be forced to confess that I am the same manne in dede, for curtefie and liberalitye whom thou indeuorest to surmount." Then the king held his peace. Ariobarzanes very reuerentlye made answear in this manner: "Most noble and victoriouse Prince, wel vnderstanding the conceiued grief of your inuincible mind pleafeth youre sacred maiesty to geue mee leaue to answer for my self, not to aggrauate or heap your wrath and displeasure (which the Gods forbid) but to disclose my humble excuse before your maiesty that the same poized with the equall balance of youre rightful mind, my former attempts may nether feme presumptuous, ne yet my wel meaning

mind, well measured with iustice, ouerbold or malapert. Most humbly then, prostrate vpon my knees I say that I neuer went about, or else did think in mind to excede or compare with your infinite and incomprehensible bountie, but indeuored by al possible means to let your grace perceiue, and the whole world to know that there is nothing in the world which I regard so much as your good grace and fauour. And mighty loue graunt that I do neuer fal into so great errore to presume for to contend with the greatnes of your mynde: which fond desire if my beastly mynd should apprehend, I myghte be lickned to the man that goeth aboute to be-rieue and take away the clerenesse of the Sun, or brightnesse of the splendant stars. But euer I did thinke it to be my bounden duety not only of those fortunes goods which by your princely meanes I do inioy to bee a distributer and large giuer, but also bound for the profite and aduaancement of your regal crowne and dignite, and defence of your most noble person, of mine owne life and bloud to be both liberall and prodigall. And where your maiestie thinketh that I haue laboured to compare in curtious dede or other liberall behauour, no dede that euer I did, or fact was euer enterprised by me for other respect, but for to get and continue your more ample fauour and daily to encrease your loue for that it is the seruant's part with all his force and might to aspyre the grace and faouore of his soueraygne lorde. Howbeit (most noble prince) before this tyme I did neuer beleue, nor hard youre grace confess, that magnanimity, gentlenes and curtesie, were vertues worthy of blame and correction, as your maiestie hath very manifestly done me to vnderstante by wordes feuere, and taunting checkes, vnworthye for practise of such rare and noble vertues. But how so euer it bee, whether lyfe or death shal depend vpon this prayse worthy and honourable purpose, I meane hereafter to yeld my dutye to my souerayne lord, and then it may please him to terme my dedes courteous or liberal or to thinke on my behauour, what his owne princely mynde shal deme and iudge." The king vpon those wordes rose vp and sayd: "Ariobarzanes, now it is no tyme to continue in further disputation of this argument, committing the determination and iudgement herof, to the graue deliberation of my counsel who at conuenient leasure aduisedly shal

according to the Persian lawes and customes conclud the same. And for this present time I say vnto thee that I am disposed to ac-compt the accusation made agaynst thee to be true, and confessed by thy self. In the mean tyme thou shalt repayre into the coun-try and come no more to the court til I commaund thee." Ariobar-zanes receiuinge this answcare of his souerayne lorde departed, and to his great contentation, went home into his countreye merye, for that he should be absent out of the daylye sight of his enemies, yet not wel pleased for that the king had remitted his cause to his Councell. Neuerthelesse minded to abyde and suffer al Fortune, he gaue him selfe to the pastime of huntinge of Deere, runninge of the wylde Bore, and flying of the Hanke. This noble Gentle-man had two onlye daughters of his wife that was deceased, the most beautiful Gentlewomen of the countrey, the eldest of which two was peerelesse and without comparison, older than the other by one yeaer. The beauty of those fayre ladies was bruted throughout the whole Region of Persia, to whome the greatest Lordes and Barons of the countrey were great and importunate suters. He was not in his countrey refiant the space of fower monethes, which for salubritie of ayre was most holsome and plea-saunt, full of lordlike liberties and Gentlemanlike pastimes, aswel to bee done by the hound as folowed by the spaniell, but one of the kinge's Haraulds sente from the Court, appeared before him with message to this effecte, saying vnto him: "My lord, Ariobarzanes, the kinge my souerayne Lord hath commaunded you to send with me to the Court the fayrest of your two daughters, for that the reporte of their famous beautie hath made him hardlie to beleue them to be such, as common briute would fayne doe him to vnder-stand." Ariobarzanes not well able to conceiue the meaning of the king's commaundiment, reuolued in his mynde diuers thinges touching that demaund, and concludinge vpon one which fel to his remembrance, determined to send his younger daughter, which (as we haue sayde before) was not in beautie comparable to her elder sister, whereupon hee caused the mayden to be sent for, and sayde vnto her these wordes: "Daughter, the king my maister and thy soueraigne Lord, hath by his messanger com-maunded me to sende vnto him the fayrest of my daughters, but

for a certaine reasonable respect which at thys time I purpose not to disclose, my mynde is that thou shalt goe, praying thee not to say but that thou thyselfe art of the twayne the fairest, the concealinge of whiche mine aduise wil breede vnto thee (no doubt) thy great aduaancement, besides the profite and promotion that shal accrine by that thy silencie: and the disclosing of the same may hap to engendre to thy deere father his euerlasting hindrance, and perchaunce the depriuation of his lyfe: but if so be the Kinge doe beget the with childe, in anye wife keepe close the same: and when thou feest thy belly begin to swell, that no longer it can be closely kept, then in conuenient time, when thou feest the kinge merily disposed, thou shalt tell the king that thy syster is far more beautifull than thyselfe, and that thou art the yonger sister." The wife maiden well vnderstanding her father's minde, and conceiuing the summe of his intent, promised to performe his charge, and so with the Haraulde and honorable traine, he caused his daughter to be conueyed to the Court. An easie matter it was to deceiue the king in the beauty of that maiden: for although the elder daughter was the fairest, yet this Gentlewoman seemed so peereleffe in the Courte, that without comparison she was the most beautifull that was to be found either in Courte or countrey: the behauour and semblance of whiche two daughters were so like, that hard it was to iudge whether of them was the eldest: for their father had so kept them in, that seldome they were seene within his house, or at no time marked when they walked abroade. The wife of the king was dead the space of one yeere before, for which cause he determined to mary the daughter of Ario-  
barzanes, who although she was not of the royll bloud, yet of birth she was right noble. When the kinge sawe this Gentlewoman, he iudged hir to be the fairest that euer he saw or heard of by report, whom in the presence of his noblemen he solemnly did marry, and sent vnto her father to appoynt the Dowry of his married Daughter out of hande, and to returne the same by that messenger. When Ario-  
barzanes hearde tell of thys vnhoped mariage, right ioyfull for that succeffe, sent vnto his Daughter the Dowry which he had promised to geue to both his Daughters. Many of the Court did maruell, that the kynge beinge in aged

yeares woulde mary so yongue a mayden, specially the daughter of his Subiect, whom he had banished from the Courte. Some prayed the kinge's Disposition for taking hir whom he fancies: ech man speakyng his feuerall mynde accordynge to the dyuers customes of men. Notwythstandinge there were diuers that moued the kinge to that mariage, thereby to force him to confesse, that by takinge of the goods of Ariobarzanes, he might be called Courteous and Liberall. The mariage being solemnized in very sumptuous and princely guise, Ariobarzanes sent to the kinge the like Dowry which before he had sent him for mariage of his daughter, with message to this effect: That for so much as hee had Assigned to his Daughters two certayne Dowries to mary them to their equal feeres, and seeinge that hee which was without exception, was the husbante of the one, his duety was to bestow vpon his grace a more greater gift, than to any other which should haue bene his sonne in law: but the king would not receiue the increase of his dowry, deeming himselfe wel satified with the beauty and good condicions of his new spouse, whom he entayned and honored as Queene. In the meane time she was with childe with a Sonne (as afterwardes in the birth it appeered) which so wel as she coulde she kept close and secret, but afterwardes perceiuinge her Belly to wax bigge, the greatneffe whereof she was not able to hide, beinge vpon a time with the kinge and in familiar disperte, she like a wife and sobre lady induced matter of diuers argument, amonges which as occasion serued, she disclosed to the king, that she was not the fayrest of hir father's daughters, but hir elder sister more beautiful than she. The king hearing that, was greatly offended with Ariobarzanes, for that he had not accomplished his commaundement: and albeit hee loued well his wife, yet to attaine the effect of his desire, he called his Haraulde vnto him, whom he had first sent to make request for his wyfe, and with him returned agayne his new maried spouse vnto her father, commanding him to say these wordes: "That for so much as he knew himselfe to be vanquished and ouercome by the king's humanity, his grace did maruell, that in place of curtesie, he would use such contumacy and disobedience, by fending vnto him, not the fairest of his daughters, which he required, but sutch

as he himselfe liked to fende: a matter no doubt worthy to be sharcely punished and reuenged: for which cause the kinge beinge not a litle offended, had sent home his daughter agayne, and willed hym to fende his eldest daughter, and that he had returned the Dowry which he gaue with his yonger." Ariobarzanes receyued his daughter and the dowry with willinge minde, and sayd theefe words to the Harauld: "Mine other daughter which the king my Soueraygne Lord requireth, is not able presently to go with thee, bycause in hir bed she lieth sicke, as thou mayst manifestly perceiue if thou come into hir chamber: but say vnto the king, that vpon my fayth and allegiaunce so foone as she is recouered, I will fende hir to the court." The Haraulde seeing the mayden lye sicke on her bed, weake and Impotent, not able to trauel, returned to the king, and told him of the ficknesse of the eldest Daughter of Ariobarzanes, wherewithall beinge satissified, he attended the succeſſe of his desired sute: the Gentlewoman no sooner beinge recouered, but the tyme of the other's childbirh was come, which brought forth a goodly Boy: both the Mother safelē brought to Bed, and the childe strong and lusty. Whych greatly contented and pleased Ariobarzanes, and the greater grew his ioy thereof, for that hee sawe the Childe to be like vnto the kinge his father: and by that time the yong Gentlewoman was ryſen from her childbed, the fister was perſeſſly whole, and had recouered her former hiewe and beauty, both which beinge richely apparelled, Ariobarzanes with an honourable trayne, sent vnto the kinge, instru&tinge them first what they ought to say and do. When they were arriued at the courte, one of the pruy chamber aduertised the king that Ariobarzanes had not onely ſent one of his daughters, but both of them. The kynge hearinge and ſeeinge the liberality of Ariobarzanes, accepted the ſame in gracious part, and determined for that curteſie, to vſe him with ſutche princely liberality, as he ſhould be forced to confeſſe himſelfe ouercome. And before the meſſanger which had brought the yong gentlewoman did departe, he cauſed to be cauſed before him his only ſonne called Cyrus, vnto whom he ſayd: "Bycause Cyrus the time of thy yeaſes bee ſutche, as meete they be to maſh the in Mariage, for hope I haue to ſee ſome Progeny proceſſe of thee before I die,

my minde is that thou shalt mary this goodly Gentlewoman here, the syfter of my Wyfe. To which hys father's heft, the yong gentleman willingly assented. Then the kyng toke agayn his owne, and ordayned a royll feast, for the mariage of his Sonne, which was celebrated and done with great triumph and solemnity, continuinge the space of 8 dayes. Ariobarzanes hearinge these good newes, would not yet acknowledge himselfe to be ouercome, and feeinge that his purpose was nowe brought to an extremity, determined to send the little childe, a little before begotten of hys daughter, to the kinge, which so resembled the kinge's face and Countenaunce as was possible: and therefore caused a cradle to bee made of the fairest Iuory that was to be gotten, embossed and garnished with pure Golde, adorned and set wyth most precious Stones and Iewels, wherein he caused the childe to be placed, and couered wyth rich clothes of fynew gold and filke, and together with the Nourice, accompanied with a pompous trayne of Gentlemen, he sent him to the kinge, the very time that the solemne mariage should be celebrated: and the kinge beinge in his great Hall, which was hanged with maruellous rich and costly Arras, attened vpon with a great numbre of his Barons and noble men, hee that had the charge of the conduction of the child, vpon his knees presented the same before him, lyinge in the Cradle. The king and the Noblemen, meruelling what that did meane expected what the Messenger would say, who holding the Cradle by one of the Pomels, sayd these wordes: "Most renouned and victorious Prince, in the behalfe of Ariobarzanes, my Lorde and your Subiect, most humbly I prefent vnto your maiesty, with al Submiffion and reuerence, this gift: and my sayd Lord doth rendre infinite thankes vnto your highnesse, for the great curtesie it hath pleased you to vse, by vouchsafinge to entartayne him into your alliaunce: for which not to seeme vnmindfull, this present (and therewithall he opened the Cradle) by mee hee hath sent vnto your maiesty." When the Cradle was discouered, there apeared a goodly yong Chylde, Smilinge and Laughing vpon his father, the ioyfullest sight that euer his father sawe, and so like vnto him, as the halfe Moone is lyke the proportion of the rest. Then euery of the Standers by began to say his minde touchinge the resemblaunce of the Chylde

to hys Father, hardly protesting the same without doubt to be his owne. The kyng could not be satisfied with the sight of his child, by reason of the great delight he had to looke vpon him, and of the generall opinion whych all men auouched touchinge his lykenesse. The Chylde agayne vpon the common reioyce made vpon hym, but specially of hys Father, wyth preaty motions and sweete laughinges, representinge two smilinge pyttes in his ruddy Cheekes, crowed many tymes vpon his father, toyinge vp and downe hys tender handes: afterwards the kynge behelde the workmanship of that sumptuous cradle, and demaunded whereof the substaunce was. Vnto whom the Messenger discribed the Hyfstory and whole content of that incomparable Iewel: who hearinge that discourse, caused the Queene to be called forth, and by her was further certifed of her father's noble disposition, wyth exceeding contentation, and wonderfull reioyce, he receyued the little Chylde, and confessed hym selfe in maner vanquished: notwythstandinge seeming to be thus surmounted, he thought if he did not surpasse this curtesy, his noble and princely minde should be disgraced: wherefore he determined to vse a kind of magnanimity, thereby eyther to ouercome Ariobarzanes, or else hauinge apparent occasion altogether to fall out and to conceyue a mortall malice agaynst hym. The Kynge had a Daughter of the age of 21 yeares, a very fayre and comely Lady (accordinge as her Royall education and princely bringinge vp required) whom as yet he had not matched in mariage, meaninge to bestowe her vpon some kynge or great Monarch with a dowry of Ten hundred thousand Crownes, besides the pryncely and great costly Apparell and Iewells whych her owne mother lyinge vpon her death Bed did bequeathe her. The kynge then purposinge to excell Ariobarzanes, mynded by couplynge hym wyth hys Daughter, to make hym his sonne in lawe: whych to a Lady of Royall Linage, appeareth some debacinge of her noble bloud, to be matched with a man of inferiour byrth: the lyke to a Man how honourable so euer he be cannot chaunce, if he take a Wyfe of Degree neuer so Base: for if hee bee borne of Noble and Gentle kynde, hee doth illustrate and aduaunce the Woman whom he taketh, all be it shée were of the meanest trampe of the popular forte, and the Chyldren whych be borne of them

by the Father's meanes, shalbe Noble and of a gentle kynd: but a woman, although shee be most Noble, if shee bee married to hir inferiour, and that hir husbande bee not so Noble, the chyldren that shall be borne of them shall not receiue the honour of the mother's stock, but the state of the father's lotte, and so shall be vnnoble. Sutch is the Renerence and Authoritie of the Sexe of man, wherevpon doeth ryse the comparyson of the wyfe, which doth ressemble the man vnto the Sunne, and the Woman to the Moone. For wee see that the Moone of hir selfe doth not glie light, ne yet can yelde any brightnesse to the darknesse of the Night, if she did not pertake some shining of the Sun, who with his liuely flames at times and places doth brighten the starres, and maketh the moone to shine: euen so the woman dependeth of the man, and of hym doth take hir nobility. The kyng therefore thought the match not meete for Ariobarzanes to marry his Daughter, and feared he should incurre some blemish of his house: but for all respect and feare of shame, the emulation whyche hee had to be victorios of his forced curtefie did surpassee. Wherfore he sent for Ariobarzanes to come vnto the Court: who vpon that commaundement came: and so soone as hee was entered the palace, he repayred to do his reuerence vnto the kinge, of whom he was welcomed with glad and ioyfull entertainement: and after they had a whyle debated of diuers matters, the kyng sayd vnto him: "Ariobarzanes, for so mucht as thou art without a wyfe, we minde to bestowe vpon thee a Gentlewoman, which not onely wee well like and loue, but also is futch a one, as thou thy selfe shalt be well contented to take." Ariobarzanes aunswered: That he was at his commaundement: and that futch choyse as pleased his maiestie, should very well content and satifisfe him. Then the kyng caused his daughter, in riche vesture sumptuously attired to come before him, and there openly in presence of the whole Court commaunded that Ariobarzanes should marry her: which with feemely ceremonies being consummate, Ariobarzanes shewed little ioy of the parentage, and in appearance made as though he cared not for his wyfe. The Nobles and Gentlemen of the Courte wondred to see the straunge behauour of the bridegroome, consideringe the great humanity of their Prince towardes his Subject, by takinge him for

his Father, and Sonne in lawe: and greatly murmured to see the obstinacy and rudenesse of Ariobarzanes, towards the kynge and the Fayre newe maried Spouse, mutch blaminge and rebukinge hys vnkinde demeanour. Ariobarzanes that day fared as though hee were besides himselfe, voyde of ioy and mirth, where all the rest of the Courte spent the tyme in sport and Triumph, the Ladies and Noble women together with the kynge and Queene themselues, dauncinge and maskinge, vntil the time of night did force ech Wyghte to Retyre to their Chaumbers. Notwithstandinge the kynge did marke the Gesture and Countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, and after the Banket the Kynge in Solempne guise and great Pompe caused hys Daughter to bee accompanied wyth a great Trayne to the Lodginge of Ariobarzanes, and to be caried with hir, hir Prynely Dowry, where Ariobarzanes very Honourably receyued hys Wyfe, and at that Instant, in the presence of all the Noblemen and Barons that wayted vpon the Bride, hee doubled the Dowry receyued, and the same wyth the Ten hundred thousand Crownes genen hym by the kynge, hee sent back agayne. This vnmeasured Liberality seemed paffynge Straunge vnto the kynge, and bredde in him futch disdayne, as doubtful he was whether to yelde, or to condemne him to perpetuall Banishment. The kynge thought that the greatnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde was Inuincible, and was not able paciently to suffer, that a subiect in matters of curtesie and liberality, should still compare wyth his king and maister: herewithal the king conceiuing malice, could not tell what to say or do. An easy matter it was to perceiue the rage and furie of the king, who was so sore displeased, as he bare good looke and countenaunce to no man: and bicause in those dayes the Persian kings were honored and reuerenced as Gods, there was a lawe that when the king was driuen into a furie, or had conceiued a iust displeasure, he shoulde manifest vnto his Counsellers, the cause of his anger, who afterwardes by mature diligence hauing examined the cause and finding the kinge to be vnjustly displeased should seke meanes of his appeasing: but if they found his anger and displeasure to be iustly grounded, the cause of the same, according to the quality of the offence, little or great, they should punish, eyther by banishment or capital death: the sentence of whom

should passe and be pronounced without appeale. Howbeit Lawfull it was for the Kynge to mitigate the pronounced sentence, eyther in al, or in part, and to diminish the payne, or clearely to affoyle the party : whereby it evidently appeared, that the Counsellers Sentence once determined, was very iustice, and the kynge's wyll if he pardoned, was meere grace and mercy. The kyng was constrayned by the statutes of his kyngdome to disclose vnto his Counsell the cause of his displeasure, which particularly he recited : the Counsellers when they heard the reasons of the kyng, sent for Ariobarzanes, of whom by due examination they gathered, that in diuers causes he had prouoked the kyng's dyspleasure. Afterwards the Lords of the Counsell, vpon the proposed question began to argue, by inuestigation and search whereof, in the ende they iudged Ariobarzanes worthy to loose hys head : for that he would not onely compare, but also go about to ouertoppe him in thinges vndesirable, and to shewe himselfe discontented with the mariage of his daughter, and vnthankfull of the benefites so curteously bestowed vpon him. A custome was obserued amonge the Persians, that in euery acte or enterprise, wherein the seruaunt endeured to surpasse and vanquish his lord and maister (albeit the attempt were commendable and prayseworthy) for respect of want of duety, or contempt to the royll maiesy, he should lose his best ioynt : and for better confirmation of their iudgement, the Counsellers alleaged a certayne diffinitiue sentence, regestred in their Chronicles, whilom done by the kyngs of Persia. The cause was this : one of the kyngs of that Region disposed to disporte with certayne of his noble men abrode in the Fields, went a Hauking, and with a Faucon to fly at diuers game. Within a while they sprang a Hearon, and the Kynge commaunded that one of the faulcons which was a notable swift and soaring Hauke, should be cast of to the Hearon : which done, the hearon began to mount and the faucon speedely pursued, and as the Hauke after many batings and intercourses, was about to seaze vpon the hearon, he espied an Egle: the stoute Hauke seeing the Egle, gaue ouer the fearfull Hearon, and with swift flight flewe towardes the hardy Egle, and fiercely atteinpted to feaze vpon her: but the Egle very stoutly defended her selfe, that the Hauke was

forced to let goe hir holde. In the ende the good Hauke, with her sharpe talendes, agayne feazed vpon the Egle's neck, and wyth her beake strake her starke dead, wherewithall she fel downe amid the company that wayted vpon the king. Al the Barons and Gentlemen highly commonded and praysed the Hauke, affirminge that a better was not in the worlde, attributing vnto the same futch prayse, as they thought meete. The king for all the acclamations and shoutes of the troupe, spake not a worde, but stooode musing with himselfe, and did neyther prayse nor blame the Hauke. It was very late in the eueninge, when the Faucon killed the Egle, and therefore the kinge commaunded ech man to depart to the Citty. The next day the king caused a Goldsmith to make an exceeding fayre crowne of golde, apt and meete for the Falcon's head. Afterwards when he saw time conuenient, he ordayned that in the market place of the Citty, a Pearche should be erected, and adorned with Tapestry, Arras, and other costly furnitures, futch as Pynces Palaces are bedecked withall. Thither with sound of Trumpets hee caused the Faucon to be conueyed, where the kinge commaunded one of his noble men to place the Crowne vpon his head, for price of the excellent pray atchieued vpon the Egle. Then he caused the hangman or common executioner of the Citty, to take the Crowne from the Faucon's head, and with the trenchant sword to cut it of. Vppon these contrary effectes the beholders of this fight were amazed, and began diuersly to talk thereof. The king which at a window stooode to behold this fact, caused silence to be kept, and so opened his princely voice, as he was wel heard speaking these words : "There ought (good people) none of you all to Murmur and grudge at the present fact executed upon the Faucon, bycause the same is done vppon good reason and iust cause as by processe of my discourse you shall well perceiue. I am persuaded that it is the office and duety of euery magnanimous prince, to know the valor and difference betweene vertue and vice, that all vertuous a<sup>c</sup>tes and worthy attempts may be honoured, and the contrary chastised and punished, otherwise he is not worthy of the name of a Kyng and Pync, but of a cruel and trayterous Tyrant : for as the prince beareth the title by principality and chiefe, so ought his life chiefly to excell other, whom he gouerneth and ruleth. The

bare title and dignity is not sufficient, if his conditions and moderation be not to that supreme state equiualent. Full well I knew and did consider to be in this dead Faucon a certayne generosity and stoutnesse of minde, ioyned wyth a certayne fierce actiuitie and nimblenesse, for which I Crowned and rewarded hir wyth thys golden Garland, bycause of the stoute slaughter which she made vpon that myghty Egle, worthy for that solemne guise. But when I considered how boldly and rashely she assayled and killed the Egle, which is hir Queene and Maystresse, I thought it a part of Iustice, that for hir bolde and vncomely act, she shoulde suffer the payne due to hir deserte: for vnlawful it is for the seruaunte, and vnduetiful for the subiect, to imbrue his handes in the bloud of his Soueraygne Lord. The Faulcon then hauinge slayne hir Queene, and of all other Birdes the Soueraygne, who can with reason blame me for cuttinge of the Faucon's head? Doubtlesse none, that hath respect to the quiet state betweene the Prince and Subiect." This example the Judges alleaged against Ariobarzanes when they pronounced sentence: and applyinge the same to him, ordeyned that first Ariobarzanes, for his Magnanimitie and liberal curtesie should be Crowned wyth a Laurell Garland, for the generosity of his minde and exceedinge curtesie, but for his great emulation, earnest endeavour, and continuall dyuice to contende wyth hys Prynce, and in Liberality to shew him selfe superior, byfides the mutteringe speech vttered agaynst hym, his head ought to be striken of. Ariobarzanes beinge aduertised of thys seuere condemnation, hee purposed to sustayne the Venemous Darte of Fortune, as hee had endured other bruntis of that Enuious inconstant Lady, and in sutch maner behaued and directed his Gestes, and Countenaunce, as no Sygne of Choler or Dyspayre appeared in him, onely Pronouncinge thys Sentence with ioyfull Cheare in the presence of many: "Glad I am that at length there refeth in me so mucht to be liberall, as I employ my life and bloud, to declare the same to my Soueraygne Lorde, which right willingly I meane to do, that the World may know, how I had rather lose my lyfe, than to faynt and geue ouer in mine accustomed liberality." Then callinge a Notary vnto him, he made his Wyll (for so it was lawfull by the Persian lawes) and to his Wyfe, and Daughters hee

increased their Dowries, and to his kinsfolke and freendes he bequeathed diuers rich and bountifull Legacies. To the kyng he gaue a great number of most precious Jewels. To Cyrus the king's sonne, and his by mariage (besides a great masse of money) he bequeathed all his Armure, and Weapons, with all his instruments for the warres, and his whole stable of horffe. Last of all he ordayned, that if (perhaps) his wyfe shoulde be found with chylde, and brought to Bed of a Sonne hee shoulde be his vniuersall heyre: but if a Woman chylde, to haue the dowry that his other daughters had. The rest of his goods and cattel he gaue indifferently to al III. equally to be deuided. He prouided also, that all his seruantes accordinge to their degree, shoulde be rewarded. The day before he shoulde be put to death (according to the custome of Persia) his prayses and valiaunt factes, as wel by Epitaphes fixed vpon poasts, as by proclamation, were generally sounded throughout the Realme, in such wise as ech wight iudged him to be the most liberall and noble personage that was in all the Countrey, and in the borders confininge vpon the same. And if there had not bene some enuious persons nere the kyng, which studied and practisched his ouerthrow, al other would haue deemed him vnworthy of death. Sutch is enuy of the maliciously disposed, that rather than they would see their equals to be in better estimation with the prynce than themselues, study and devise all pollicy eyther by flattery or false surmise to bringe them in discredite, or to practise by false accusation, their vtter subuersion by Death or Banishement. But whiles Ariobarzanes was dispoſinge his thinges in order, his Wyfe and Daughters with his Friends and Coufins, were affected with great sorrow day and night, complaingning for the heauy state of that noble Gentleman. The eight day being come (for the lawe allowed that space to the condemned, for disposition of their thynges) a Skaffolde was made by commaundement of the king, in the middest of the Market place, al couered with black cloth, and an other right ouer against the same with Purple and Silk, where the kyng (if he list) in the mids of the Judges shoulde sit and the inditement redde, iudgement (by the kyng's owne mouth declared) shoulde be executed, or if it pleased him, discharge and affoyle the condemned. And the

kynge vnwillinge to be present, gaue to one of the eldest iudges hys full power and authority. But yet sorrowful that a Gentleman so noble and valiaunt, his father and sonne in lawe, should finish his life with a death so horrible, would needes that morninge be present himselfe at that execution, as wel to see the continent and stoute ende of Ariobarzanes, as also to take order for his deliuery. When the time was come, Ariobarzanes by the Sergeant and Garde was brought vnto the Skaffolde, and there Aparelled in rich Vestures, the Laurel Crowne was set on his head, and so continuinge for a certayne space, the garment and Crowne was taken of agayne together with his other Apparell. The executioner attendinge for commaundement to do his office, and lifting vp his sworde to do the fact, the king desyred to see the countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, who neuer chaunged coloure for all that terroure of death. The king seeing the great constancy and inuincible mind of Ariobarzanes, spake aloud that all men might heare hym, these wordes: "Thou knowest Ariobarzanes, that it is not I, which haue wroughte thy condemnation, ne yet by eniuious desyre haue fought thy bloude, to brynge thee to thys extremity, but it hath bene thy ill disordred life, and the statutes of this Realme, which haue found thee guilty, and thereupon sentence and death pronounced, and execution now ready to be done, and the minister ready to aduaunce his arme, to play the last acte of this Tragedy: and yet for that our holy lawes doe geue liberty that I may affoyle and delyuer whom I list, and them restore to their former state, if nowe thou wilst acknowledge thy selfe vanquished and ouercome, and accepte thy lyfe in gratefull part, I will pardon thee, and restore thee to thyne offyces and promotions." Ariobarzanes, hearyng these wordes, kneeled downe wyth hys heade declyned, and expe&ting the blow of the Sworde, lyfted vp himselfe, and turnyng his face to the kinge, perceyuing his malice not so sore bent against hym as the enuy and malice of his ennemis desired, he determined to proue and vse the pitiful liberality and fauour of his Soueraigne Lorde, that his Foes by his death might not Triumph, ne yet attayne the thinge, for which so long they aspired. Wherefore in reuerent wyse kneelinge before his maiesy, with a stout and perfect voyce sayd these words: "Most vyctorious and mercifull So-

ueraygne Lord, in equall worship and honour to the immortall Gods, fith of thy abundant grace and mercy it hath pleased thee to graunt me lyfe, I do most humbly accept the same, which if I wyft should be prolonged in thy disgrace and wrath, could not be pleasaunt vnto me, and therefore do confesse my selfe in curtesie and liberality altogether surmounted and ouercome. I most humbly then do gene thee thankes for preseruation of my lyfe, hopinge hereafter to employ the vttermost of myne endeouour for the benefite and honour of thy Crowne and dignity, as readyly and without supplication made in my behalfe, thou haft vouchesafed to restore the same: and fith thy clemency hath reuiued me thyne humble vassall, I beseech thy maiesty to giue me leaue to say my minde, trustinge thereby to do thee to vnderstand the effect and cause of that my former presumption." The kinge made signes that he should arise and boldly speake the summe of his desire. When he stooode up, silence was proclaymed, who then began to speake these wordes: "Two things there be, (most sacred Prince) which doubtlesse do Resemble the raging Waues of surginge Seas, and the mutability of vnstable windes, and yet great is the folly of an infinite numbre, which employ their whole care and diligence to the pursute thereof. These two things whereof I speake, and be so deereley beloued of flattering Courtiers, are the grace and fauour of their soueraygne lord, and the luringe loue of Amorous Dames: whych two do so often beguyle the courtly gentleman, that in ende, they engender nought else but repentance: and to begin with the loue of Ladies, they, as by common experience is proued, most commonly do recline to their Inferiours. It is dayly feene by to mutch vnhappy proofe, that a yongue Gentleman by Byrth noble, and otherwyse riche, vertuous, and indued with many goodly gyfts, shall choose and worship one for his soueraigne Lady and maistresse, and her shall serue and honour with no lesse fayth and fidelity then is due to the immortall Gods, and shal not sticke to employ for her loue and seruice all the possible power and trauell he is able to do, and yet she in dispite of all his humble endeouour, shall imbrace an other voide of all vertue, makynge him possessor of that benefite, after which the other seeketh, and shée not longe constant in that minde, afterwards wil attend to the

first Suter, but in futch mouable and disdaynfull sort, as the wandring starres (through their natural instability) be moued to and fro, and him in the ende will suffre to fall headlong into the bottomleffe pit of dispayre: and to him that asketh hir the reasoun of this variety, she maketh none other aunswere but that her pleasure is futch, and wilfull will to dally with her futors: so that feldome times a true and perfit louer can fasten his foote on certayne holde, but that his life is tofsed vp and downe like the whirling blastes of inconstant windes. The like succedeth in the Courtes of Kings and Princes, he which is in fauoure with his soueraigne Lord in al mens eyes, so great and neare, as it seemeth the Prince is disposed to resolute vpon nothing without his aduise and counsell, when such fauored perfon shall employe his whole care and industrie to maintaine and encrease the commenced grace of his soueraigne Lord, behold, vpon the sodaine the minde and vayne of his Lord is changed, and an other without desert, which never carked to win good will, is taken in place, cherished as though hee had serued him an hundred yeares before: and he that was the first minion of the Courte in greatest grace and estimation, is in a moment dispysed, and oute of all regarde: an other within fewe dayes after, shall supplie the place of the other twaine, verye dyligent and careful to serue a man trained vp in courtly exercise, whose mindfull mind shall bee so caring ouer his lord's affayers, as vpon the safegard and preseruation of his owne life: but all his labour is employed in vayne: and when the aged dayes of his expired life approach, for the least displeasure he shalbe thrust out without reward for former trauel, that right aptly the Common Prouerb may be applied: the common Courtier's life is like a golden misery, and the faithfull seruant an Asse perpetuall. I haue seene my selfe the right wel learned man to sterue in Court for want of meate, and a blockish beast voyde of vertue, for lust, and for merite, aduaunced and made a Gentleman: but this may chaunce bicause hys Lord is not disposed to vertue, nought esteeminge those that be affected with good sciences, and that onely for lacke of carefull trayninge vp in youthfull dayes, or else for that his minde cannot frame with gentle spyrits, the closets of whose breasts be charged and fraught with infinite loades of learninge,

and haue not bin nofeled in trade of Courtes, ne yet can vfe due courtly speech, or with vnblushinge face can shuffle themselues in prefence of their betters, or commen with Ladies of dame Venus toyes : or race of birth not mingled with the noble or gentle Sire : for these causes perhaps that vertuous wighte cannot attain the hap of fortune's giftes. Which person thoughe in Court he be not esteemed, yet in schoolehouse of good arte he is deemed famouse, and for his worthy skill right worthy to be preferred aboue the heauens. In semblable wife, how oftentimes and commonly is it seene that the man perchance which neuer thou sawest before, so sone as he is seene of the, fodaynly he is detested lyke a plague, and the more earnest he is to do the seruice and pleasure, the greater is thy wrath bent towards him ? Contrarywise, som other vpon the first view shal so content and please the, as if he require the bestowing of thy life, thou hast no power to denie him, thou arte in loue with him, and let him thwart thy mind and wil neuer so much, thou carest not for it, all is well he doth : but that these varieties do proceede from some certayn temprement of bloud within the body conformed and moued by som inward celestial power, who doubteth ? And surely the foundation of these Courtly mutations, is the pricking venomous Goade of pestiferous Enuye, whych continually holdeth the fauour of Prynces in ballaunce, and in a moment hoisteth vp him which was below, and poizeth downe agayne him that was exaltered : so that no plague or poison is more pestiferous in Courts, than the hurtfull disease of Enuy : all other vices with little paine and lesse labour may easilly be cured, and so pacified as they shall not hurt thee: but rooted Enuy by any meanes is discharged, with no pollicye is expelled, ne yet by any Drugge or medicine purged. Veryly wythout great daunger, I know not which way the poynaunt bittes of Enuy can be auoyded : the proude man in Courte, the arrogant and ambitious, the lofty minded Foole, more eleuate and lustie than Pride it selfe, if reverence bee done to him, if he be honoured, if place be giuen to him, if hee be prayfed and glorified aboue the heauens, if thou humble thy selfe to him, by and by he will take thee to be his frend, and wyll deeme thee to bee a curteous and gentle companion. Let the lacyuous and wanton person giuen to the pleasures and lust

of women, fixing his mind on nothing else but vpon fugitiue pleasures, if his loue bee not impeached, ne yet his wanton toyes reprooved, if he be prayfed before his Ladie, he will euer be thy friend: the couetous and gloutonus carle, if first thou make hym quaffe a Medicine, and afterwardes byd hym to thy table, the one and other disease is speedily cured: but for the eniuious person, what Phisiche can be sought to purge his pestiferous humour? which if thou go about to heale and cure, rather muste thou remedye the same by wafting the life of him that is so possessed, than find causes of recouerie. And who knoweth not (most sacred Prince) that in your Courte there be some attached with that poisoned plague, who seeing me your maiestie's humble vassall in greater fauoure with your grace than they, my seruice more acceptable than theirs, my proweſſe and exercife in armes more worthy than theirs, my diligence more industrious than theirs, my advise and counſell more auayleable than theirs, all mine other deedes and doings in better Estimation than theirs: they I say, dallied in the lap of the cancred witch dame Enuy, by what meanes are they to be recouered? by what meanes their infection purged? by what meanes their mallice cured? If not to see me depriued of your grace, expelled from your Court, and cast headlonge into the gulfe of death extreme? If I should bribe them with great rewardes, if I should honour them with humble reuerence, if I should exalt them aboue the Skyes, if I should employ the vttermoſt of my power, to do them seruice, all frustrate and cast away: they wil not cease to bring me into perill, they will not ſpare to reduce me to misery, they will not ſtiche to ymagin all deuyſes for myne annoyance, when they ſee al other remdyes impotent and vnable: this is the poisoned plague which enuenometh all Princes courtes: this is the mischiefe which deftroyeth all kyngdomes: this is the monster that devoureth all vertuous enterpryſes and offendeth eche gentle ſpirite: this is the dim vale which ſo ouershadoweth the clerenes of the eyes as the bright beams of verity cannot be fene, and ſo obſcureth the equity of iuſtice, as right from falſhode cannot be diſcerned: this is the manifest cauſe that breadeth a thouſand errors in the workeſ of men: and to draw nere to the effeſte of this my tedious talke,

briefly, there is no vice in the worlde that more outrageously corrupteth Princes courtes, that more vnfrendly vntwineth frendship's band, that more vnhappely subuerteth noble hou ses, then the poyfone of Enuy: for he that enclineth his eares to the eniuous person, he that attendeth to his malignant deuises, vnpoffible it is for him to do any dede that is eyther good or vertuous: but to finishe and end for auoyding of wearines and not to stay your maiesty from your waighty affayres, I say that the eniuous man reioiceth not so much in his own good turnes nor gladdeth himself so greatly with his owne commodityes, as hee doth infulte, and laugh at the discommodityes and hinderance of others, at whose profite and gain he foroweth and lamenteth: and to put out both the eyes of his companion, the eniuous man careth not to plucke out one of his own. These wordes (most inuincible prince) I purposed to speake in the prefence of your maiesty, before your gard and courtlyke train, and in the vniuersal hearing of all the people that ech wighte may understand how I not of your maies tie's pretended malice, or mine owne committed faulte, but through the venemous tongues of the eniuous fel into the lape of your displeasure." This mooste true oration of Ariobarzanes greatly pleased the noble Prince, and although he felt himself somwhat touched therwith, and knowing it to bee certayn and true and that in tyme to come the fame mighte profite all sortes of people, hee greatlye praised and exalted him in the prefence of all the assembly. Wherefore Ariobarzanes having recouered his lyfe confessed himselfe to bee vanquished and ouercome by the king, who knowing the valoure and fealty of that noble Gentleman, and louing him with harty affection, caused him to come down from the mourning Scaffolde, and to assend the place where he was himselfe, whom he imbraced and kissted, in token that al displeasure was remitted: all his auncient offices were restored to him agayne: and for his further aduancement, he gaue him the Cittye of Paffagarda where was the olde monument of kinge Cyrus, and made him lieuetenaunt generall of his realmes and dominions, commaunding euerie of his subiects to obey him as himselfe. And so the kyng rested the honourable father in law to Ariobarzanes, and his louinge sonne by mariage crauing stil in al his enter-

pryfes, his graue aduyse and counsell: and there was neuer thing  
 of any importance done, but his liking or disliking was firsfe  
 demaunded: Ariobarzanes then returned into greater grace and  
 fauour of his souerayne lord than before, and for his singular  
 vertue hauing disperced and broken the aimes and malyce of all  
 his enimies, if before he were curteous and liberal after these so  
 stoute aduentures, he became more then princely in his dedes, and  
 if sometymes he had done one curteous act now he doubled the  
 same. But futch was his Magnanimitye, so noble were his in-  
 deuors, tempred with such measure and equanimity, as the whole  
 worlde clerely might deferne, that not to contend with his soue-  
 rayne lorde but to honour and serue him, therby to exprefse the  
 maiesfye of his Prince, he employed his goodes and liuing al which  
 the kinge and fortune had bountifuly bestowed vppon him: who  
 vntil his dying day famously mayntayned himselfe in the good  
 grace and fauour of his prince, in such wyse as the kyng more  
 clerely then the shining Sunnebeamis, knew Ariobarzanes to bee  
 framed of nature for a christalline mirrour of curtesie and libera-  
 litye, and that more easie it was to bereiue the fyre of heate, and  
 the Sonne of lighte then defpoyle Ariobarzanes of his glorious  
 dedes. Wherfore he ceaffed not continually to honour, exalt  
 and enrych him, that hee might vfe the greater liberality, and  
 to say the treuth, althoughe these two vertues of curtesie and  
 Liberality be commendable in all persons, without the which a man  
 truely is not he whereof hee beareth the name yet very fitting  
 and meete for euerye ryche and welthie subiect, to beware  
 how he doth compare in thosse noble vertues with  
 Princes and great men, which beyng ryght  
 noble and pereles vppon yearth canne  
 abyde no Comparissons.

## THE FIFTH NOUELL.

*Lucius one of the garde to Aristotimus the Tyrant of the citye of Elis, fell in loue with a fayre mayden called Micca, the daughter of one Philodemus, and his cruelty done vpon her. The stoutnesse also of a noble matron named Megistona in defence of hir husbande and the common wealth from the tyranny of the said Aristotimus: and of other actes done by the subiectes vpon that Tyrant.*

You haue heard, or as it were in a manner, you haue bee holden the right images and courteous conditions of two well conditioned persons mutually ech towards other obserued: in the one a Prince-ly mind towards a Noble Gentleman his subiecte: in the other a duetieful obedience of a louing vassal to his soueraigne Lord and Maister: in both of them the true figure of Liberality in liuely orient colours described. Now a contrary plotte, grounded vpon extreame tiranny, is offred to the viewe, done by one Aristotimus and his clawbacks agaist his humble subiects of the City of Elis, standyng in Peloponeſſus, a country of Achaia (which at this tyme we cal Morea.) This Aristotimus of nature was fierce and passing cruell, who by fauour of king Antigonus was made Tyran of that City: and like a Tyran gouerned his countrey by abuse of his authority with newe wronges, and Straunge crueltyes vexing and afflicting the poore Cityzens and all hys people: which chaunced not so much for that of himself he was cruel and tyrannous, as for that his counfellours and chiefe aboute him were barbarous and vicious men, to whom he committed the charge of his kyngdome and the guarde of his person: but amonges all his mischiefes wrongfully done by him which were innumerable, one committed agaynst Philodemus (the fame which afterwarde was the cause of the depriuation of his lyfe and kingdome) is specially remembred. This Philodemus had a daughter called Micca, that not onely for hir chraft qualityes and good condicions whiche vertuously flourished in hir but for her extreame and goodly beautye, was in that citye of passing fame and admiration. With this fayre maiden one of the Tyrant's guarde called Lucius fel in loue,

if it deserue to be called loue, and not the rather, as the end ful wel declared, a most filthy and beastly lust: this Lucius was deerly beloved of Aristotimus, for the fiendish resemblance and wicked nerenesse of his vile and abhominable condicions: and therfore feared and obeied as the Tyrante's owne person: for which cause this Lucius sent one of the yeomen of the kinge's chamber to commaunde Philodemus at an appoynted hour, al excuses set apart, to bring his daughter vnto him. The parentes of the mayden hearing this fodayne and fearful mesuage, constrainyd by Tyrante's forse and fatal necessity, after many tears and pittious fighes, began to perswade their daughter to be contented to goe with him, declaringe vnto her the rigour of the magistrate that had sente for hir the extremety that would be executed, and that ther was no other remedy but to obay. Alas, how fore agaynst their willes, with what trembling gesture, with what horror the good parentes of this tender pufill were affected, to consider the purpose of that dreadfull message, all dere fathers and naturall mothers can tell. But this gentle mayden Micca which was of nature stoute, and yet vertuously lessoned with fundry good and holsome instructions from hir Infante's Age was Determined rather to Dye, then to suffer her selfe to be Defloured. This vertuous Mayden fell downe Prostrate at her Father's Feet, and clasping him fast about the Knees, louingly did pray him, and Pitifuly besought him, not to suffer hir to bee haled to so filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged sword to kill her, that therby she might be rid from the violation of those fleshly and libidinous varlets, saying, that if her virginity were taken from hir, she should liue in eternal reproch and shame. As the father and daughter were in these termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delaye, dronke with the Wine of lechery, made impacient and furious, with cursed speede posted to the house of Philodemus, and finding the maiden prostrate at her father's feete weeping, her head in his lappe with taunting voice and threatning woordes commaunded presently without longer delay she should ryse and go with him: She refusing his hasty request, and crying out for Father's help, who (God wot) durst not refist, stoode still and would not goe: Lucius seeing hir refusall ful of furie and proude disdaine, began furiously

to hale hir by the garments, vpon whose struggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures of hir head and shoulders, that hir alabaster necke and bosome appeared naked, and without compassion tare and whipte hir flesh on euery side, as the bloud ranne downe, beating that tendre flesh of hirs with manifold and greuous blowes. O vile tirant, more wood and fauage than the deserte beast or mountaine Tigre: could cruelty be so deepeley rooted in the hart of man which by nature is affected with reason's instinct, as without pity to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tendre body of a harmlesse Maidee? Can such inhumanity harbor in any that beareth aboute him the shape of man? But what did this martyred maiden for all this force? Did she yeld to violence, or rendre hir self to the disposition of this mercilesse man? No surely. But with so great stoutnesse of mind, she suffred thosse impreſſed wounds, that no one word sounding of sorrow, or womanly shriech was heard to sound from hir delicate mouth: howbeit the pore father and miserable mother at that rueful and lamentable fight, moued with inward grief and natural pity, cried out aloude. But when they sawe that neyther playnt nor fayre speech coulde deliuer their Daughter out of the hands of that cruell monſter, they began with open cryes and horrible exclamation to implore helpe and succour at the handes of the immortall Gods, thinking that they were vnworthely plaged and tormented. Then the proud and moſt barbarous wretch, moued and disquieted by cholers rage and fume of chafinge Wyne, fodaynly catched the moſt conſtant virgin by the hayre of the head, and in her father's Lap did cut her white and tender throte. O detestable fact, right worthy iuft reuenge. But what did this vnfaythfull and cruell Tyrant Aristotimus, when by the blustering bruit of people's rage he heard of this vengeable murder, not only he shewed himſelfe contented wyth the fact, but had him in greater regard than before, and towards them which made complaint hereof, greater cruelty and mischyfe was done and executed. For in open ſtreat, lyke beaſtes in the Shambles, they were cut and hewed in peeces, which ſeemed to murmur at thys bloody and vnlawfull act: the reſt were banished and expeſſed the cytty. Eight hundred of theſe exiled perſons fled into Etolia (a prouince adioyninge to Epirus, which now is called

Albania.) Those people fo banished out of theyr country, made instant suite to Aristotimus to suffer Wyues and chyldren to repayre to them: but theyr suite was in vayne, their peticions and supplications seemed to be made to the deafe, and dispersed into the wyndes: notwithstandinge, within few dayes after, he caused by sound of trumpet to be openly proclaymed, that it should be lawful for the wyues and chyldren of the banished to passe wyth their baggage and furniture to theyr husbands in *Ætolia*. This Proclamation was exceeding ioyfull to al the women whose husbands were exiled, which at the least by common report were the numbre of 6 hundreds: and for more credite of that Proclamation, the wicked Tyrant did ordayne, that al the company should depart vpon a prefixed day. In the meane time, the ioyful Wyues glad to visit their poore husbands, prepared horse and wagon, to cary theyr prouisions. The appoynted day of their departure out of that City being come, all of them assembed at a certayne gate assygned for their repayre, who that time together reported with their little children in their hands bearing vpon theyr heads theyr garments and furnitures, some on horseback, and some bestowed in the wagons according as ech of theyr states required: when al things wer in a readinesse to depart, and the gate of the City opened, they began to issue forth. They wer no soner gone out of the City walles, and had left behind them the foile of theyr nativity, but the Tyrants guard and Sergeants brake vpon them, and before they were approched they cried out to stay and go no further vpon pain of theyr lives. So the pore amazed women, contrarry to the promise of the Tyrant, wer forced to retire. Which sodain countremaund was forowful and woful vnto the afflicted flock: but there was no remedy, for procede they could not. Then thosse Termagants and villains caught theyr horse by the bridles, and droue back again theyr wagons, pricking the pore oxen and beasts with theyr speares and Iuelins, that horrible it is to report the tyranie vsed towards man and best, in such wyse as the pore miserable women (God wot) contrary to their desyres, were forced in dispyte of theyr teeth to retourn. Som alack fell of theyr horse wyth theyr little babes in theyr lappes, and were miserably troden vnder the horsefeete, and ouerrun with the

wheles of the wagons theyr brains and guts gushing out through the weight and comberance of the cariage, and (which was most pitiful) one of them not able to help an other, and much lesse to rescue theyr yong and tendre fucking babes, the vyle sergeants forcing ech wight with theyr staues and weapons maugre theyr definious mindes to reenter the City. Many died by the constrained meanes out of hand, many were troden vnder the horsefeete, and many gasping betwene life and death: but the greatest foart of the litle infants were flaine out of hand, and crusht in pyeces: those whych remayned alyue, were commytted to Pryson, and the goods which they caryed wyth them altogither seased vpon by the tyrant. Thys wycked and cruell facte was most intollerable and greeuous vnto the Cytyzens of Elis, wherappone the holy dames consecrated to the God Bacchus, adorned and garnyshed wyth theyr prystly Garments, and bearyng in theyr Handes the sacred mysteryes of theyr God, as Aristotimus was paffyng through the Streete garded with hys Souldyers and Men of Warre, wente in proceffyon to fynde hym oute. The Sergeauntes for the reuerence of those religious women disclosed, and gaue them place to enter in before the Tyrant. He seing those Women apparelled in that guise, and bearing in their hands the sacred Bachanal mysteries, stooode stil, and with silence heard what they could say: but when he knew the cause of their approch, and that they wer come to make sute for the poore imprisioned women, sodainly possessed with a diuelish rage, with horrible hurly burly, bitterly reprehended his garrison for suffering those women to come so neare him. Then hee commaunded that they should be expelled from that place without respect, and condemned euery of them (for their presuming to intreat for such caitiue prisoners in ii. Talents a piece. After these mischies committed by the tyrant, Hellanicus one of the pryncipal and best esteemed persons of the City, although that he was decrepite, and for age very weake and feeble, cared not yet to aduenture any attempt what soeuer, so it might extend to the deliuery of his countrey from the vnspeakable tyranny of most cruel Aristotimus. To this gray haired person, bicause he was of aged yeares, void of children which were dead, this Tyrant gaue no great heede ne yet emploied any care, thinking that he

was not able to raise any mutine or tumult in the City. In the mean space, the Citizens, which as I haue sayd before, were banished into Etolia, practysed amongs them selves to proue their Fortune, and to seeke al meanes for recouery of their countrey, and the death of Aristotimus: wherfore hauing leuied and assembled certayne bands of Souldiers, they marched forth from their bannished seat, and neuer rested till they had gotten a place hard adioyning to their City, where they might safely lodge, and with great commodity and aduantage besige the same, and expel the tyrant Aristotimus. As the bannished were incamped in that place, many citizens of Elis daily fled forth, and ioyned with them, by reason of which auxiliaries and daily assemblies they grew to the ful nombre of an army: Aristotimus certified hereof by his espials was brought into a great chafe and fury, and euen now began to presage his fall and ruine: but yet meaning to foresee hys best aduantage, went vnto the pryon where the Wyues of the banished were fast inclosed, and bicause he was of a troublesome and tyranical nature, he concluded with him self rather to vse and intreat those wiues with feare and threates, than with humanity and fayre wordes: being entred the pryon, hee sharcely and wyth great fiercenesse commaunded them to write vnto their husbands that besieged him without, earnestly to persuade them to giue ouer theyr attempted warres: "Otherwyse (sayd he) if ye do not follow the effect of my commaundement, in your own presence I wil first cause cruelly to be flayne al your little Children, tearyng them by piece meale in pieces, and afterwardes I wyll cause you to be whipped and scourged, and so to dye a most cruel and shamefull death." At which fierce and tyrannycal newes, there was no one woman amongs them that opened theyr mouthes to answere him: the most wycked and vile tyrant feing them to be in such silence, charged them vpon theyr liues to answere what they were disposed to doe: but although they durst not speake a word, yet with silence one beholding eche other in the face, fared as though they cared not for hys threats, more ready rather to dye than to obey his coinaundement. Megistona then, which was the wife of Timolion, a matrone aswell for hir husband's nobility as hir owne vertue, in great regard and estimation, and the chief amongs

all the Women, who at his comming in would not rise, but kept her place, nor vouchsafing to doe any reuerence or honor vnto hym, and the like she bad the rest: in this wyse fitting vpon the gronnd with vnloosed tongue and liberty of speach, stoutly she answere the tyrant's demaund in this manner: "If there were in thee, Aristotimus, any manly prudence, wisedome, or good discretion, truly thou wouldest not commaund vs poore imprisioned women to write vnto our husbands, but rather suffer vs to goe vnto them, and vse more moderate wordes and myld behauour, than wherewith of late thou diddest entertaine vs, by scoffing, mocking, and cruelly dealyng with vs, and oure pore children: and if now thou being voyd of all hope, doest seeke to persuade by our meanes likewise to deceiue our husbands, that be come hither to put theyr Lyues in Peryll for our deliveraunce, I assure the thou vainly begilest thy selfe, for wee henceforth do purpose neuer to bee deceyued of the: wee require thee also to thinke and stedfastly beleue, that our husbands heades bee not so mutch bewitched with Folly, as despysing their Wyves and Chyldren, Negleecting their duetyes towards them, wyll, being in this forwardnesse, abandon their preferuation and geeeve ouer the Liberty of theyr countrey: think also that they little esteme or wey the regard of vs, and theyr children, in respect of the great contentation they shal attaine by vnyoking the liberty of theyr countrey from thy pride and intollerable bondage, and which is worst of al, from that tyranny which neuer people felt the like: for if thou were a king as thou art a tyrant, if thou were a Gentleman borne of noble kind as thou arte a flauue, proceeding from the deuil, thou wouldest neuer execute thy cursed cruelty against a feble kind, such as women be, and werest thou alone ioyned in singular combat with my valyant and dere beloued husband, thou durst not hand to hand to shew thy face: for commonly it is seene, that the Courtly Ruffyan backed on wyth such mates as he is himself, careth not what attempt he taketh in hand, and stares with hayre vpright, loking as though he would kil the deuyll, but when he is preast to seruyce of the field, and in order to encountre with his Prynce's foe, vpon the small fway by shocke or push that chaunceth in the fight, he is the first that taketh flyght, and laste that

standeth to the face of hys enimy. Such kind of man art thou, for so long as our husbands wer farre of, absent fro theyr Country, not able to rid vs from thy thral, thou wroughtest thy malyce then against theyr wyues at home, doyng the greatest cruelty towarde them and theyr fuckyng babes, that euer deuyl could do vpon the damned fort, and now thou seest them arriued here vnder our country walles, thou flyest and seekest help at women's hands, whose power if it serued them according to their willes, would make thee tast the fruit of thy commytted smart." And as she would haue proceeded further in hir liberal talk, the Caytife tyrant not able to abyde any further speach, troubled beyond measure, presently commaunded the litle child of hir to be brought before him, as though immediatly he would haue killed him, and as his fernants sought him out, the mother espied him playing amonsg other children, not knowinge for his small stature and leffe yeres, wher he was becom, and calling him by his name, said vnto him: "My boy, come hither, that first of al thou mayst lose thy life, to feele the proufe and haue experiance of the cruel tyranny wherin we be, for more grieuous it is to me to see the serue against the nobility of thy bloud, than dismembred and torn in pieces before my face." As Megistona stoutly and vnfearfully had spoken those words, the furious and angry tyrant drew forth his glisstring blade out of the sheath, purposing to have slaine the gentlewoman, had not one Cilon the familiar freend of Aristotimus stayd his hand, forbidding him to commit an act so cruel. This Cilon was a fayned and counterfayt freend of the tyrant, very conuersant with other his familiar frends, but hated him with deadly hatred, and was one of them that with Hellanicus had conspired against the tyrant. This gentleman then seeinge Aristotimus wyth so great fury to waxe wood agaynst Megistona, imbraced him, and sayd, that it was not the part of a gentleman proceeding from a Race righte honourable, by any meanes to imbrue hys Handes in Woman's bloud, but rather the signe and token of a cowardly knyght, wherfore he besought him to stay his hands. Aristotimus peruaded by Cilon, appeased his rage, and departed from the imprisoned women. Not long after, a great prodige and wonder appeared in this fort: before supper the tyrant and his wyfe with-

drue themselues into their chamber, and being there, an Egle was seene to soare ouer the tyrante's palace, and being aloft, by little and little to descend, and letting fal from her tallands a huge and great stone vpon the top of that chamber, with clapping wings and flying noyse soared vp againe, so far as she was cleane out of sight from them that did behold hir. With the rumor and shouts of those that saw this fight, Aristotimus was appalled, and vnderstanding the circumstance of the chaunce, hee sent for his diuine to declare the signification of this Augurye, which greatly troubled his minde. The Southsayer bad him to be of good chere, for that it did portend the great fauour and loue which Iupiter bare vnto him. But the prophet of the City whom the Cytizens had wel tryed and proued to be faithfull and trusty, manifested vnto them the great daunger that hong ouer the tyrant's head, sutch as the lyke neuer before. The confederats which had conspired wyth Hellanicus, made great speede to prosecute theyr enterprize, and the next night to kil the tyrant. The very same night Hellanicus dreamed that he saw his dead sonne to speake vnto him these woords: "What meane you father this long tyme to sleepe, I am one of your sonnes whom Aristotimus hath slayne, know you not that the same day you attempt your enterprize, you shalbe captaine and prince of your country?" By this vision Hellanicus confirmed, he rose bytmes in the morninge, and exhorted the conspirators that day to execute the benefit of their country. That time Aristotimus was certified how Craterus the Tyrant of another Citty, with a great army, was comming to his ayde agaynst the Banished people of Elis, and that hee was arriued at Olympia, a Citty betweene the mount Offa, and the mountayne Olympus. With whych newes Aristotimus beinge encouraged, thought alreadly that he had put to flight and taken the banished persons, which made him to aduenture hymselfe abroade wythout Guard or garrison, accompanied only wyth Cilon and one or two of his familiar frendes, the very same time that the conspiratours were assembled to do the facte. Hellanicus seeing the time so conuenient to deliuer his beloued countrey by the death of the traiterous tirant, not attending any signe to be genen to his companions (although the same was concluded vpon) the lusty old man liftinge

vp his handes and eyes vnto the heauens, with cleare and open voyce cried out to his companions and sayd: "Why stay yee, O my Cityzens and louinge countrymen, in the face of your Citty to finish this good and commendable a<sup>c</sup>t?" At whych words, Cilon was the first which with his brandishing blade killed one of those that wayted vpon the Tirant. Thrasibus then and Lampidus assayled Aristotimus, vpon whose fodayne approche, he fled into the Temple of Iupiter, where hee was murdred with a thousand wounds vpon his body, accordingly as he deserued. He beinge thus deseruedly slayne, his body was drawen vp and down the streeetes, and proclamation of liberty sounded vnto the people: whereunto ech Wyght assembled, amonges whom the imprisoned Women also brake forth, and reioyfed with their countrey deliuerers of that egregious enterprize, by fires and bankets outwardly disclofinge their exceedinge great ioy wythin, and in mid of their mirth the people in great thronges and companies ranne to the Tyrant's Palace, whose Wyfe hearinge the people's noyse, and certified of her husband's death, inclosed her selfe in a chamber with her two daughters, and knowinge how hatefull she was vnto the Citizens, with a fastned cord vpon a beame she hong hir selfe. The chamber dores being broke open, the people viewed the horrible fight of the strangled Lady, wherewithall not moued they tooke the two tremblinge Daughters of the Tyrant, and caryed them away, purposinge to Rauish and Violate the same, firste to faciate their lust with the spoyle of theire virginitye, and afterwardes to kyll them (thoſe gentlewomen were very beautiful and mariageable) and as they were about to do that shamefull deede, Megistona was told thereof, who accompanied with other Matrons sharpelye rebuked theire furye sayinge: that vncomely it were for them which fought to establishe a ciuill state, to do ſuch a shameles a<sup>c</sup>t as tyrant's rage would ſcarce permit. Vpon that noble matron's auctoritye and interception, they ceaſed from their filthy fact: and then the woman tooke the virgins out of the people's handes, and brought them into the chamber where there strangled mother was. And vnder ſtanding howe it was decreede that none of the tyrante's bloude ſhould reſt a liue: ſhee turned her face to the two yonge gentlewomen and ſayde: "The chiefest

pleasure which I can do vnto you, resteth in this choyse, that it shall be lauful for eyther of you to chose what kind of death you list, by knyfe or halter, if you wil to dispatch your liues from the headles peoples greater fury, vpon whose two whyte and tender bodyes if they do feaze the goddes do knowe and we do feare the cruelty and great abuse which they do mean to vfe, I thinke not for despyte of you, but for the iust reuenge of your most cruell father's actes, for the tyrannous life of whom the goddes do thunder downe the boltes of their displeasure, afflicting his neareſt blood and bestbeloued wyfe and children, with vengeance poured from heauens." Vpon the sentence of this the fatall ende, the elder mayden of the twayne vnloſed a gyrdle from her middle, and began to tye the ſame to hang hir ſelfe, exhorting her yonger fifter to do the lyke: and in any wife to beware by ſparing of her life, to incur the beaſtly rage of the monſtrous people, which cared not to do ech vile and filthy act, vnworthy theyr eſtate. The yonger fifter at thoſe wordes, layd handes vpon the fastened corde, and besought hir right earnefly firſt of al to ſuffer hir to die. Wherevnto the elder aunſwered: "So long as it was lawfull for me to liue, and whiles we led our princely time in our father's courte, and both were free from enimie's danger, all things betwene vs two were common and indifferent, wherefore the gods forbide (that now the gates of death be opened for vs to enter, when with the Ghostes of our deere Parentes our ſoules amids the infernall fieldes be predeſtined to raunge and wander) that I ſhoulde make denyall of thy reuenge. Therfore goe to good fifter mine, and ſhrink not when thou ſeest the vgly face of her, that muſt conſume vs all: but yet (dere fifter) the deadly fight of thee before my ſelfe, will breed to me the woe and ſmart of double death." When ſhe had ſo ſayd, the yelded the coller to her fifter, and counſelleſſe hir to place the ſame ſo neere the necke bone as ſhee could, that the ſooner the halter's force might ſtop her breath. When the vnfearful yonger fifter was dead, the trembling hands of the dredleſſe elder maid vntied the girdle from her neck, couering in comely wife her ſenfeleſſe corps. Then turning hir ſelf to Megiftona, ſhe humbly prayd hir not to ſuffer their two bodies to be feene naked, but ſo fone as ſhe could, to bury them both in one

Earthly graue, referring the frutes of their virginity to the mould wherof they came. When she had spoken these wordes, without any stay or feare at all, with the selfe same corde she strangled herselfe and so finished her fatal dayes. The guiltlesse death of which two tender maydes there was none of the citizens of Elis (as I suppose) so stonye hearted and voyde of Nature's force, ne yette so wrothe agaynst the tyrant father, but did lament, as wel for the constant stouenes and manner of their death, as for their maydenlyke behauour and right honest petitions made to that noble matrone Megisthona, who afterwardes caused the other dames to bury those two bodyes in one graue. O how happy and famous had these two fisters bene, if they had not bene the daughters of so wicked and cruell a father? But parentes offence or childrens trespas ought not to deface the vertuous dedes of their posterity.

## THE SIXTH NOUELL.

*The maruaylous courage and ambition of a gentlewoman called Tanaqvil, the Queene and wife of Tarqvinivs Priscvs the fift Roman king, with his persuasions and policy to hir husbande for his aduaancement to the kingdom, her lyke encouragement of Servius Tullius, wherein also is described the ambition of one of the ii. daughters of Servius Tullius the fixt Roman king, and her cruelty towards her owne natural father: with other accidents chaunced in the new erected common welth of Rome, specially of the last Romane king Tarqvinivs Sverbus, who with murder attained the kingdome, with murder mayntained it, and by the murder and insolent lyfe of his sonne was with al his progeny banished.*

ANCUS MARCIUS beyng the fourthe king (after Romulus the first builder of that Cittye) there came to dwell in Rome one Lucumo, a lusty gentleman, ryche and desirous of honour, who determined to continue his habitation there. The same Lucumo was the son of one Demaratus, a Corinthian, that for sedition fled his owne countrey, and dwelt in Hetruria amone the stocke of the Tarquines: and after he was maried he begat ii. s ons, one of them was this Lucumo, and the other was called Aruns. Lucumo was heire to his father, for that Aruns died before leauing his wife gret with child, the father not knowing that his daughter in law was with child, gaue nothing in his wil to his nephew: for which cause the child was called Aruns Egerius Lucumo being the sole heire of his father, maried a noble woman named Tanaquil, and bicause the Thuscans could not abide to see a straunger grow to abundance of welth and authoritie, shée despised hir owne countrey rather than shē would suffer her husband in any wise to be dishonoured. Wherfore shē deuysed to forsake the Tarquinians and to dwel at Rome, where shē thoughte among that honourable sorte and new erected state that her husband beyng stout and valiant should attayne some place of resiaunce. For shē shall be called to remembrance that Tatius the Sabine, Numa borne of the stocke of Curetes and Ancus, broughte forthe by a Sabine woman

all straungers, did rayne and became noble and mighty. Thus ambition and desire of honoure easily doth perswade any deuyse: wherfore carying with them all their substance they repaired to Rome. It chaunced when they came to Ianiculum, as he and his wife were fitting in a Wagon, an Eagle hooueringe hir wings ouer Lucumo, sodenly toke away his Cappe, which don she foared ouer the Wagon with great force, then she retourned againe, as though he had bene commaunded by some Celestyall prouidence, and aptly placed his cappe againe vpon his head, and then soared away vp into the element. Tanaquil conceiuing this act to be some Augurie or Prophecie, being cunning in that knowledg (as commonly all the people of Hetruria be) imbraced hir husband and willed him to be of good cheere and to expect great honour. And as they were ymagining and consulting vpon these euentes, they entred the City, and when they had gotten a house for him and his family, he was called Tarquinius Priscus. His riches and great welth made him a noble man amonges the Romanes, and through his gentle entertainment and curteous behauoure, he wanne the good willes of many, in so much as his fame and good reporte was bruted through out the pallace. At length he grew in acquaintance with the king him selfe, who seeing his liberall demeanor and duetifull seruice, esteemeid him as one of his familiar and nere frends, and both in his warres and also at home he imparted to him the secrets of his counsell, and hauing good experiance of his wifedom, by his laste will and testament appointed him to be tutor of his children. Ancus raignid  $xxiiii.$  yeres, a man in peace and Warre, in policy and valiance with any of his predecessours comparable: his children were very yong, and for that cause Tarquinius was more instant to summon a parliament for creation of a kyng. When the day was come he sente the young children abroade a huntyng, and then ambitiously presumed to demaunde the kyngdome, beinge the first that euer attempted the like. For the better conciliation and obteynyng of the peoples good will, hee vttered his oration: "I do not presume to require a straunge or newe thynge: that was neuer before put in practyse, nor yet am the first, but the third stranger and foraine borne that affected and aspired this gouernment: for which con-

fideration there is no cause why any man ought to muse or maruell more than behoueth. It is euidently knownen that Tatius, not onely being a stranger but also an ennemy, was made king. Numa also was made king, being altogether a Forraine and Stranger borne, not through his owne request, but rather voluntarily accited and called thereunto by the Romaynes: but for my parte, after I was able to gourne my selfe, I repayred to dwell at Rome with my Wyfe, my Children, and all my subftance, where I haue spent the chieffest portion of my lyfe, specially after it was mature and able to execute ciuile magistery, which I chose rather to bestowe at Rome than at home in myne owne country. I haue learned the Romane rites and lawes, aswell futch as be meete to serue abroade in the warres, as also necessary to be practised at hoame, at the handes of mine olde maister Ancus Martius your late king, a mayster right worthy and famous in all poynctes to bee followed: I shewed myfelfe an humble and obedient subiect to the kyng and in frendship and familiarity toward others, I contended with the kyng himselfe." When he had spoken those woordes, which in deede were very true, wyth the whole consent of the people he was saluted kynge: and as all thynges succeeded his Noble request, euen so after hee was settled in hys kyngdome, hee gaue himselfe to amplifie the common wealth: he chose an hundred graue persons, whych he called the Fathers of the lesser Countryes. He warred first with the Latines, and wan the Citty of Appolas, who bryngyng from thence a greater spoyle and booty than was looked for, ordayned richer and more gorgeous Playes than any of hys predeceſſours: hee buylded certayne Galleries and other places of assembly aboute the Forum, hee walled the City round about wyth Stone: and as he was doing these things, the Sabines interuented him vpon the fodayne, in ſo much as they were paſſed the Ryuer of Anienes before the Romane hofte was in a readyneſſe: whych was an occation of great feare and flyrre at Rome. In the ende after the battayles were ioyned betweene them both, a cruell and bloudy flaughter was commytted, the victorye falling to neyther parte. Then the Romanes fought meanes to renue theyr force, by addyng to theyr armye a further bande of horfemen. Wherfore Tarquinius fent to the Rammenses, Titienſes,

Luceres: to the bandes that Romulus had conscribed, hee added other new troupes of horfemen, purposing that the same should contynue in memorye of him after hys death: and bicause Romulus dyd the same without aduyse of the Southsayers, one Accius Nauius, the notablest Prophecier in those Dayes, wythstode that constitutyon, affyrmynge that it was not lawfull for him eyther to appoyn特 a newe order or to alter the olde, except the byrdes and auguries did assent thereunto: wherewith the kynge was displeased and deluding that Scyence, said: "Go to M. Southsayer: tell me now" (quod he) "is it poffible to bring that to passe which I haue now conceiued in my mynd?" "Yea," quod the Southsayer, "if you tel me what it is." "Then" quod Tarquinius, "I haue deuised that thou shalte pare thine owne skin with a raser: therfore take thys knyfe and doe as thy byrdes doe portend and signifie." And as it was reported he pared his owne Skin in deede: in memory whereof an Image of Accius was erected, with his Head couered: after that tyme there was nothing attempted without those auguries. Notwithstandyng, Tarquinius proceeded in hys constytutyon, and added to the Centurias an other number, for that 1800 horfemen wer conteyned in the three Centuriæ: the latter addytion was called also by the same name, whych afterward were doubled into vi. Centurias. When hys Numbre was thus increased, once again he ioyned battell wyth the Sabines, who by a notable pollicy recouered a great victory: and bicause the Sabines doubled a fresh onfet without any order of battell or good aduyfement, they were ouerthrownen, and then constrained to make petition for peace: the City of Collatia, and the Country confining vpon the same, was taken from the Sabines. The Sabine warres beinge in this forte ended, Tarquinius in tryumphauant maner retourned to Rome. At that time a prodyge and myraculous wonder chaunced to bee feene in the Palace. The head of a Chyld whose name was Seruius Tullius lying a slepe in the palace, was feene to burn. The kyng was brought to see that myracle: and as one of his seruaunts was going to fetch water to quench the fire, he was stayed by the Queene, who commaunded that the child shoulde not once be touched vntyll he awaked of hymselfe: and so soone as hee rose

from sleepe, the fire vanyshed: then she tooke hir husbande aside, and sayd: "Doe you see this Chyld whom we haue very basely and negligently brought vp? I assure you sir (fayd she) he wil be the onely safeguard and defender of this our doubtfull state, and will be the preferuer of our household when it is afflycted: wherefore let vs make much of him, that is lyke to be the ornament and a worthy stay to all our famyly." After that they had accompted him amongs the Number of theyr Chyldren, and traded him vp in those Arts, which excyte all good dispositions to aspyre vnto houour, the pleasure of the Gods appeared in shorte tyme: for the child grew to a royll behauior, in so much, as among all the Romane youth there was none more mete to mary the daughter of Tarquinius. This Seruius Tullius, was the sonne of one Seruius Tullius that was a Captaine of a towne called Corniculum, at the apprehension whereof, it chaunced that the sayd Tullius the father was slayne, leauing his wife great with child: the mother being a captiue and bondwoman was delyuered of hir Child at Rome, in the house of Priscus Tarquinius. After Tarquinius had raigned 38 yeres, the yong man began to grow to great honor and estimation, aswell with the kinge himselfe, as also with the Fathers. Then the Romanes conceiued a hateful indignation against the king, for that he being put in trust to be the tutor and gouernour of Ancus children, displaced them from theyr ryght inheritance, and specially for that he himself was a stranger, fearyng also that the kingdome should not return again to the election of themselues, but degenerat and grow into seruile bondage. They also caled to remembrance, that the city continued one hundred yeres after the sublation of Romulus, an intier kingdome within one city, and that it was a shame for them to suffer a bondeman, borne of seruile kind, to posseſſe the same, and would redounde to their perpetuall ignominie, hauing the progenie of Ancus aliue, to suffer the same to be open to strangers, and bondmen: wherefore they determiniued to defend the grieve of that iniury, and to be reuenged rather vpon Tarquinius, than upon Seruius. In fine, they committed the execution of that fact to two shepherds chosен out for that purpose: who deuised this pollicy: before the entry into the Palace they fell togyther by the eares, vpon whych fray al the kinge's

officers assembled and repaired thither to know the cause of theyr falling out, when they were parted, they appealed to the king, with such exclamation as they were heard to the Palace: beyng called before the king, both of them fell to brauling, and one of them striued of purpose to hinder the tale of the other. The king's sergeant rebuked them, commaunding them to tel theyr tales in order: when they were a lyttle quieted, one of them beginneth to discourse the tale. And as the king was attentife to heare the plaintif, the other tooke vp a hatchet and threw it at the kynge, and leauing thee weapon stickinge in the wound, they conueyed theymselues out of the dores. Thoſe that wayted vpon the kynge, made haſt to releue him, and the Sergeantes followed to apprehend the malefactors. Wyth that a hurly burly rose amoung the people, every man maruellinge what the matter shoulde be. Tanaquil commaunded the Palace Gates to be shut, and ſeeketh remedy to cure her husband, as though ſome hope fayled of his recouery, ſhe called Seruius before her (whych maried her daughter) and ſhewed vnto him her dead husband, holdinge him fast by the right hande, ſhee intreated hym that he would not ſuffer the death of his father in the law to be vnreuenged, to the intent he might not be ridiculous to the traytours, ſaying to him further theſe wordes: "If thou bee a man of thy handes (O Seruius) the kyngdome is thyne and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the handes of other haue committed thy abhominable fact: wherefore put forth thy ſelf, and the Gods be thy guide: for they did portend this noble head to be the gouernour of this city, at ſuch tyme as they circumfused the ſame with a fire descending from aboue. Let that heauenly flame excite thy courage: be throughly awaked: we beyng ſtraungers ſometimes haue raigned. Thinke and confider what thou art, and not from whence thou cameſt: if the strangenesſe of the caſe do affray the, my counſel from time to time ſhall relieve thee." The cry and ſirre of the people being vnmeſurable, that one could ſcarſe heare an other, Tanaquil opened the windowes that had their prospect to the new way (for the king dwelt at the temple of Iupiter Stator) and then ſpake to them in thyſ wyſe: "Be of good cheere (good people) the king is but amazed with the fodainesſe of the ſtroke, the wound is not very deepe, for euen

nowe he is come agayne to hym selfe, and the wounde being opened and dressed there is good hope of life : I trust within these fewe dayes you shall see hym : in the meane time, I pray you to shewe your obeydency to Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes, and to doe all other affayres in the absence of my husbande." Seruius occupyinge the state and authoritye of the kyng, executed the lawes in some cases, and in other some made the people beleue that he would consult with the king him selfe. The death of the king was concealed and kept close a certayne space til such tyme as Seruius had gathered his force about him. After the death of the kynge was disclosed, Seruius beinge garded with a strong garrison, toke vpon him to be king, not by the consente of the people, but by the will of the Fathers. The children of Ancus vnderstanding that the kyng was aliue, and that Seruius power and force was greate, conveyed themselues in exile to Suesa Pometia: and leaste the children of Tarquinius should attempte lyke enterpryse agaist him, as the children of Ancus did agaynst Tarquinius, hee maryed ii. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns the chyldren of Tarquinius. But yet the deuise of man could not breake the necessity of fate and constellatyon, for the hatred conceiued in desire of ambitious gouernment, made all thyngs vnstable and vnfaythfull amoungs domestical frends : but yet to quyet and pacifye the preuent tyme, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cytyes of Hetruria: wherein the Fortune and valiance of Tullius excelled : for when he had given an ouerthrow to the ennimy, leaft the people's and fathers good wil shoule be withdrawne, he retourned to Rome : who then attempted and broughte to passe a notable worke in the common wealth. He instituted a certayne yerely taxe and reuenew, to satisfie and discharge all charges susteined in the time of peace and warre, with sundry other notable lawes and deuises for the defence of the publique state. After that he had mustered the whole numbre of the Citizens in the field called Martius, the same amounted to **LXXX.M.** and as Fabius Pictor saith, there were so many that were able to beare armure. Then the hilles Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquiliæ, were added to the Citye. He compassed the town round about wyth a vamure, enuironyng the same with a double trench. He deuyded

the Romanes into v. bandes called Clusses, and into Centurias, whych bee bandes of an hundred men. He also builded a temple to Diana, with the helpe and affistance of the Latine people. Amongs the Sabines there chaunced an Oxe in the House of an Husbande Man to bee broughte forth, of an huge bignesse and maruellous shape (the hornes whereof were placed at the porche of Diana's temple for a monument long time after.) The Southfayers prophecie that where the same Oxe shoulde be first sacrificed to Diana, there the Chyefe empire and principall gouernement should remaine: which prophecie came to the knowledge of the Chyefe minister of Diana hir Temple. One of the Sabin's expecting for a day mete to be employed in that sacrifice, brought the fayde Oxe to Rome to the Temple of Diana, placing the same before the altar. The chiefe Minister calling to remembrance the oracle, and saw that the greatnesse of that sacrifice shoulde be famous, spake to the Sabine these wordes: "What dost thou meane (thou impure Straunger) to prepare sacrifice to Diana, before thou bee purified and clenfed in the lyuelye Riuers of Tiber? Here belowe in this valley the fayde riuers doth runne: go get the hense and wash the." The Sabine attatched with a religious feare, goeth downe to the Riuers, and while he is washing himselfe a Romane doth offer the Sacrifice, which was right acceptable both to the kyng and his country. The king althoughe that of longe tyme he had raigned, yet vnderstoode that the elder Tarquinius which was maried to one of his daughters, did bragg and report eftstones that his father in law obteined the gouernment and kingdom without the consent of the people: wherfore the king through his lyberalty by dyuyding the conquest atchyeued of the Ennymye amongs the common people, conciliated theyr fauor and good wils: in so much as he affirmed that he would raign in despite of them all, and that there was no king at any tyme that raigned with a more generalll consent: all whych did nothing diminish the hope and desire of Tarquinius. He had a Brother whose name was Aruns, being of a quiet and gentle disposition. Both they maried two of the king's daughters, which were of manners and condicions very vnlike. The yonger daughter being the wife of Aruns, the sharper shrewe, and fiercer of nature, feeing that hir husbande

was nothing giuen or plyant to match with hir vngracious deuice or ambitious stomack, attempted hir brother, whose condicion was correspondent to hirs, and sayd vnto him, that he was a Man in deede, and one worthy to be accompted to be borne and proceede of the bloud Royall. Then she began to contemne hir sister, for that she hauing fuch a man to hir husbande, would suffer him to neglect so meete and iust occasion for recouery of the kingdom. Their natures being of one disposition, as commonly one myschyefe procureth an other, al things began to be disquieted throughe the attempt of that vngracious woman. To be shorte, they two deuyed meanes, that Aruns hys Brother, and the Elder Tullia hir sister were slain: which done, they two maried together. The wicked woman ceased not daylye to animate and prouoke hir husbande from one parricide to an other. And amongs all hir wicked talke and cruel instigations, she vsed these words: “ If thou be that man vnto whom I thinke I am maryed, then I wil call the both husband and king: but if thou bee not hee, then the alteratyon is chaunged to the worse, and cruelty is matched with cowardise. But why doest thou not put thy selfe in a readinesse? Why thou commest not nowe from Corinthe, or from the Hetrurian Tarquines, to atchieue and conquere newe kingdoms as thy father did. The familiar Gods and the Gods of thy countrey, the nobility of thy father, and thy royal bloud, thy stately feate within thine own house, and thy name Tarquinius, do create and make kyng. But if in al these occasions thou doft wante stomacke, why doft thou make the whole Citye conceyue a false opinion of thee? Why doft thou not shewe thyselfe to be the sonne of a king? Auode hence I say, and go to the Tarquinians, or to Corinth, retire again to thy firste lynage: thou doft rather resemble thy brother’s effeminate hart, than the valiant stomacke of thy father.” With these wordes and futch like, she pricked forward hir husbande, and she hir self could in no wise bee quiet. Then Tarquinius went forth to the fathers of the leſſer countries, and called to theyr remembraunce the benefites vnto them by hys father extended, desiring the like to bee shewed and rendered vnto hym, he allured the yonger sort of the City by giftes and other lyberall rewardes, promising them if he atteined his purpose, more frankly to recom-

pence them. By this meanes the king became odious and offensive to the people. Tarquinius seeing his time, guarded with a bande of Men, entred the market place, wherewith the common people were greatly abashed, then he mounted into the palace, and placed himselfe in the royal seate of the same, causinge the Fathers to be cited before hym by the haraulde, vnto whom he repeted the petigree of Seruius, and his first entrance into the kingdom. As he was speaking these wordes, Seruius in great haste repayred to the Palace, and findyng Tarquinius fitting in his place, sayd to him these wordes : "Why? what is the matter Tarquinius (quod he?) Howe darest thou be so bolde so long as I am liuing to call the Fathers, or yet presume to sit in my seat?" Wherunto Tarquinius fiercely replied : "That hee possest but the roume of his father, which was more mete for a king's sonne and heyre, than for suche a bondeman as hee was, and that hee had long enough abused his lordes and maisters." Wherwithal a great hurly burly and tumult began to rise by the fautors of both parts, so that he was like to attaine the Garland, which best could daunce for it. Tarquinius forced to giue the lafte aduenture, beyng more lusty and stronger than the other, tooke Seruius by the myddle, and caryinge hym oute of the Courte, threwe hym downe the Staires, whyche done, hee caused the Senate to retourne into the Palace. Then the kynge wyth all hys trayne of Offycers, and other hys seruaunts ranne away, and as they were flying, hee was flayne by those that Tarquinius sent after to pursue hym, in the streeete called Cyprius. Tullia vnderstandingy that Seruius hyr father was flayne, she bashed not in hir Wagon to come into the market place before all the assemblye there, called hir husband out of the Court, and boldly was the first that called him king. But being rebuked and commaunded by him to auid out of that greate throng of people, she retired home agayn, and when she was paste the vpper ende of the said strete called Cyprius, the wagoner dryuing toward the right hand to the Hill called Exquiliæ, hee stayed the Wagon, and shewed his Ladye the bodye of hyr Father, lyng starke dead in the streeete. In memory of which shamefull and vnnatural fact, long tyme after ther contynued a Monument: for the same strete was called Vicus Sceleratus. Some report that

she caused the wagon to be dryuen ouer the dead corps of hir father, wyt the bloud of whom and hir hufband, hir wagon being contaminated, she presented the same to hir Gods: after which abhominable beginnings, like end ensued. This Seruius Tullius raigned XLIII. yeres. Then Tarquinius began to raigne, vnto whom Superbus was added for his surname: this wicked sonne in law would not suffer the dead body of Seruius to be buried. His conscience being pricked with the abhominable gaine of hys kyngdom, fearyng also leaft other might conceiue like example, he guarded his person with a band of armed men, executing all thinges wyt force and tyranny, contrary to the aduyse and consents of the Senate and people. He caused the fautors and frendes of Seruius to be put to death, whereby the numbre of the Fathers was diminished, whose places he suffred none other to supply, of purpose to bring that honourable order to contempt. He governed the common welth by his own domestical and priuate Counsel: War, peace, truce, society of the Cyties adioining, he vsed as he list, without any further assent. The Latines he specially regarded, to the intent that through forreine aide hee might raign in more surety at home, with the chief of which country he ioyned affinity. One Octauius Manilius, a Tusculan born, was the prince and chief ruler of that country, descending from the stock of Vlisses, and the Goddesse Circes, if the fame be true, vnto whom Tarquinius gaue his daughter in mariage: by reason wherof he conciliated great alliance and frendes. Tarquinius beinge of great authority among the Latines, appointed them vpon a day to assemble at a woode called Ferentina, there to intreat of matters concerninge both the states. To which place the Latines repaired vpon the breake of the day, but Tarquinius came not thither till the Sunne was set. During whych time many things were in talke. There was one amonges them called Turnus Herdonius, whych in Tarquinius absence had inueyed vehemently agaynst hym, affirminge that it was no maruell though he was called Superbus by the Romanes. For what prouder mock could be inforced to the Latines, than to make them wayt a whole day for his pleasure. "Dyuers Princes and Noblemen (quod he) that dwel far of, be come according to the appointment, and he which

first allotted the day, is not present. Heereby it most euidently appeareth in what sort he will vse vs if he myghte once attayne the foweraynty. And who doubteth in thys so manyfest apperance, but that he went about to affect the Dominion of the Latines? If the Romanes haue had iust cause to beleue him, and if their Kyngdome had ben but gotten and not violently rapt and stolne by parricide, then the Latines myghte also beleue hym, who being but a straunger to them, had no great cause to beleue hym. Hys owne subiects do repent the time that euer he bare rule: For some be slayne and heaped vpon the dead bodies of other, some be banished, some haue lost their goods: what other frutes than these maye the Latine people expecē and look for? Therefore if they would be ruled, he required euery man to returne home to his own house, and geue no more attendaunce for the day of Counsel, than he doth which first appoyncted the same." These wordes and sutch like, this sedicious and desperat man declared: Whose talke Tarquinius interuented, and vpon his comming every man conuerted him selfe to salute him. Then Tarquinius began to excuse his long tariaunce, for that he was appoyned an arbitrator betwene the father and the sonne, for whose reconciliation he was forced to stay that longe space, and to spend the time of that day. Wherefore he appoyned the next day. The conceit of which excuse Turnus could not kepe secret, but sayd: that a matter betwene the father and the sonne might be ended in few wordes: for if the childe would not be obedient to his father, some mischyef must needes lyght vpon him. Tarquinius vnderstanding these inuectiōns made agaist hym by Turnus, immediatly deuyfeth meanes to kil him, to the intent he myght inculcate like terror to the Latines, that he did to his owne subiects. And bicause he was not able to sort his purpose to effect by secrete malice, he attempted to accuse him of Treason, and suborned (by means of diuers of the Citty of Aricia) his owne man whom with gold he had corrupted to bring in a forged accusation, whych was that his maister had prepared in one night a number of men with Munition and weapon to distroy the Nobility of the Latines, of purpose to recouer the principallitye of the same. This matter began to be suspiciois, by reasōn of the Tumult made the day beforē against Tarquinius, and therefore the people the soner

did credit the case. In fine, Turnus was condemned, and therefore a new kind of death devised for him. Who being laide vpon a Hurdle his face vpward, was throwen into the water of Ferrentina. This execution being done Tarquinius reuoked the Latines to Counsel, wherein he praised them for their Iustice extended vpon Turnus, and then spake these wordes: "I may by an old order and constitution iustlye say thus much vnto you. The whole nation of the Latines descending from the City of Alba are bounde to obserue that truce which the Albanes wyth all their colonies annexing themselues to the Romane Empyre in the tyme of Tullius Hostilius, were firmly obliged to accomplishe. The renouation whereof will nowe conduce more aduaantage and vtylity to them al, than euer it did beefore. For throughe this Truce the Latines shall possede and participate parte of the prosperous succeſſe of the Romane people. Better it were in this fort to ioyne themſelues togither, than to ſee Dēſtruction of either Cities, Depopulacions and ſpoiles of their countries, whych in the time of Ancus (my father then raygnynge) he ſuffered. The like alſo (if you do forſake this offer) ye may ſtill expeſte and ſuffer." The Latines herevnto were ſoone perſwaded, a Day was appointed when the luſtiest ſorte of theiyr Countrie ſhould be ready armed at the wood called Ferrentina. Being ioyned in order of battel, they marched towardes the Volsciens, and wanne the Citye of Sueſſa Pometia, the ſpoile wherof Tarquinius folde for xl. Talents, imploying the ſame vpon the Temple of Iupiter. Afterwards he assaulted the Gabinians, and when he ſaw he coulde not by force obteyne the ſame, he furmized a pollicy. Who ſeeming to bend him ſelf wholy vpon the building of the *Capitole* and to ſet aside the affaires of his warres, deuized with his ſonne Sextus, which was the youngēſt of the three, that he ſhould runne to the Gabinians, and complayne of his father's intollerable crueltye, whych accordingly he did. Who ſhewinge hymſelue as a voluntarye exyle, ſayd that hys father had conuerted hys tyranny from other, and began to execute the ſame vpon his owne freendes, and that he was also weary of the prefence of his owne chyldren going about to remoue hys domeſticallyal conuerſants oute of hys houſe, as he had done the like out of the Court, to the intent hee would leaue no offspring or heyre behinde

him to posseſſe his kingdome: adding further, that he was escaped euen through the midde of his father's weapons and fury, thincking no place better for his safegarde and refuge, than to feeke succour amonſt his enimies. "And bicaufe (quod he) ye ſhall not be deſcieued, he is euen now preparing of warres againſt you, and purpoſeth vpon the ſodaine to ſet vpon you. Now if there be no place of abode for me your humble ſuppliant amonſt you, I muſt needes wander through Italy, and firſt I will attempt the Volſcians, afterwardes the Æquians and Hernicians, tyll futch tyme as I finde ſome Nation willing to defend the poore Chylde from the cruell and wicked furye of the Father: and perchaunce (quod he) ye ſhall wynne hym that may bee an Inſtrument and courage vnto you all, to repreffe that proude kyng and cruell Natyon." The Gabinians delyberating what was beſt to be done in this caſe, the young man ſeemed as though he were offendēd, and would in al haſt depart, and feeke refuge of others, then they curteouſly interteined him: thys yong man was had in great estimation amonſt them, throughe craftye and vaine perſuasions, makyng them belieue that he would conduct their army euen vnder the walles of Rome, with fundry other fained iſtigations to bryngē him ſelf the more in credit. At length he was choſen captain of theyr warres, and recouered fundry victories for the Gabinians: whereby the fooliſh Nation both of the lower and chiefest fort, beleueed that their captayne was ſent vnto them by the prouidence of the Gods. He fuſtained perill and payne in like fort as the common Souldier did, liberally deuidinge his ſpoiles and bootties amonſt them. He was ſo well beloued, that hys father Tarquinius at Rome was of no greater authority than hee was among the Gabinians. When he thought that he had recouered force enough to anſwer his father's expeſtation, he ſent a poſt to Rome to know his father's pleaſure, although the gods had giuen him ſufficient authority amonſt the Gabinians. And bycause Tarquinius was doubtful of the truſt and fidelity of the meſſenger, hee would aunſwer nothing by worde of mouth, but caryng the meſſenger into a garden, hard adioyning his house, with a wand which he caried in his hand, he cut of the heads of the highest Poppies that grew in the garden, meanyng therby that he ſhoulde diſpatche the

heads of the chiefeſt and principal in the City. Whervpon the meſſanger without anſweſe by mouth returned. But by declarynge thoſe ſignes and circumſtances which hiſ father vſed in the gaſten Sextuſ conceiued hiſ meaning. Then like a naturall ſonne, following the ſteppes of hiſ father, he cut of the heads of the Gaſbinian nobility, wherupon ſom ran away, vpon whoſe departure the goods as wel of them as of other that were put to death were deuided. The ſtate of the Gaſbinians being in thiſ doubtful caſe, void of al counſell and ſuccour, at length was ſurrendred to the Romanes. Then Tarquiniuſ concluded peace with the Aequians, and renued a truce with the Thuscanes and wholly bent hiſ ſelf to the aſſayres of the City. Thiſ Tarquiniuſ was the father of hiſ that rauiſhed the noble Lady Lucretia: the lamentable hiſtory whereoſe, is recited in my former Tome, by the end of which ſtock, remembred in thiſ hiſtory, and begining of the fame deſcribed in thiſ Nouell, may be gathered, what fruytēs Ambytyon and lothſome luſte bryng forth. For Tarquiniuſ Prifcuſ repairing out of Hetruria, to dwell at Rome, by the ambycyous wyll of hys wyfe aſpired and aſhyned the kyngdome, whych was by the fundry deuyce of Tullia, the daughter of Seruiuſ Tulliuſ maiſteyned, and by the libidinous deſire of Sextuſ Tarquiniuſ, the ſonne of Superbuſ the 6 Romane kynge ended, and the whole race expelleſ and euerlaſtingly baniſhed out of that Citty. So meeete an example for thoſe that breath, and longe after the Rightes, titles, and Kyngdomes of other, as may bee read in any Author. For although the Springe appeare very fresh and luſty, of ſome degenerate grifft plaunted vpon ſome auncient ſtock, yet the fruyt moſt commonly in taste eateth ſomwhat fower, and the Relliſhe in mouth not altogether ſo pleasaunt, as that whych both in foyle and ſtocke, is dueſy planted.

## THE SEUENTH NOUELL.

*The unhappy end and successe of the loue of King Massinissa, and  
Queene Sophonisba his wyfe.*

IF men would haue afore consideration of theyr owne doings, before they do attempt the same, or els premeditate and study the scope and successe thereof, I do verely beleue that a numbre would not cast themselues headlong into so many gulfs of miseryes and calamityes as they do, specially Noblemen, and Prynces, who oftentimes doe exceede in temerity and rashnesse, by lettyng the Raynes of theyr own Lustes, to farre to raunge at large, wherein they deepeley Plunge thymselues to theyr great Preiudice and Dishonour, as teacheth thys goodly hystorie ensuinge, whych declareth that there was a Prynce called Massinissa, the Sonne of Gala kynge of Massæzali, (a people of Numidia) : who warfaring with the Carthaginians in Spaine agaynst the Romaynes, hauinge first fought honourably agaynst kynge Syphax in Numidia, it chaunced that Gala hys Father dyed, vpon whose death hys Kyngdome was inuaded and occupied by other, wherefore sustayninge stoutly the surges of aduersity combatinge wyth hys Enemyes, sometymes getting part of hys Kyngdome, and sometymes losinge, and many tymes molestinge both Syphax and the Carthaginians, was in dyuers Conflicts lyke to be taken or slayne. Wyth these hys trauels, impacient of no payne and trouble, he became very Famous and Renoumed, that amonges the people of Affrica, he acquiréd the name and title of a valiant and puissant Souldier, and of a politique and prouident Captain : afterwards he was generally welbeloued of the Souldiers, bicause not like the king's sonne or a prince, but as a priuate souldier and companion, his conuerstation and vsuall trade of life was amonsgs them, calling euery man by his propre name, cherishing and esteeming them according to their desert, obseruing neuertheleffe a certaine comelinesse of a Superiour. This Massinissa by meanes of one Syllanus being in Spayne, priuely entred acquaintance and familiarity with that Scipio which afterwardes was furnameſd *Africanus*, and who in

those dayes with the authoritie of Proconsul in that prouince, victoriouſly subdued the Carthaginians: the ſame Maffinissa entred league with the Romanes and inuiolably ſo long as he liued obferued amity with the Romane people, and lefte the ſame to his children and posteritie as an inheritance. When the Romanes began warres in Affrica, ſpedily with that power he was able to make, he repaired to his old friend Scipio: within a whyle after Syphax beynge ouerthrowen in battell and taken, Maffinissa and Lælius were ſent to ſurprise the chief city of that kingdom, which ſometimes were king Syphax owne, called Cirta. / In that city remayned Sophonisba, the wyfe of Syphax and daughter to Hafdrubal of Gifcon, who had alyenated hir husband from the Romanes, being in league with them, and by hir persuasions went to aide and defend the Carthaginians. Sophonisba perceiving that the ennemis were entred the City of Cirta: and that Maffinissa was going towards the palace, determined to meeke him, to proue his gentlenesse and curteſie, whereupon in the middes of his Souldiers thronge, whych were already entred the Palace, ſhe ſtoutly thrust, and bouldrie looked round aboue, to proue if ſhe could eſpye by ſome fignes and tokens the perfonage of Maffinissa. She amongs that preafe perceiued one for whose apparel, armure and reuerence don vnto him, ſemed vnto hir that without doubt the ſame was the king: and therefore incontinently kneeled downe before him, and pitioſly began to ſpeake in this manner: “ For ſo mucht (O puissant prince) as felicity and good fortune, but ſpecially the fauour of the Gods immortall haue permitted, that thou ſhouleſt recouer thine auncient kingdome descended vnto the by righte and lawfull inheritaunce, and therewithall haſt taken and vanquished thine ennemy, and now haſt me at thy wyll and pleasure to faue or fpyll, I poore wretched myferable woman brought into bondage from Queenelyke ſtate, whilom leading a delicatife life in Princely Courte, accompanied with a royll traine of beautifull dames, and nowe at thy mercifull diſpoſition, doe humbly appeale to thy mercye and goodneſſe, whofe Princely maiestie and comfortable aspect, chereth vp my woefull heart to loke for grace, and therefore am bold thus to preſume with moſt humble voice to implore and crie out, beſeechyng thee to reach me

hither thy victorious handes to kiffe and salute.” This Lady was a passing faire gentlewoman, of flourishing age and comely behaviour, none comparable vnto her within the whole region of Affrica: and so much the more as hyr pleasant grace by amiable gesture of complaint did increase, so much the heart of Massinissa was delyted, who being lusty and of yonthly age (according to the nature of the Numides,) was easly intrapped and tangled in the nettes of Loue: whose glutting eyes were neuer ful, nor fiery hart was satissified in beholding and wondring at hir most excellent beauty: not foreseeing therefore, or taking heede of the dangerous effect of beautie’s snares, his heart being so fiercely kindled with the swingyng flames of loue, who causing hir to rise, exorted hir to prosecute hir supplication: then she began to procede as foloweth: “If it may be lawfull for me thy prysoner and bond-woman (O my soueraign lord) to make request, I humbly do beseech thee, by thy royal maiesty, wherein no long time past my husband and I were magnificently placed in so kynglike guise as thou art now, and by that Numidicall name, common vnto thee and my husbande Syphax, and by the fauinge Gods and Patrons of this City, who with better fortune and more ioyfull successe do receyue thee into the same, that expelled Syphax out from thence: it may please thy sacred state, to haue pity on me. I require no hard and difficult thinge at thy handes, vse thine imperiall gouernement ouer me, futch as law of armes and reason of Warre require: cause me if thou wilt, to pyne in cruel pryson, or do me to futch death with tormentes, as thou list to vse, the sharp, fierce and cruel death that any wight can suffre, or Perillus Bull shall not be dreadfull vnto me, but more deare and acceptable than wonted life in pleasures led: for no death shal bee refused of mee, rather than to be rendred into the proud handes of the most cruell Romanes. Rather had I taft the trust of a natvie Numidie, borne with me in Affrike soyle, than the faith of straungers kinde: I know full well that thou doft knowe what curtesy a Carthagian and daughter of Hafdrubal, shal surely looke for at the Romanes hands: whose mind is fearfull of nothing more than of theyr pride and glory intollerable: if thou (my lord) haddest fifters of thine own, or daughters of thy royal bloud brought forth

think that they may chaunce (if fortune frown) to slide into the Pit of aduerse lucke, so well as I am nowe : of that forme Fortune's wheele is made, whych we dayly fee to be vnstable, turninge and dyuers, that now peace and now warre it promifeth, now euill it threatneth, now mirth, now sorrow it bringeth, now aduauncinge aloft, now tumbling downe the clymbers up. Let Syphax bee cleare and liuely Example to thee, whych coulde neuer finde any stedfast stay vnder the Moone's Globe. He was the mightiest and the richest kinge that raigned in Affrica, and now is the most miserable and vnlucky wight that liueth on Land. The Gods graunt that I bee no Prophet or Diuiner of future euill, whose omnipotency I deuoutly beseech to suffer thee and thy posterity in Numidie land and moft happily to raygne. Vouchsafe then to deliuer me from the Romanes thralldome, which if thou bee not able safely to bryng to passe, cause death (the easse of al woe) to be inflicted vpon me." In speaking those words, she tooke the kynge's right hande and many times sweetly kissed the fame. And then her teares turned to pleasant cheare, in sutch wife as not onely the mynde of the armed and victorious Prynce was moued to mercy, but straungely wrapped in the amorous Nets of the Lady, whereby the victour was subdued by the vanquyshed, and the Lord surprysed of his Captiue, whom with tremblinge voyce thus he aunswered : " Make an end, O Sophonisba, of thy large complaynt, abandon thy conceyued feare, for I wil not onely ridde the from the Romayne handes, but also take thee to my lawfull wyfe (if thou therewith shalt be content) whereby thou shalte not leade a prisoner's life, but passe thy youthfull dayes and hoarye age (if gods doe graunt thy life so long) as Quene vnto a king, and wife vnto a Romane frend." When he had sayd so with weeping teares, he kissed and imbraced hir. She by the countenaunce, Sygnes, Gestes, and interrupted Woordes, comprehendyng the Minde of the Numide king to be kindled with feruent loue: the more to inflame the same beemoned her self with such heauiness, as the beastly heartes of the Hircane Tygres would haue bene made gentle and dispoiled of al fiercenesse, yf they had beheld her: and againe she fel downe at hys feete, kissinge the armed Sabbatons vpon the fame, and bedewinge them with hir warme teares. After many

sobbes and infinite sighes, comforted by him, she sayd: "O the the glorie and honor of all the kynges that euer were, bee or shall bee hereafter: O the safest aide of Carthage mine vnhappy countrey without desert, and now the present and most terrible astonishment: if my hard fortune and distresse after so great ruine might haue bene reliued, what greater fauour, what thing in all my life, coulde chaunce more fortunate, vnto me, than to bee called wife of thee? O, I bleffed aboue all other women to haue a man so noble and famous to husband. O mine aduenturous and most happy ruine. O my moſte fortunate mifery, that ſuſh a glorious and incomparable mariage was prepared for me: but bicaufe the Gods be ſo contrary vnto me, and the due ende of my life approcheth (my deare foueraygne lorde) to kindle againe in me, my hope half dead, or rather consumed and ſpent, bicaufe I ſee myſelf wrapped in a ſtate, that in vayne againſt the pleafures of the Gods, I go about to moleſt thee: a greate gift (and to fay truthe) a right great good turne, I make accompte to haue receiued of thee, if mine owne death I ſhould procure by thee, that dyinge by thy means or with thy handes, (whych were more acceptable,) I ſhoulde eſcape the feare of the Romaynes thral and ſubiection, and this foule deliuuered of the ſame, ſhould ſtreight paſſe into the Elyſian fieldes. The final ſcope of this my humble plaint, is to ryd me from the hands of the Romanes, whose thraldom to ſuffer I had rather die. The other benefit which thou doſt franklly offer to me pore wretch, I dare not deſire, mutch leſſe re-quire the ſame, bicaufe the preſent ſtate of my miſhap dareth not preſume ſo high. But for this thy pity and compaſſion ioined with louing regard and mind toward me, mightyne Ioue with al the other Gods reward and bleſſe thy gotten kingdom in long raign, enlarging the ſame with more ample bounds to thine eternal re-noum and praife: and I do not only reñer humble thanks for this thy kynd and louing enterteinment, but also yeld my ſelf thine own, ſo long as lyfe gouerneth this caitif corps of mine." These words wer pronounced with ſuſh effect, as Maffinissa was not able for pity to hold his teares, which watred ſo his comely form, as the dew therof foaked into his tender heart, and not able a long time to ſpeake, at laſt thus hee sayd: "Gyue ouer (O my quene)

these cares and thoughts, dry vp thy cries and plaints, make an end of all these dolorous futes, and reioyce, that frowarde Fortune hath changed hir mind: the Gods no doubt with better succeſſe, wil perfourm the rest of thy liuing dais. Thou ſhalt henceforth remain my Quene and wife, for pledg whereof the ſacred Godheads I cal to witneſſe. But if perchaunce (which the thundring mighty God aboue forbide) that I ſhalbe forced to render thee the Romanes prisoner, be well assured, that on liue they ſhall not poſſeſſe the." For credit and accomplishment of this promiſſe, and in figne of his auſſured faith, he reached his right hand to Sophonisba, and led hir into the inner lodging of the king's Palace, wher afterward Maffinissa with himſelf confidering how he might perform hys promiſed faith, vexed and troubled with a thouſand cogitations, feing in a maner his maniſt ouerthrow and ruine at hand, prouoked with mad and temerarious loue, the very ſame day in open preſence he toke hir to wife, ſolemniſing that mariage, which afterwardes bred vnto hym great vexation and trouble, meanyng by the ſame to haue dyscharged Sophonisba from the Romanes rule and order. But when Lælius was come and hearde tell thereof, hee fretted and chafed, and wyth threatnyng Wordes commaunded Maffinissa to ſend his new maried wife (as the booty and pray of the Romanes) together wyth Syphax, to their captaine Scipio. Notwithſtanding, vanquished with the ſupplications and teares of Maffinissa, referring the matter wholy to the iudgement of Scipio, he diſpatched Syphax with the other priſoners and bootie, to the Romane campe, and he himſelf remained with Maffinissa for the recouerie of other places of the kingdome, minding not to returne before the whole prouince were brought vnder the Romane ſubiection. In the meane time Lælius gaue intelligence vnto Scipio, of the ſucceſſe of Maffinissa his mariage: who knowing the ſame to be ſo haſtilye celebrauēd, was maruellousflye offendēd and troubled in Minde, mutche maruellouslyng that Maffinissa woulde make ſutche poſthauſt before the comming of Lælius. Yea and vpon the very firſt day of his entrie into Cirta, that hee woulde conſummate that vnaudied wedding: and the greater was Scipio his diſpleaſure towards Maffinissa, for that the loue which he had conceiued of that woman, was vnfemely and diſhonest,

wondering not a little that he could not find out some Lady within the region of Spain of semblable beauty and comelinesse, to please and content his honest and commendable intent: wherfore he judged Massinissa his fact to be done out of time, to the prejudice and great decay of his honor and estimation. Howbeit like a wife and prudent personage he dissembled his conceiued gryefe, expecting occasion for remedye of the same. Now the time was come that Lælius and Massinissa were sent for to the Campe. But to declare the teares and lamentable talke, the great mone and fighes vttered betwene this new maried couple, time would want, and tedioufnesse would ouercome the Reader. He had scarce lyen with his beloued two or thre Nyghts, but Lælius (to their great grief and sorow) claymed hir to bee hys prysoner. Wherfore verye forowfull and penfue hee departed, and retourned to the Campe. Scipio in honourable wyfe accepted him, and openly before his Captaines and men of warre, gaue thanks to Lælius and him, for theyr proweſſe and notable exploites. Afterwards ſending for him vnto his Tent, he ſaid vnto him: "I do ſuppoſe (my dere frend Massinissa) that the vertue and beneuolence which you ſaw in me did first of all prouoke you, to tranffrete the ſtraits, to viſite me in Spaine, wherein the good will of my valiaunt frend Syllanus did not a little auaile, to follicite and procure amity betwene vs. And the ſame afterwards inducing your conſtant minde, to retire into Affrica, committed both your ſelfe and all your goods into my hands and keeping. But I well pondering the quality of that vertue whych moued you thereunto, you beinge of Affrica, and I of Europa, you a Numidian borne, and I a Latine and Romane, of diuers customes and language diſſeruent, thought that the temperance and abſtinence from veneriall pleaſures which you haue fene to bee in me, and expeſience therof wel tried and proued, (for the which I render vnto the immortal Gods moſt humble thankes) would or ought to haue moued you to follow mine example, being vertues which aboue all other I doe moſt eſteeme and cheriſh. For he that well marketh the rare giftes and excellent benefits wherwith dame Nature hath arraied you, would thiſke that ther ſhould be no lacke of diligēce and trauell to ſubdue and ouercome the carnall appetytes of temporal beauty:

which had it bene applied to the rare giftes of nature planted in you, had made you a personage to the posterity very famous and renoumed. Consider wel my present time of youth, full of courage and youthful lust, which contrary to that naturall race I stay and prohibite. No delicate beauty, no voluptuous delectation, no feminine flattery, can intice my youth and state to the perils and daungers whereunto that heedelesse age is most prone and subiect. By which prohibition of amorous passions, temperatly raigned and gouerned, the tamer and subduer of thosse passions, closing his breast from lasciuious imaginations, and stopping his eares from the Syrenes, and Marmaydes, of that sexe and kinde, getteth greater glorye and fame, than wee haue gotten by our victory agaynst Syphax. Hanniball the greatest ennimy that euer we Romanes felt, the stoutest gentleman and captain without peere, through the delites and imbracements of women effeminated, is no more the manlike and notable emperor that hee was wont to be. The great exploits and enterprises which valyantly you haue done in Numidia, when I was farre from you, your care, readineffe, animosity, your strength and valor, your expedition and bold attemptes, with all the reste of your noble vertues worthy of immortal praiise, I might and could perticulerly recite, but to commend and extol them my heart and minde shall neuuer be satifisfed, by renouacion wherof I should rather giue occasion of blushing, than my selfe could be contented to let them sleepe in silence. Syphax as you know is taken prisoner by the valyance of our men of warre, by reason whereof, him selfe, his wife, his kingdome, hys campe, landes, cities, and inhabitants, and briefly all that which was king Syphax, is the pray and spoile to the Romane people, and the king and his wife, albeit she was no Citizen of Carthage, and hir father, although no captayn of our enimies, yet we muste send them to Rome, there to leauue them at the pleasure and disposition of the Romane Senate and people. Doe you not know that Sophonisba with her toyes and flatteries did alienat and withdraw king Syphax from our amitie and friendship, and made hym to enter force of armes against vs? Be you ignoraunt that she, full of rancor and malice aganyf the Romane people, endeououred to set al Africa against vs, and now by her

fayre inticementes hath gayned and wonne you, not I say our ennemy, but an ennymy so farre as shee can, with her cruell Inchauntments? What Damage and hurt haue lyghted vpon dyuers Monarchs and Prynces through sugred Lippes and Venemous Woordes, I wyl not spend tyme to recite. With that prouocations and coniured charmes shee hath already bewitched your good nature, I wyl not now imagine, but referre the fame to the deepe confideration of youre wisdome. Wherefore Massinissa, as you haue bene a Conquerer ouer great nations and prouinces, be now a conquerer of your own mind and appetites, the victorie whereof deserueth greater prayse than the conquest of the whole world. Take heede I say, that you blot not your good qualities and conditions, with the spots of dishonor and pufillanimitye. Obscure not that fame which hitherto is aduaunced aboue the Regyon of the glytterynge Starres. Let not thys vyce of Femynine Flatterye spoyle the desertes of Noble Chyualrye, and vtterly deface those merytes with greater ignomynie than the cause of that offence is worthye of dispraye." Massinissa hearynge these egree and sharpe rebukes, not onely blushed for Shame, but bytterly Weeping, sayde: that hys poore prifoner and wyfe was at the commaundement of Scipio. Notwithstanding, so instantly as Teares coulde suffer hym to speak, he besoughte hym, that if it were possible, hee woulde gyue him leaue to obserue hys faythe foolishye assured, bicause hee had made an othe to Sophonisba that with life shee shoulde not bee delyuerner to the Handes of the Romanes. And after other talke betweene them, Massinissa retired to hys pauylyon, where alone wyth manifolde fighes, and most bytter teares and plaintes, vttered wyth futch houlinges and outcryes, as they were hearde by those whych stooode neare hande, hee rested al the daye bewailynge hys prefente state: the most part of the nyghte also bee spent with lyke heauynesse, and debating in hys mind vpon diuers thoughts and deuises, more confused and amazed than before, hee could by no meanes take rest: somtimes he thought to flee and passe the straights commonly called the Pillers of Hercules, from thence to saile to the Fortunate Islandes with his wife: then agayne hee thoughte with hir to escape to Carthage, and in ayde of that City to serue agaynst the Romanes, somtimes hee propoised

by sworde, poyson, halter, or som such meanes to end his life and finish his dolorous days. Many times hee was at pointe by prepared knife and sworde to pierce his heart, and yet stayed the same, not for feare of death, but for preferuation of his fame and honor. Thus thys wretched and miserable louer burned and consumed in loue: toffing and tumbling him selfe vpon his bedde, not able to find comfort to ease his payne, thus began to say: "O Sophonisba, my deare beloued wyfe, O the life and comfort of my life, O the deynty repast of my ioy and quiet, what shall become of vs? Alas and out alas I crye, that I shall see no more thine incomparable beauty, thy surpassyng comely face, those golden lockes, those glistering eyes which a thousand times haue darkned and obscured the rayes and beames of the Sunne it self: Alas I say, that I can no longer be suffred to heare the pleasaunt harmonye of thy voice whose sweetenesse is able to force Iupiter himselfe to mitigate his rage when with lightning Thunderbolts and stormie claps in his greatest furie he meaneth to plague the earth. Ah that it is not lawfull any more for me to throw these vnhappy armes about thy tender neck, whose whitenesse of face entermingled with semely rudds, excelleth the Morning Roses, which by sweete nightly dewes doe sproute and budde. The Gods graunt that I doe not long remaine on liue without thy sweete haunt and company, which can no longer draw forth this breathing ghoste of myne, than can a Bodye lyue wythoute like Breathe in it. Graunt (O Myghty Iupiter) that one graue may close vs twaine to liue among the ghostes and shadowes that be already past this world for like right louing fitts, if intent of life be ment to mee without thy fellowship and delectable presence. And who (O good God) shal be more blisful amongs the Elysian fields, wandryng amids the spirites and ghostes of departed soules, than I, if there we two may iette and stalke amonge the shadowed friths and forests huge, befette with Mirtle trees, odoriferous and sweete? that there we may at large recount and sing the sweete and sower panges of those our passed loues without anye stay or let at all: that there I say we may remembre things already done, reioycing for delights and fighing for the paines. There shall no harde hearted Scipio bee found, there shal no marble minded captain rest, which haue not had re-

gard of Loue's toyes, ne yet haue pitied bitter payns, by hauing no  
experience what is the force of loue. He then with ouer cruell  
wordes shall not goe aboue to persuade me to forfake thee, or to  
deliuer thee into the Romanes handes, to incurre miserable and  
most cruell bondage: he shal there neuer checke me for the feruent  
loue I beare thee: we shal there abide without suspition of him  
or any other: they can not seperate vs, they be not able to deuide  
our sweetest companye. I would the Gods aboue had graunted me  
the benefite, that hee had neuer arriued into Affrica, but had still  
remayned in Sicilia, in Italy or Spayne. But what stand I vpon  
these termes, O I fole and beast? what meanes my droufie head to  
dreame futch fansies? if he hadde not passed ouer into Affrica,  
and made war against kinge Syphax, how shoul I haue euer seene  
my faire Sophonisba, whose beauty farre surmounteth eche other  
wight, whose comelines is withoute peere, whose grace inspeakable,  
whose maners rare and incomparable, and whose other qualities  
generally disparcled throughoute dame Nature's mould by speach  
of man can not bee described? If Scipio had not tranfraited the  
seas to arriue in Affrike soile, how shoul I, (O onely hope and  
last refuge of my desires) haue knownen thee, neither shoul I haue  
bene thy feere, ne yet my wife thou shouldest haue ben, but great  
had ben thy gaine and losse not much, neuer shouldest thou haue  
felt the present painfull state, wherein thou art, thy life (whereof  
most worthy no doubt thou art) shoulde not haue lien in ballance  
poize, or rested in doubtfull plight, which now in choyse of eni-  
mies thrall thou maist prolong, or else in Romanes handes a praye  
or spoile by captiue state. But I befeech the gods to preuent the  
choyce to be a Romane prysoner. And who can thinke that Sci-  
pio euer ment to graunt me the life of one, and goeth about to  
spoile me of the same? Did not he giue me the pardon of one, when  
he sent me to besiege the City of Cirta, where I found fayre Sopho-  
nisba which is my Life? A straunge kinde of pardon, by giuing me  
a pardon to dispossesse me of the same. Who euer hard tel of  
such a pardon? So much as if he said to me, thus: 'Massinissa,  
go take the paine to cause the city yeld, and ransack it by force,  
and I wil pardon thee thy lyfe. And not wyt the onely benefit,  
but with Cræsus goods I wil inrich thee, and make thee owner of

the happy foyle of Arrabia, and when I haue so done and rased  
the walles by myne indeuor, wherein myne onely lyfe and ioy did  
rest, at my retourne for guerdone of that Noble fact, in steede of  
lyfe hee choppeth of my head, and for fayre promyse of golden  
mountes, hee strips me naked, and makes mee a Romane flauie:  
accordynge to whych case and state he deales wyth me. For what  
auailes my Lyfe, if in gryefe and sorrowes gulffe I drown the  
pleasures of the same? Doth not he berieue my life and bredes  
my death by diuiding me from my fayre Sophonisba? Ah Caitife  
wretch, what lucke haue I, that neither storme nor whirle Wynde  
could fende him home to Italian shore, or set him packing to  
Sicile land? what ment cruell Scipio, when so sone as Syphax  
was taken, he did not freight way dispatch him to Rome, to  
present the glorious fight of the Numidian king to the Romane  
people? If Scipio had not beene here, thou Sophonisba frankly  
hadst bene mine: for at Lælias hands I could haue found some  
grace: but surely if Scipio did once see Sophonisba, and reclined  
his eyes to viewe hir pereleffe beauty, I doubt not but he would be  
moued to haue compassion vpou hir and me, and would iudge hir  
worthy not onely to be queene of Numidia but of all the prouince  
besides. But what, do I make this good accompt? The common  
prouerbe fayth, that he which counteth before his hoste, must  
recken twice: and so perhaps may be my lot: for what know I  
if Scipio did wel view hir, whether himselfe would be inamored  
of hir or not, and so utterly depriue me of that Iewel? He is a  
man no doubt as others be, and it is impossible me think, but that  
the hardnesse of his heart must bow to the view of such a noble  
beauty. But (beast as I am) what mean these wordes? what follies  
doe I vaunt by singing to the deafe, and teachyng of the blynd?  
O wretch, wretch, nay more than myserable Wretch. Marke the  
words of Scipio, he demaundeth Sophonisba, as a thing belonging  
vnto him, for which cause he fayeth that she is the pray and part  
of the Romane spoile: but what shall I do? shal I gyue hir vnto  
hym? He wyll haue hir, hee constraines me, he exhortes mee,  
hee prayes mee, but I know full well wherenvnto those intreaties  
tend, and vnder the Graffe what lurking Serpent lieth. Shal I  
then put into his hands mine own Sophonisba? But before I so

doe, the armipotent God aboue, with his flashing fires and flamm-  
ing brands shall thunder me downe into the depthe of Hell. The  
gapyng ground receine my corps, before I yeld to that request,  
the trampling steedes of sauage kinde do teare my members in  
thousand goblets, the desert beastes consume my flesh, the rau-  
ning gripes and carrain kites pick out my tongue and eyes, before  
I glutte his rauenous mind with that demaund to break the fayth  
which by holy othe I haue promised to performe. O cursed  
caitif, but what shall I doe then? it behoueth to obey, and in  
despite of my teeth to do that which the Romane Emperour com-  
maundeth. Alas, by thinking vpon that straight and needfull  
lot, I die a thoufand deaths: wherfore of euils to chose the least  
of twaine, and to preserve my plighted faith, O swete Sophonisba,  
thou must die, and by meanes of thy beloued feere, shalt voyd  
the yoke of Romanes thral, for so it pleafeth vnmindesful Ioua to  
appoyn. The wretched Heauens by cruel fate haue throwen their  
lot, that I of mine owne mischiefe shal be the minister. And so  
(O life most deere) I shall performe the effecte to kepe the fayth  
whych last of all before thy face I did confirme." By this speach  
and maner of talke, the good Prince bewayled his case, excogit-  
ating by what meanes he myght doe to death the thing which  
aboue al the world he loued best: at length it came vnto his  
minde to fende hir a draught of poysoned drink, which denise he  
had no sooner founde, but he was driuen into a new kinde of  
fury, and kindled with disdayne, his braynes were on fire with  
extreme madnesse, and as though Sophonisba had bene before  
him, hee talked and raued in Bedlemwyse: somtimes with taunts  
he checked hir to hir teeth, somtimes lamented hir vnfortunate  
state, somtymes with pawes displayed, he seemed to rampe into  
hir face, and then agayne into amorous toies his passions droue  
him forth. When I doe thinke what kinde of a man Maffinissa  
was, who in deede was a crowned and most noble king, and who  
with futch prudence gouerned his new conquered and recovered  
kingdoms, and so constanly perfeuered in amity of the Romane  
people, I pray to God to graunt my frendes and myselfe also, not  
to enter into so intricat and louesome Labyrinth, wherein this  
Noble Prince was tangled, and wyth more temperaunce to gouerne

our beloued things. Butretourning agayne to this afflicted gentleman Maffinissa. He sent vnto his beloued wyfe and Queene a pot of poyson to rid hir of hir life: but yet staying his messenger, he cried out these words: God forbid that I should commit this infamous murder vpon hir whom I most deerely loue, I would rather conuey hir into the extreme partes of the vnknowen sandy Coaste of Libia, where the countrey is full of venomous beasts and crawling poysoned Serpents, in which we shalbe safe and sure from the danger of cruell and inexorable Scipio, by which meanes he shall neuer see the rare and diuine beauty, which the serpents once beholding, will mitigate and asswage their bitter poyson, and for whose sake they will not annoy ne yet hurt me hir louing hufband and companion: wherefore let vs make haft to flee thither, to auoide the bondage and death prepared for vs: and if so be we be not able to cary with vs gold and siluer, yet shal we not want there some reliefe to maintayn our liues: for better it is to feede on bread and water, then to liue in perpetual thraldome. And liuing with thee (sweete wyfe) what pouerty and beggery am not I able to sustayne? The stornes of exile and penury, I haue already suffred: for beinge driuen out of my kingdome many times, I haue repayred to obscure dens and caues, where I haue hidden my selfe, and liued in the Wildernesse among the sauage Beasts. But what meane I thus to say of my selfe, whom no misaduenture can affray or myflyke? But thou deare wyfe whych haft ben trayned vp and nourished amongs the delicacies and bankets of the Court, accompanied wyth traynes of many fayre and noble ladies, liuing lyke a Queene in al kinde of pleasures and delights: what shall I doe wyth thee? I know thy heart will not suffer thee to follow me, and yet if the same would serue thee, from whence shall I procure present shippinge? Vpon the Sea the Roman fleete beares swinge, vpon the land Scipio wyth hys Army occupieth euery Coast, and is generall Lord of the field. What then shall I most miserable and vnfortunate caitife do? for whilst I am thus makinge my bitter playnts, the night is past away, day light approcheth, and the bright shining mornynge begynneth to cleare the earth. And behold yonder commeth the General's messenger for Sophonisba, whom I must eyther deliuer into his hands or

else commit her to present slaughter, beinge assured that she had rather make choise to dy, than fall into the Laps of the cruell Romans." Whereupon he determined to send hir the poyson, and for very sorrow fell downe vpon the ground like a man halfe deade. Afterwards being come agayne to him selfe, he cursed the Earth, the Ayre, the Fyre, Heauen, Hell, and all the Gods of the same, and exclaiming in lamentable wyse he called vnto him one of his most faithfull seruants, who according to the custome of those dayes, alwaies kept poyson in store, and sayde vnto him: "Receyue thys Cuppe of Golde, and deliuer the same with the poyson, to Queene Sophonisba now abiding within the City of Cirta, and tel hir that I with greatest good will would fayne haue kept the mariage knot, and the firste fayth whych I plighted vnto hir, but the Lorde of the Fielde, in whose power I am, hath vtterly forbidden the same. I haue assayed all possible meanes to preferue hir my Wyfe and Queene at liberty, but he which commaundeth me, hath pronounced such hard and cruell sentence, as I am forced to offend my self, and to be the minister of mine own mischife. Thys poyson I send hir with so dolefull Message, as my poore hearte (God knoweth) doth only fele the smart, being the most sorowfull present that euer was offred to any fayre Lady. This is the way alone to saue hir from the Romanes handes. Pray hir to consider the worthines of hir father, the dignity of hir countrey, and the royal maiesty of the ii. kings hir husbands, and to do as hir mynd and wil shall fansie best. Get the hence with all possible sped, and lose no tyme to do thys Message: for thou shalt carry the bane and present death of the fairest Ladie that euer Nature framed wythin hir fayrest mould." The seruaunt with this commaundment did departe, and Maffinissa lyke a Chylde beaten with the rodde, wept and cried. The messenger being come to the Queene, and giuing hir the cup with the poyson, declared his cruell ambaissage. The Queene took the poysoned Cuppe, and sayd vnto the messenger: "Geeue the king thy mayster myne humble thankes, and say vnto hym, that I receyue and Drynke thys Poyson wyth a wyll so good, as if hee had commaunded me to enter in Tryumph wyth Laurel Garlands ouer myne ennymyes: for a better gifte a husbande can not gyue to wyfe,

than accomplyshment of assured fayth the funeralles whereof shall bee done wthy present obsequie." And sayinge nothyng else vnto the messenger, shee tooke the Cuppe, and mynglyng well together the poyson wythin, shee vnfearfully quafft it vp: and when she had dronke it shee delyueraed the messenger hys Cuppe agayne, and layed hir selfe vpon hir bed, commaunding hir gentle-women in comely wyse to couer hir wyth Clothes, and withoute lamentation or Sygne of feminine minde, shee stoutly waigted for approching death. The Gentlewomen which wayted vpon hir, bewayled the ruffull state of their Maystresse, whose plaints and scriches were heard throughout the palace, whereof the brute and rumor was great. But the good Queene vanquished with the strong force of the poyson, continued not long before she died. The messenger returned these heauie newes vnto Massinissa, who so sorrowfully complained the losse of his beloued wife, in such wise as many tymes hee was lyke to kyll hymselfe, that hys Soule might haue accompanied the ghost of hir, whych was beloued of hym aboue all the dearest things of the Worlde. The valyant and wyse capitayne Scipio vnderstanding the newes hereof, to the intente Massinissa shoulde not commit any cruelty agaynst hymselfe, or perpetrate other vntomyt deede, called hym befor hir, and comforted hym wyth the sweetest wordes he could devise, and frendly reproched him. The next day in the presence of al the army hee highly commended him, and rewarded him wyth the kyngdome of Numidia, geuing hym many rych Iewels and treasures, and brought hym in great Estimation amonges the Romaynes: whych the Senate and people of Rome very well approued and confirmed with most ample Priuileges, attributinge vnto hym the title of kynge of Numidia, and freende of the Romaynes. Sutch was the ende of the vnhappy loue of kynge Massinissa,  
and of the fayre and lucklesse Queene  
Sophonisba.

## THE EIGHTH NOUELL.

*The cruelty of a Kynge of Macedone who forced a gentlewoman called Theoxena, to perjuade her children to kill and poyson themselves: after which fact, she and her husband Poris ended their lyfe by drowninge.*

BVR now we haue beegon to treate of the stoutnesse of certayne noble Queenes, I wyll not let also to recite the Hystory of a lyke vnfearefull dame of Theffalian land, called Theoxena, of right noble Race, the Daughter of Herodicus Prynce of that Countrey in the tyme that Phillip the Sonne of Demetrius was kynge of Mace-done, tolde also by Titus Liuius, as two of the former be. Thys Lady Theoxena, first was a notable example of piety and vertue and afterwardes of rigorous cruelty: for the sayd kyng Phillip, hauinge through his wickednesse first murdred Herodicus, and by succeffion of time cruelly done to death also the husbands of Theoxena and of Archo hir naturall sister, vnto eyther of them being Wydowes remayninge a Sonne: afterwardes Archo being maryed agayne to one of the principall of their Countrey named Poris, of him she had many children. But when she was dead, the sayd Lady Theoxena hir sister, who was of heart more constant and stout than the other, stiill refused the second mariage, although fued vnto by many great Lordes and Princes: at length pityinge her nephewes state, for fere they should fall into the handes of some cruell Stepdame, or that theyr father would not bryng them vp with futch diligence, as tyll that tyme they were, was contented to bee espoused agayne to Poris, (no lawe that time knownen to defend the same) to the intente she might trayne vp hir sister's children as her owne. That done she began (as if they were hir owne) to intreate and vse them louingly, with great care and industrie: wherby it manifestly appeared that she was not maried againe to Poris for hir owne commodity and pleasure, but rather for the wealth and gouernement of those hir sister's children. Afterwards Phillip king of Macedone, an vnquiet Prince, determininge to make newe warres vpon the Romanes (then through-

out the worlde famous and renouned for theyr good fortune) exiled not onely the chiefe and noble men, but almost al the auncient inhabitants of the Cities along the sea coaste of Theffalia, and theyr whole and entier families into Pæonia afterwards called Emathia, a Countrey farre distant from the sea, giuing their voided Cities for the Thracians to inhabite, as most propre and faithful for the Romans warres, which he intended to make: and hearinge also the curses and maledictions pronounced against him by the banished people, and vniuersally by al other, thought he was in no good surety, if he caused not likewyse all the sonnes of them, whom a litle before he had slayne, to be put to Death. Wherefore he commaunded them to be taken and holden vnder good gard in prifon, not to do them al to be slain at once, but at times now one and then an other, as occasion serued. Theoxena vnderstanding the edi&cte of this wicked and cruell king, and wel remembryng the death of hir husband, and of him that was husband to hir sister, knew wel that hir sonne and nephew incontinently should be demaunded, and greatly fearinge the king's wrath, and the rigour of his guard, if once they fell into theyr hands, to defend them from shame and cruelty, sodainly applied hir minde vnto a straunge deuice: for shee durst to faye vnto hir husband their father's face, that soner she would kil them with hir owne handes, if otherwise she coulde not warraunt them, then suffer them to bee at the will and power of kinge Philip. By reason wheroft Poris abhorring so execrable cruelty, to comfort his wife and to faue hys Chyldren, promyfed hyr secreteleye to transperte them from thence, and caryed them himselfe to certayne of hys faythfull Fryendes at Athens, whych done wythoute longe delaye, hee made as though hee woulde goe from Theffalonica to Aenias, to bee at the Solemnytye of certayne Sacrifices, which yearelye at an appoynted tyme was done wyth greate ceremonies to the honour of *Æneas* the founder of that Citty, where spendinge the time amonges other in solemne bankets, the thirde watch of the night when euery man was a sleepe, as though he would haue returned home to his countrey with his wyfe and children, priuely embarked himselfe and them, in a ship hired of purpose to passe into Euboea, and not to retourne to Theffalonica. But his intent was cleane altered and chaunged, for his ship was no sooner vnder saile, but at that instant a contrary winde and tempest

rose, that brought him back againe, in despite of their labour, and all the endeouour they were able to doe. And when daye lighte appeared, the king's garrison descrid that shipp, and manned out a boate, to bring in the same, which secretly they thoughte was about to escape away, giuing them straight charge, that by no meanes they should returne without hir. When the boate drew neare the shippe, Poris bent him self to encourage the mariners to hoyse vp saile againe, and to make way with their oares into the Sea, if it were possible, to auoide the imminent and present daunger, to saue the life of him selfe, his wife and children: then hee lyfted hys handes vp vnto the heauens to implore the helpe and succor of the Gods, which the stoute Gentlewoman Theoxena perceiuing, and manifestly seeing the Daunger wherein they were, callinge to hir minde hir former determinate vengeance which she ment to do, and beholding Poris in his prayers, she prosecuted hir intente, preparing a poysoned drink in a cuppe, and made readye naked swordes: al which bringing forth before the Childrens face, she spake these words: "Death alone must bee the reuenge of your fiely liues, wherunto there be two wayes, poison or the sworde. Euery of you choose which ye lift to haue: or of whether of them your heart shall make the frankest choice. The king's cruelty and pride you must auoid. Wherfore deare children be of good chere, raise vp your noble courage: ye the elder aged boyes, shew now your felues like men, and take the sword into your handes to pierce your tender hearts: but if the bloudy smart of that most dreadfull death shal feare and fright your greene and vnripe age, then take the venomed cup, and gulpe by sundry draghtes this poisoned drinke. Be franke and lusty in this your destened Death, fith the violence of Fortune, by Sea, doeth let the lengthning of your life. I craue this reueste of choyse, and let not the same rebound with fearfull refuse of thys my craued heft. Your mother afterwardes shal pass that strayght, whereof she prayeth hir babes to bee the poastes: ye the vaunt curroours, and shee, with your louing fire, shall end and finishe Philip's rage bent agaynst vs." When shee had spoken these woordes and sawe the enemies at hand, this couragious dame, the deuiser of the death, egged and pronoked these yong trembling children (not yet wel resolued what to do) with her encharmed woordes in sutch wyse, as in the ende, some dranke the poyson, and

other strake them felues into the body and by hir commaundement were throwen ouer boord, not altogether dead, and so she set them at liberty by death whom tenderly she had brought vp. Then she imbracing hir husband the companion of hir death, both did voluntarily throw themselues also into the sea: And when the kinge's espials were come abore the ship, they found the same abandoned of theyr praye. The cruelty of which fact did so moue the common people to detestatyon and hatred of the kinge, as a gene-rall curfse was pronounced against him and his children, which heard of the Gods aboue was afterwardes terribly reuenged vpon his stocke and posterity. Thys was the end of good Poris and his stout wyfe Theoxena, who rather then she would fall into the lapse of the king's furie, as hir father Herodicus, and hir other husbande did, chose violently to dye with hir own hands, and to cause hir husband's children and hir owne, to berieue them felues of Lyfe, whych although agaynst the louinge order of naturall courfe, and therefore that kinde of violence to bee abhorred, as horrible in it self, yet a declaration of a stout mind, if otherwise she had ben able to reuenge the same. And what coward heart is that, that dare not vpon such extremity, when it feeth the mercilesse ennemy at hand, with shining blade ready bent, to ftryke the blowe, that withoute remedye must ridde the same of breath, specially when it beholdeth the trembyng babe, naturally begotten by hys owne kinde and nature, before the face imploryng father's rescue, what dastarde heart dare not to offer himselfe, by singular fight (thoughe one to twentye) either by desperate hardinesse to auoyd the same, or other annoyance, aduenture what he can? which in Christians is admitted as a comely fight, rather than wyth that Pagane Dame to do the death it selfe. But now returne wee to describe a fact that paffeth al other forced deedes. For Theoxena was compelled in a maner thus to do of meere constraint to eschue the greater torments of a tyrant's rage and thought it better by chosen death to chaunge hir lyfe, than by violent hands of bloudy Butchers to be haled to the slaughter. But thys Hidrusian dame was weary of hir owne life, not for that she feared losse of lyfe, but desperate to think of Fortune's fickle staye: whych if fortune's darlings would regarde in time, they would foresee theyr slippery holde.

## THE NYNTH NOUELL.

*A straunge and maruellous vse, which in old time was obserued in Hidrusa, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a magistrate ordayned for that purpose, for euery man, and woman that lieth, to kill them selues.*

BANDELLO amonges the company of hys Nouels, telleth this history: and in his own person speaketh these words. If I should begin to tell thos things which I saw in the tyme that I sayled alongs the Leuant feas, very tedious it would be for you to heare, and I in reporting could not tell which way to ende, bicause I saw and heard thynges ryght worthy to bee remembred. Notwythstandinge, for satiffaction of dyuers that be my frendes, I will not sticke to reherse some of them. But first of all one straunge custome, whych in the Romayes tyme was vsed in one of the Ilandes of the sea  $\text{\textcircumflex}$ Egeum, called Hidrusa, in these dayes by the trauaylers called Cea or Zea, and is one of the Ilandes named Ciclades, whilome full of Populous and goodly Cities, as the ruins therof at this day do declare. There was in olde time in that Illand a very straunge lawe and ordynaunce, which many hundred yeares was verye well and perfectly kept and observed. The Law was, that euery person inhabitant within the sayd Isle, of what sexe and condition so euer, being throughe age, infirmity, or other accidents, weary of their lyfe, might choose what kind of death that liked them best: howbeit it was prouyded that the partye, before the dooing of the same, should manifest the cause that moued him therewnto, before the Magistrate elected by the people for that speciall purpose, which they constituted bicause they sawe that diuers persons had voluntarily killed themselues vpon triffling occasions and matters of little importance: according to whiche lawe very many Men and Women, hardily with so merry chere went to theyr Death, as if they had gone to some bankette or mariage. It chaunced that Pompeius Magnus the dreadfull Romane, betwene whom and Iulius Cæsar were fought the greatest battailes for superiority that euer were, sailing by the Sea  $\text{\textcircumflex}$ Egeum, arriued at Hidrusa, and there

goynge a land vnderstoode of the inhabitantes the maner of that law and how the same day a woman of great worship had obteined licence of the Magistrate to poyson hir selfe. Pompeius hearing tell hereof, wasdriuen into great admiration, and thought it very straunge, that a woman which al the dayes of hir life had liued in great honour and estimation, shoulde vpon light cause or occasion poyson her selfe sith it was naturally giuen to ech breathyng wyght to prolong theyr liuing dayes with the longest threede that Atropos could draw out of dame Nature's webbe. Whervpon he commaunded the said matrone to be brought before hym, whose Death for hir vertue was generallie lamented by the whole Countrye. When the gentlewoman was before hym, and had vnderstanding that she was fully resolued and determined to dye, hee began by greate persuasions to exhort hir, that she should not wilfully cast hir selfe away, vpon consideracion that she was of lusty yeares, riche and welbeloued of the whole countrey: and how greate pitye it were but shee shoulde renue hir Mynde and gyue hir selfe still to lyue and remayne, till Natural course dyd ende and finysh hir life: howbeit his graue and earnest persuasion could not diuert hir from hir intended purpose. But Pompeius loth to haue hir dye, ceaffed not styl to prosecute hys former talke with newe reasons and stronger arguments. All which shee paciently heard with fixed countenaunce, til at lengthe with cleare voyce and smilling cheere she answered him in this maner: "You be greatly deceyued (my lord Pompeius) if you do beleue that I wythout very great prouidence and mature aduise goe about to ende my dayes: for I do know and am fully persuaded, that eche creature naturally craueth the prolongation and lengthninge of lyfe, and so mutch abhoreth to die, as the desirous to lyue detesteth the poyson whych I haue prepared for consumation of my lyfe. Whereupon as I haue diuers times thought, considered and discoursed with my selfe, and amongs many consideracions oftentimes debated in my minde, there came into the same the instability and fickle change of Fortune, whose whirling wheele neuer ceaffeth, ne yet remayneth stedfast. It is dayly seene how she doth exalte and aduaunce some man from the lowest and bottomleffe Pit, euen to the top of high Heauens, endowinge him with so mutch Substaunce as he can

desire. An other that was most happy, honoured in this world lyke a God, vnto whom no goods and welfare were wantinge, who might wel haue bene called in his lyfe, a three times happy and blessed wyght, sodaynly from his honour and state deprived and made a very poore man and begger. Some man also, that is both riche and lusty, accompanied with a fayre wyfe and goodly Children, lyuinge in great mirth and ioylity, this wicked Lady Fortune, the deuourer of all our contentations, depriueth from the inestimable treasure of health, causeth the fayre Wyfe to loue an other better than hir husbande, and with hir venomous Tooth biteth the children, that in short space myserable death catcheth them al within his dreadfull Clouches whereby he is defrauded of those children, whom after his death he purposed to leaue for hys Heyres. But what meane I to consume tyme and words in declaration of Fortune's vnsteady stay, which is more cleare than the beams of the Sunne, of whom dayly a Thoufande thoufande examples be manifest: all histories be full of theym. The mighty countrey of Græcia doth render ample witnesse wherein so many excellent men were bred and brought vp: who desirous with their finger to touch the highest heauen, were in a moment throwen downe: and so many famous Cities, which gouerned numbers of people, now at this present day we see to be thrall and obedient to thy City of Rome. Of these hurtfull and perilous mutations (O noble Pompeius) thy Romane City may be a most cleare glasse and Spectacle, and a multitude of thy noble Citizens in tyme past and present, may geeue plentifull witnesse. But to come to the cause of this my death, I say, that fyndyng myself to haue liued these many yeares (by what chaunce I can not tell) in very great prosperity, in al which tyme I never did suffer any one myfshappe, but styll from good to better, haue passed my time vntil thys daye: nowe fearyng the frownynge of Ladye Fortune's face, and that she will repente hir long continued fauour, I feare, I say, least the same Fortune should chaung hir stile, and begynne in the middest of my pleasaunt life to sprinckle hir poysoned bitternesse, and make mee the Receptacle and Quiuer of hir sharpe and noysome arrowes. Wherefore I am nowe determined by good aduyse, to rid my selfe from the captivity of hir force, from all hir missfortunes,

and from the noyfom and grieuous infirmities, which miserably be incident to vs mortall Creatures: and beleue me (Pompeius) that many in theyr aged dayes haue left their life with little honour, who had they bene gone in their youth, had dyed Famous for euer. Wherefore (my lord Pompeius) that I may not be tedious vnto thee, or hinder thyne affayres by long discourse, I besech thee to geeue me leaue to follow my deliberate disposition, that franckely and freely I may be vnburdened of all daunger: for the longer the life doth grow, to the greater annoysaunce and daunger it is subiect." When she had so sayd, to the great admiration and compaffion of all thosse which were present, with tremblinge handes and fearefull cheare, she quaffed a great Cup of poysoned drynke, the which she brought with hir for that purpose, and within a while after dyed. This was the straunge vse, and order obserued in Hidrusa. Which good counsel of the Dame had the noble and valiaunt captayne followed, no doubt he would haue bin contented to haue bin brought to order: and then he had not lost that bloody battel atchieued agaynst hym by Iulius Cæsar at Pharsalia in Ægypt. Then hee had not sustayned so many ouerthrowes as he did, then had hee not ben forsaken of his frendes, and in the ende endured a death so miserable. And for so mutch as for the most part hitherto we haue intreated of many Tragicall and bloody chaunces, respyryng now from thosse, let vs a little touch some medicinable remedies for loue, some lessons for gouernment and obedience, some treaties of amorous Dames, and hauty Geftes of Prynces, Queenes and other persons, to variate the chaungeable diet, wherewyth dyuers bee affected, rellyshinge their Stomackes wthy some more pleasaunt Digestions than they haue tasted.

## THE TENTH NOUELL.

*The dishonest Loue of Faystina the Empresse, and with what remedy  
the same loue was remoued and taken away.*

TRUE and most holy is the sentence, that the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other wyght of Female kinde, of what degree or condition soeuer she be, be she fayre, fowle, or ylfanoured, cannot be endued with a more precious Pearle or Iewell, than is the neate and pure vertue of honesty: which is of sutch valour, that it alone without other vertue, is able to render her that glistereth in her attire, most famous and excellent. Be she more beautiful than Helena, be she mightier than the Amazon, better learned than Sappho, rycher than Flora, more louinge than Queene Dido, or more noble than the best Empresse and Queene of the worlde, or be she the full of any other vertue, if she want the name of chaste, shee is not worthy so much as to beare the title of honour, nor to be entertyned in honest company. Yee shall peruse hereafter an history of a Countesse of Celant, that was a passing fayre Dame, singularely adorned with Nature's gifts. She was fayre, pleasaunt, amiable, comely, and perhaunce not altogether barrayne of good erudition and learninge: she could play vpon the instruments, sing, daunce, make and compose witty, and amorous Sonets, and the more her company was frequented, the more amiable and gracious the fame was esteemed. But bicause she was unshamfast and lesse chaste, she was voyde of honest regarde. Sutch as bee dishonest, do not onely hurt themselues, but gieue cause to the common people to mutter and grudge at their parentes education, at their husbands gouernment and institution of their Children, causing them most commonly to leade a discontented and heany lyfe. Thinke you that Augustus Cæsar (albeit he was a victorious Emperour, and led a triumphant raygne) liued a contented life when he saw the two Iuliæ, one of them his daughter, the other his Niece, to vfe them selues like common strumpets, constrained through their shameful acts to pin, and close vp himselfe, shunning the conuersion of men, and once in minde to cut his Daughter's Vaynes

to let out hir Lusty bloud? Was not he wont (the teares trickling downe his Princely Face) to say, that better it was neuer to haue children and to be deade without them, than to haue a fruteful wife and children so disordred? He termed his Daughter to be a Carrion lumpe of fleshe, full of stenche and filthiness. But if I list to speake of women of this age, from noble to vnnoble, from an Emperor's Daughter to a Ploughman's modder, whose liues do frame after Iulia hir lore, my pen to the stumps would weare, and my hande be wearied with writing. And so likewise it would of numbres no doubt in these dayes that folow the trace of Lucrece line, that hufwifely and chastly contriue the day and nightes in pure and Godly exercise. But of the naughty forte to speake, (leaning to voyde offence, futch as do flourish in our time) I will not conceale the Empresse Messalina, that was Wyfe to the emperour Claudius, not only vnworthy of Empresse degree, but of the title of Woman: who being abused by many, at length arriuied to futch abhominable lust, as not contented with dayly adulterous life, would resort to the common stewes, where the ruffians and publike harlots haunted, for little hire, and there for vilest price with eche flauie did humble herselfe: and at night not satisfied, but weared, returned home to hir Palace, not ashamed to disclose hir selfe to any that list to looke vpon hir: and for victory of that beastly game, contended with her lyke. But not to say so mucht of hir as I finde in Plinie his naturall history, in Suetonius, and Cornelius Tacitus, I leaue hir to hir selfe, bycause I haue made promise to remember the dishonest loue for example sake, which I read of Faustina, whose beauty of al Writers is vouchred to be most excellent, if excellency of good life had thereunto ben coupled. She was the daughter and wyfe of two holy and vertuous Emperours, the one called Antonius Pius, the other Marcus Antonius. This M. Antonius in all vertuous workes was perfect and Godly, and singulerly loued his wife Faustina, and although she was infamous to the world, and a Fable to the people, yet he cared not for the same, futch was the passing loue hee bare vnto hir. Leaue we to speake of hir beastly behauisour amongs the noble fort, without regard vnto hir most noble husbante, and come wee to treate of a certaine sauage kind of lust she had to one of the

Gladiatores, whych were a certaine fort of Gamsters in Rome, which we terme to be Maisters of defence. She was so far in loue with this Gladiator, as she could not eat, drink, or slepe, ne take any rest. This Faustina was so vnshamefast, as not regarding hir state, being as I sayde before the daughter and wife of two most worthy Emperors, dysdayned not to submitte her Body to the Basenesse of one of the vilest fort, a Rascal Fencer, and many times would goe to Caieta, a Citie and hauen of Campania, to ioyne hir selfe with the galye flaues there. Hir husbande which loued her dearely, comfortyng his feble louing wyfe so well as he coulde, caused the best Physicians he could finde, to come vnto hir for recovery of hir health. But all the deuyfed phyfike of the world was not able to cure her, she was so loueficke. In the end knowing by long experiance the fauour and loue hir husbande bare vnto hir, and knowing that nothing could withdraw his continued minde, she tolde him, that al the torment and payne shee sustained, was for the loue of a gladiator, towards whom hir loue was so miserably bent, that except she had his company, death was the next medicine for hir disease. The good husbande whych beyond measure loued his wife, comforted hir with so louing wordes as he could, and bad hir to bee of good cheare, promisinge hee would prouide remedy. Afterwards consulting with a wise man a Chaldee born, opened vnto him the effect of his wiue's disease, and how she was loueficke with sutch a person one of the Gamsters of the City, promising great rewardes if he could by his secretes ferche out redresse to saue hir life. The Chaldee could tel him none other remedy, but that he must cause the Gladiator to be slaine, and with the bloud of him to anoint the body of the Empresse, not telling vnto hir what the ointment was: which don, that he must goe to naked bed to hir, and do the act of matrimony. Some Historiographers do write, that the Chaldee gaue him counsell, that Faustina should drinke the bloud of the Gladiator, but the most part, that hir body was bathed in the same. But how so euer it was, it would haue cooled the hottest Gentlewoman's stomack in the world, to be anoynted with like Salue. To conclud the Gladiator was slayne and the medicine made and applied to the Pacient, and the Emperour lay with the Empresse,

and begat hir with childe. And immediatly fhe forgot the Gladiator, neuer after that tyme remembryng him. If this medicine were applied to our carnall louinge dames (which God defend) they would not onely follow Faustina in forgetfulnes, but also would mislike hir Phisike: and not greatly regard the counsell of sutch doctours. By meanes of this medicine and copulation was the Emperour Commodus borne, who rather resembled the Gladiator than his Father: in whose breast rested a storehouse of mischyefe and vyce, as Hero-dian and other Wryters plentifully do wryte.

## THE ELEVENTH NOUELL.

*Chera hid a treasure: Elisa going about to hang her selfe, and tying the halter about a beame found that treasure, and in place thereof left the halter. Philene the daughter of Chera going for that treasure, and busily searching for the same, found the halter, wherewithal for dispayre she would haue hanged hir selfe, but forbidden by Elisa, who by chaunce espied hir, she was restored to part of hir losse, leading afterwards a happy and prosperous lyfe.*

FORTUNE, the Lady Regent and Gouerneffe of man's lyfe, so altreth and chaungeth the state thereof, as many times we see the noble borne from that great mighty port, wherein they be, debased so farre, as either infamously their lyfe is spent in the hungry lap of Dame Penury, or else contriued in the vgly lothsom house of Wantonnesse, the stepdame of all honesty and vertue. Sometimes we marke the vnnoble ladde that was nooseled in the homely countrey caban, or rude ciuile shoppe, attaine to that whych the onely honorable and gentle do aspire: and he agayne that is ambitious in climbing vp the turning wheele, throwen down beneth the brink of aduerse luck, whelmed in the ditch and pit of black despaire. We note also sometimes that the careleffe wyght of Fortune's giftes, hath (vnlooked for) his mouth and throte crammed full of promotion and worlde's delights. Such is the maner of hir fickle stay: whereof this History ensuing, gyueth some intelligence, by remembryng the destenyed luck of 2 pore fory girles that were left destitute of desired things, both like to fal into despaire, and yet both holpen with that they most desired: which in this fort beginneth. In the time that Scipio Africarus had besieged the City of Carthage, Chera that was a widow (dwellinge there) seeinge the daunger at hand wherein the Citty stode, and doubtyng the losse and ouerthowe of the same, and that the honor of the dames and womankinde, coulde vneths be safe and harmeleffe, determined not to abide the vttermost: and hauinge a good quantity of Gold and precious stones, she bestowed the same in a casquet, and hid it vpon one of the beames of hir houfe,

purposinge when the stir and daunger was past, to retourne to hir house agayne for thoſe hir hidden things. Which done, in the habite of a poore woman with her onely daughter in hir hand that was about 5 or 6 yeaſes of age, ſhe went out of Carthage, and paſſed ouer the Seas into Scicilia, where falling ſicke, after ſhe had bene there three or four yeaſes, at length died. But before ſhee departed, ſhee called her Daughter before hir, then about Ten yeaſes olde, and told hir the place where ſhe had laied hir Casket. And by reaſon of the victory gotten by Scipio, the city was maruel- loufly chaunged, and amonſt other things, the house of Chera was giuen to a Romane Souldiour that was fo enriched with Nobility of Mynd, as hee was poore of Fortune's Goods. Whyeh Chera vnderſtandynge, was forowfull, and doubted of hir thyngeſ ſecret- lyef beſtowed vpon the beame. Wherewpon ſhe ſayd vnto hir daughter, that for fo much as their house was in the poſſeſſion of an other, ſhe ought to be wife and circumſpect in the recouerye of hir hidden goods: and that hir death was the more greuous vnto hir, because ſhe muſt leauē hir (ſo yong a maiden) vnprouided of frendes for hir good gouernement. But yet ſhe encouraged hir againe and ſayd: that ſith neceſſity approched, ſhe muſt in chyldyſh age, put on a graue and auncient minde, and beware howe ſhee beſrayed that casket to any perſon, for that of purpoſe ſhee reſerued the knowledge thereof, to hir ſelf, that it miſt ferue for hir preferment, and procure hir a hufband worthy of hir ſelfe. And the maiden demaunding the value of the ſame, ſhee told hir that it was worth cc. Talentes, and gaue hir in writing the particulares incloſed within the Caskette, and that the lyke bill ſhee ſhould find within the ſame, written wyth hir owne Hande. And fo the good woman within a while after dyed, leauyng be- hynde hir the yong mayden hir daughter, that marueloufly la- mented the death of hir mother, accordingly as nature taught hir, and ech other reaſonable wyght depriued from their deareſt friends. The maiden for hir yeres was very wife, and would diſcloſe to none what her mother had ſayd, keeping the writing very care- fully. Not long after Philene (whych was the maiden's name) fell in loue with a Gentleman of Scicilia of greate reputacion and authority, who al bee it he ſaw hir to be very faire and comely,

yet cared not for hir loue in respect of Maryage, for that hee knewe hir to bee poore, and withoute dowrie mete for a Gentleman, iesting and mocking to see hir fixe hir minde on him, for defyre to haue him to hir husbande, that was a personage so noble and rich: which refusall pierced the hearte of the tender maiden, bicause she saw hir selfe forsaken for nothyng else, but for want of goods: whycli made hir to think and consider, howe shée myght recouer the riches that hir mother had layed vp in Carthage. It chaunced as she was in this meditation, the daughter of him to whome the Houfe of Chera was giuen, called Elisa, was likewise enamoured of a noble yong gentleman in Carthage, who bicause Elisa was the daughter of a Sonldiour, and not very rich, in like manner laughed and iested at hir loue, no lesse than the other did at Philene. Notwithstanding Elisa attempted al meanes possible to induce the yong man to loue hir, but hir practise and attemptes tended to none effect. And last of all, desirous to haue a resolute answere, and thereby vnderstode, that he would rather dye than take hir to Wyfe, she fell into despayre and cursed fortune, and hir fate, that she was not borne riche enough to match wyth hir chosen Gentleman, and that she being poore, must fall in loue wyth futch a personage: whereupon she miserably tormented hir selfe, stille bewaylinge hir vnhappy lucke, that shée could not win him to be hir husband, for whych only intent and purpose she loued him. And this amorous passion incredibly growing in hir, the rootes whereof be planted in the restleffe humor of melancholy, and wanting all hope and comforte to stay that Ranke and Rammishe weede, it so increased in her, as shée franticke in raging loue gaue hir selfe ouer to the spoyle of hirself: and to rid her from the grieve, she determined to kill hir selfe, imagining whych way she might do the same. At length she was resolued, with hir father's sword to peerce hir body: but hir heart not seruing hir thereunto, deuised by the halter to end her lyfe, saying thus to herselfe: "Thys death yet shal do me good, that the cruel man may know that for his sake I haue done this fact: and if his heart be not made of Iron or steele, he can not chose but forrowe and lament, that a poore mayde whych loued him better than hir owne lyfe, hath made futch wretched

ende onely for his cruelty." Elifa concluding vpon this intent, prepared a Halter: and being alone in her house, in the chamber where the Casket lay vpon the beame, placed a stoole vnder the same, and began to tye the halter about the beame: in doinge whereof, she espied the casket, and reached the same vnto hir, who feeling it to be heauy and weighty, immediatly did open it, and founde the Byll within, which Chera had written with hir owne hand, agreeable to that which she had deliuered to hir daughter, wherein were particularly remembred the Iewels and other riches fast closed within the casket. Who disclosing the bagges wherein the gold and Iewels were bound vp, and seeing the great value of the same, wondred thereat, and ioyfull for that fortune, hid the rope which she had prepared for hir death, in the place where she found the casket, and with great gladnesse and mirth went vnto hir father, and shewed him what she had found, whereat the father reioyced no lesse, then his daughter Elifa did, bicause he sawe himselfe thereby to be discharged of his former poore life, and like to proue a man of inestimable wealth and substance: and saw likewise that the poore wench his daughter, by the addicion of those riches, was like to attayne the party whom shee loued. When he had taken forth those bagges and well surueyed the value, to the intent no man might suspect the fodayne mutation of his state, tooke his daughter with him, and went to Rome, where after he had remayned certayne monethes, hee returned to Carthage, and began very galantly to apparell himselfe, and to keepe a bountifull and liberall house. His table and port was very delicate and Sumptuous, and hys Stable stored wyth many fayre Horfse, in all poynctes shewinge himselfe very Noble and rich: by which fodayne chaunge of state, the whole Citty beleueed that he had brought that wealth from Rome. And bicause it is the common opinion of the vulgar sort, that where there is no riches, there is no nobility, and that they alone make men noble and gentle (a foolyshe Opinion in deede proceedinge from heads that be rash and light) the people markynge that porte and charge kept by the Souldiour, conceyued that he was of some noble house. And throughout the whole Citty great and solemne honour was done vnto him: whereupon the young Gentleman, with whom

Elisa was in loue, began to bee ashamed of himselfe, that he had disdayned the mayden. Whych mayden seeing hir Father's houſe to be in ſutche reputation, made ſute to her father, that he would procure the Gentleman to bee hir husband. But hir father wylled hir in any wyſe to keepe ſecret hir deſire, and not to ſeeme her ſelfe to bee in loue, and wyſely tolde hir, that more meete it was that ſhe ſhould bee ſolicited by him, than ſhee to make ſute or request for mariage: alleaginge that the leſſe deſirous the gentleman had bene of hir, the more deare and better beloved ſhee ſhoulde be to hym. And many tymes when hys Daughter was demaunded to Wyfe, he made aunſwere that matrimony was a ſtate of no litle importance, as enduring the whole course of Lyfe, and therefore ought well to bee conſidered and wayed, before any concluſion were made. But for all theſe demaundes and aunſwers, and all theſe ſtops and ſtayes, the mayden was indowēd with an honest dowry, and in the end her louer and ſhe were maried, with ſo great pleaſure and ſatiſfaction of them both, as they deemeđ themſelues happy. In the meane time while theſe things were done at Carthage, Philene in Scicilia toke thought how ſhe might recouer her goods geuen to her by her mother, deſirous by their meaneſ also to ſort hir earnest and ardent loue to happy ſucceſſe. And debatinge with her ſelfe (as we haue ſayd before) howe ſhe might obtayne them, because the houſe was in poſſeſſion of an other, thought it to bee agaynst reaſon and order, that although ſhe had loſt hir houſe, yet hir goods ought to be reſtored vnto hir, which were hir onely mayntenance and reputation, and the fitteſt inſtrument that ſhould conduēt her loue to happy ende. And hearinge tell that the Father of Elifa the poſſeſſor of hir mother's houſe liued at Carthage in great royaſty and magniſcence, thought that if by ſome ſleight and poſſeſſion, ſhe founde not meaneſ to enter the houſe without ſuſpicion, hir attempt would be in vayne: determined therefore to goe to Carthage, and to ſeeke ſeruice in that houſe, counterfaytinge the kynde and habite of a Page. For ſhe conſidered, that if ſhe went thither in order and apparell of a mayden, ſhe ſhould incur the perill of her virgiñity, and fall into the laſpe of diuers other daungers, purpoſed then to go thyther in maner of a Page and lacky. And

when she had in that fort furnished hirselfe, she passed the Seas, and arriuied at Carthage. And seekinge seruice about the City at length chaunced to be retayned in a house that was next neyghbour to the Souldier, and bicause this wench was gentle and of a good disposition, was wel beloued of her maister, who being the frend of Elisa, hir Father many times sent vnto him diuers presents and gifts by Philene, wherewpon she began to be acquainted and familiar with the seruantes of the house, and by her oft repayre thyther viewed and marked euery corner, and vpon a time entred the chamber wherein hir Mother Chera olde hir, that shee had bestowd hir goods, and lookinge vpont the Beames espied by certayne Signes and tokens, one of them to be the same where the Casket lay: and therewithal wel satissified and contented, verily supposed that the casket still remayned there, and without further businesse for that time, expected some other seafon for recovery of the same. In the ende, the good behauour and diligence of Philene, was so liked of Elisa, as hir father and she made sute to hir maister to giue hir leaue to serue them, who bycause they were his friends, preferred Philene vnto them, and became a page of that house. And one day secretly repayrynge into the chamber, where the treasure lay mounted vpon a stoole, and sought the beame for the casket: where she found no casket, but in place where that lay, the halter, wherewithal Elisa woulde haue strangled hir self. And searching all the parts of the Chamber and the beames, and finding nothing else but the halter, she was surprised with sutch incredible sorrowe, as she seemed like a stock, without spiryte, voice or life. Afterwardes, being come againe to hir selfe, shee began pitifully to lament and complayn in this maner: "Ah wretched Philene, vnder what vnluckie signe and planet was thou begotten and borne? wyth what offence were the heauens wroth, when they forced thee to pierce thy mother's wombe? Could I poore creature when I was framed within the moulde of nature, and fed of my mother's substance within hir wombe, and afterwards in due time brought forth to light, commit sutch crime, as to prouoke the celestiall impreffions to conspire agaynst my Natiuity, to bryng mine increasid age into sutch wretched state and pligte wherein it is now

wrapped? No, no, my faulte was nothing, it was parent's offence, if any were at all: for many times we see the innocent babe afflicted for the father's guilt. The Gods do punish the posterity, for som sacrilege or notorious crime committed by progenitors: theyr manner is not to suffer heynous faultes vnreuenged: their iustice cannot abide such mischief vncorrected for example sake: so fareth it by me. Firſt my father died, after wardes my Mother a widow was driuen to abandon natvie foyle, and feeke relieve in forrain land: and leauing that wherwith we were poſſeſſed in enimies keping, were forced a ſimple life to leade among ſtraungers. And my mother, yelding forth hir ghost, made me beleue that ſhee had hidden great treasures here: and I vnhappy wench thinking to obteine the pray, haue wandred in counterfeit kind, and fetched many a bitter figh, vntil I came into this place: and the thing I hoped for, which myght haue bene the meanes and ende of all my care, is turned to nothyng: a casket tranſformed into a halter: gold and Iewels into a piece of rope? Is this the mariage dowry (Philene) thou art like to haue to match with him whom thou ſo derely louest? Is this the knot that ſhall conioyne you both in yoke of man and wife? Ah wretch and miserable caitife, the goods thy mother layd vp for thee, for maintenance of thy reſt, and ſafegarde of thine honour, and for the reputation of thy noble houſe, wherof thou camſt, is now berieuued from thee: they that kepe this ſtately houſe, and beare their lofty port amid the beſt, haue deſpoiled thee pore wench of that after which thou diſdiſt vainly trauayle. But what remedye now? ſith thy wicked lot doth thus fall out, ſith thy cruel fate is loth thou ſhouldeſt atteine the thing on whych thy mind is bente, and ſith thy painfull lyfe can take no ende, make ſpede to rid thy ſelfe from misery by that meanes which he hath prepared for thee that hath found thy goods: who feeing his good aduenture to be thy bane, his happy pray to bee thy ſpoyle, hath left in lieu of treasure, a halter, that therwith thou myghteſt diſpatch thy ſelfe from all thy grieſes, and in their vnhappye compaſſe to ceafe thy life, that the lothfom, lengthning of the ſame might not increase thy further plaints, forowes, anguish and affliction. And in the place where infortunate Philene toke hir beginning, ther the Miferable wretche muſt finiſhe that,

which without hir desired gaine no longer can be mayntained. Peraduenture it may come to passe as when thy soule is losed from this mortall charge, it shall stalke by hym, by whom it liueth, and by him also whom she thought to ioy in greatest contentation that euer mortall woman did." And thus plaininge and fighing hir il fortune, when she had ended those words she tyed the halter about the beame, where sometimes hir Treasure lay, which beyng done shee put the same about hir necke, sayinge: "O crooked Lady Fortune, that hast thus vnfrendly dealt with thine humble clyent: Ah dispayre, thou vgly wretch and companion of the distressed that is vnwillinge to leaue my haunte vntyll thou playe the Hangman. Ah Dyuell incarnate that goest aboue to hale and plucke the innocent into thy hellish caue. Out vpon the thou deformed hellish dogge, that waitest at the fiery gate to lette them in, which faine would passe an other porte." And as shee was powryng forth these spitefull wordes, redy to remove the stoole to fetch hir fwynge, the Gods which would not giue consent, that the innocent wench shoulde enter that vile and opprobrious death, moued the heart of Elisa, to passe by the place where she was in workynge on her selfe that desperate end: who hearing those moneful plaints vtred after such terrible manner, opened the Chamber doore, and saw that myserable fight: and ignorant of the occasion, moued with pity, ranne and stayed hir from the fact, saying thus vnto hir: "Ah Philene," (whych was the name that she had giuen to hir selfe) "what folie hath bewitched thy mind? What phrenfie hath incharmed thy braine? What harde aduenture hath moued thee in this miserable wife, to ende thy life?" "Ah" (sayd Philene) "suffer me Elisa, to finish my tormentes: giue me liberty to vnburden myselfe from the bande of cares that do affaile me on euery side: lette thefe Helhounds that stande heare rounde about mee, haue theyr praye for which they gape. Thou moued by compassion, arte come hither to stay mee from the Halter: but in dyng so, thou doest mee greater wrong, than doeth despayre whych eggeth me therunto. Suffer I say, that mine afflictions may take some end, fith cruel fortune willeth it to be so, or rather vnhappy fate: for sowre death is sweeter in my conceit, than bitter life contriued in sharper saunce than gall or wormwood."

Elifa hearing her speake these wordes, sayd: "For so much as thy myshap is such, as onely death is the nearest remedie to depriue thy payne, what wicked chaunce hath induced thee, in this house to finish those thy miseries? What hath prouoked the to futch augury to this our most happy and ioyfull family?" "Forced is the partye" (sayd Philene) "so to doe when desteny hath so appointed." "What desteny is that?" demaunded Elifa. "Tell mee I. besech thee, perchaunce thou mayst preuent the same by other remedy than that whereabout thou goest." "No," (answered Philene) "that is impossible, but to satissie thy request which so instantly thou crauest of me, I wil tel thee the summe of al my miserie." In saying so the teares gushed forth hir eyes, and hir voice brake oute into complaints, and thus began to say: "Ah Elifa, why should I feke to prolong my wretched life in this vale of wretchednesse, wherein I haue ben so miserably afflicted? my mother pitieg mine estate and feeyng me voyde of frends, and a fatherleffe child vpon hir death bed, disclosed vnto me a treasure which she had hidden vpon this beam whervnto this halter (the best remedy of my misery) is tied: and I making ferch for the same, in place of that treasure found this halter, ordeined as I suppose (by what misfortune I knowe not) for my death: and where I thought among the happy to be the most happy, I see my selfe amongs al vnlucky women to be the most vnfourtunate." Elifa hearing hir say so, greatly maruelled and sayd: "Why then I perceiue thou art a woman and not a man." "Yea, truly," answered the vnhappy mayden: "A singuler example of extreme misery to all sortes of women." "And why so?" demaunded Elifa. "Bicause" (answered Philene) "that the pestilent planet vnder which I was borne, will haue it to be so." And then she told hir al that which had chaunced from the time of hir mother's departure out of Carthage, and how she went into Scicilia and recounted vnto hir the loue that she bare to a Scicilian Gentleman, and howe that he disdayning hir for hir pouerty, refused to be hir husband: whervpon to atchieue hir desire as loth to forgoe him, was come in maner of a page to Carthage, to recouer the riches which hir Mother had hidden there, to the intente she might obtaine (if not by other meanes) with som

rich dowrie, the yong Gentleman to husband whom she so dearely loued. And then reenforcing hir complaint, she said: That sith Fortune had despoiled hir of that which might haue accomplished hir desyre, resting no cause why she should any longer liue, the halter was prepared for hir to end her daies, and to rid hir life from troubles. And therefore she praied hir to be contented, that she might make that end which hir misaduenture and wicked fortune had predestinate. I doubt not but there be many, which vnderstanding that the treasure did belong to Philene, if they had found the like as Elisa did, would not onely not haue forbidden hir the Death, but also by speedy meanes haue hastened the same, for so mucht as by that occasion the hidden treasure should haue ben out of strife and contention: so greate is the force of couetousnesse in the minde of man. But good Elisa knew ful wel the mutability of Fortune in humaine thinges, for so mucht as she by seeking death, had fonde the thinge which not onely deliuered hir from the same, but made hir the best contented woman of the worlde. And Philene seekinge hir contention, in place thereof, and by like occasion, found the thinge that would haue ben the instrument of hir death, and moued with very great compaffion of the mayden, desired to haue better aduertisement howe that treasure could belong to her. Then Philene shewing forth hir mother's writing, which particularly remembred the parcels within the casket, and Elisa seeinge the same to be agreeable to the hand wherewith the other was written that was founde in the casket, was assured that all the gold and Iewels which she had found, did belong vnto Philene, and sayd vnto hirselfe: "The Gods defend that I should prepare the halter for the death of this innocent Wench, whose substaunce hath yelde vnto mee my hart's desyre." And comforting the mayden, in the ende she sayd: "Be contented Philene, and giue ouer this thy desperate determination, for both thy lyfe shalbe prolonged, and thy discontented minde appeased, hoping thou shalt receyue the conforte thou desirest." And with those words she losed the halter from hir neck, and takinge hir by the hand, brought hir to the place where hir Father and husband were, and did them to vnderstand the force and terms whereunto the fier of loue and desperation had brought that amorous mayden:

tellinge them that all the treasure and Iewels which she had found (where she left the halter, and wherewith Philene was minded to hang hir selfe) did by good right and reason belongeth to hir: then she did let them se the counterpayne of that bill which was in the casket, in all points agreeable thereunto, declaringe moreouer that verye lyke and reasounable yt were, like curtefie shold bee vsed vnto her, as by whom they hadde receyued so greate honoure and delyghte. Her husband which was a Carthagian borne, very churlishe and couetous, albeit by confering the writings together, he knewe the matter to be true, and that Philene ought to be the posseffor thereof, yet by no meanes would agree vnto hys wyue's request, but fell into a rage, callinge hir Foole and Ideot, and sayinge that hee had rather that shee had bene a Thousande tymes hanged, than he would giue hir one peny: and although she had sauied hir life, yet she ought to be banished the Citty, for so mutch as the same and all the propertie thereof was brought into the Romane's handes, and amoungs the same hir mother's house, and al hir goods in posseffion of the victors, and euery part, at their disposition and pleasure. And moreouer, for so mutch as hir mother and shee had departed Carthage, and would not abide the hazardre and extremity of their country as other Citizens did, and having concealed and hidden those riches which ought to haue ben brought forth for the common defence of their countrey, and gone out of the Citty as though she had ben a poore simple Woman, poorely therefore shee ought to lyue in Scicilia, whyther she was fled. Wherefore he was of opinion, that shee in this maner beinge departed when the Citty had greatest neede of hir helpe, was diffraunchised of all the rightes and customes of the countrey, and that like as a straunger can recouer nothinge in that Citty, except he haue the priuiledge and Freedome of the same, euen so Philene (for the consideracions before recited) ought to be compted for a straunger, and not to participate any thinge within the City, accordingly as the lawes forbid. When he had so sayd, he was like by force to expell the sorrowfull mayden out of the house. These wordes greatly grieued Philene, who doubted least his father in law would haue ioyned with him, and agree vnto hys alleaged reasouns, whych seemed to

be of great importaunce and effect: and therefore thought newly to returne to the Halter for remedy of hir grieses; but it other-  
wise chaunced, for the Father of Elisa, which was a Romane  
borne, and affected with a Romane minde, and therefore of a  
Gentle and well disposèd nature, knew ful wel, that although the  
house was giuen vnto him by the consent of Scipio, and other  
the Captaynes, yet he knew that their pleasure was not to bestowe  
on him the treasure hidden in the same, and therefore ought to  
be restored to the true owner, or else confiscate and properly due  
to the Romane Eschequer, or common treasure house of the same:  
and albeit that it was true that hir Mother went out of Carthage,  
in the time of the Siege, and therefore had forsayted the same, yet  
he determined to shewe some curteſie vnto the younge mayden, and  
to be thankfull to fortune, for the benefite which by hir meanes  
he had receyued, thinkinge that ſhe would be displeased with  
him, if he with vngratefull minde or dishonourable intent ſhould  
receyue hir giftes. For in thofe dayes the Romans highly reuer-  
enced Lady Fortune, and in hir honour had Erected Temples, and  
Dedicated Aultars, and in prosperous tyme and happy aduentures,  
they conſecrated vowes, and ſacrifices vnto hir, thinkinge (although  
ſuperſticiously) that like as from God there proceeded none euil,  
euen ſo from him all goodneſſe was deriuē: that all felicity  
and other good happens, whych chaunced vpon the Romane  
Common wealth, proceeded from Fortune, as the Fountayne and  
moſt Principall Occaſion, and that they which would not confeſſe  
hir force, and be thanckful vnto hir Godheade, incurred in the  
ende hir Displeaſure and Daungers very great and haynous. This  
Romane then hauing this opinion, beinge (as I ſayd before) of  
a gentle Dispoſition woulde at one instant both render thankes  
to Fortune, and vſe curteſie vnto that mayden, by whofe riches  
and goods from lowe degree he was aduanced to honourable  
ſtate. Wherefore turning his Face vnto hir, with louing counte-  
naunce he ſpake theſe wordes: "Right gentle damofel, albeit by  
the reaſons alledged by my ſonne in law, none of the treasure  
hidden by thy mother, and founde by my Daughter in thys house,  
of right doth appertayne to thee, yet I will that thou ſhalte  
vnderſtande my curteſie, and that thou ſee how the Romanes

doe more esteeme the nobility of their minde, than all the riches of the world. Therefore that thou mayst enjoy thy loue, I referre vnto thee and to thy disposition all the goods and Iewels that were in the Casket, and contayned in thy writinge. Beholde therefore (causing the casket to be brought vnto him) all the Iewels and other parcels that were in the same when they were founde, take so mutch thereof as thou wilt, and if so bee thou desire the whole, willingly I render the same vnto thee, sithens by means of those riches, and the industry of my trafique, I haue gayned so mutch, as hauinge gyuen a conuenient dowry vnto my daughter, I honorably liue without it." Philene seeing the curtesie of this valiaunt gentleman, gaue him infinite thanks, and then sayd vnto him: "Sir, I for my part dare aske nothinge, well knowinge that if you gene me nothinge, there is no cause why I shoulde complayne of you, but of my hard and wicked fortune, whych hath offered and giuen that to you, which ought to haue bin mine. Wherefore, sith your curtesie is futch, as you refer the whole to mee, I purpose to take nothing, but will that the whole shall bee in your disposition, and giue mee what you list, and that so gieuen of your liberality, I shal more thankfully receiue, than if debt or duty did constraine it: and if it shall please you to giue me nothing, my heart shal bee so well appeased, for that your curtesie, as rather woulde I chose to liue in the poore estate wherein I am, than be rych with your displeasure." Howbeit, the Romayne intreated Philene to take thereof what shee thought good: and Philene craued no more than it pleased hym to gyue. Eyther of them standinge vpon these termes Elifa, brake the strife, who knowinge the force of loue, and the griefes incident to his clients, by hir own harmes, moued to haue compassion vpon the afflicted, turned towardes hir father, and sayd vnto him: "Right louinge father, the contencion betweene Philene and you, is risen of a matter which came by me. The treasure for which you striue, and committed to the will of Philene, was found by me, whereof if it please you both, I wyll take futch order, as both you shalbe satissified." "I am contented," sayd hir father: "And I likewise," aunswered Philene. Then sayd Eliza: "You father bitherto haue had but one Daughter, which

am I, vnto whom like a chylde and louinge daughter I haue bene obediant, and shalbe all the dayes of my lyfe: and I agayne haue receiued from you futch fatherly education, as your ability and state required. This treasure I found and gaue to you for ease and comfort of vs both: to me it yelded the only dele&tation of my heart in choyse of husband: to you honour and estimation within thys City. Wherefore, fith the principal came from me, and the right resteth in this careful maiden, my desire is, that where before you had but one daughter, you will adopt this maiden for another, and thinke that you have twaine, and that you will intreate Philene in like sort as if shee were my sister: and where this Inheritance and reuenue wherewith now you be posseſſed, and this casket also ought to be onely myne after your decease, for that you haue no sonnes, nor other Iſſue, my desire is that you geue vnto her the halfe, and that you accept hir for your daughter, as I doe meane to take hir for my sister: and accordingly to vſe hir duringe lyfe." With these wordes Elisa imbraced Philene, and louingly dyd kiffe hir, sayinge vnto hir: "For my sister I entertayn thee Philene." And then shee tooke hir by the hand and gaue hir vnto hir father with these wordes: "Beholde father, your new daughter, whom I beſeech you ſo har‐tily to loue as you do Elisa your naturall chylde." The father prayed the curteſie of Elisa, and receiued Philene for his daughter and was contented wyth the Arbitrament of his Daughter. But Elisa perceyuing hir husband to be ſomewhat offendid therewyth, ſpecially for that the ſame ſhould be deuided into two partes, which was like to haue bene hys wholly before, perſuaded hym by gentle meanes to be content wyth that agreement: and althoſh at the firſt he could not well brooke the liberality of his wyfe, yet at length viewinge the good behauour and gentle diſpoſition of Philene, and the contented minde of his father in law, together with the noble nature of his wyfe, and hir wife aduer‐tifement of Fortune's fickle assurance, yelded, and acknowledged Philene for hys kinswoman. And ſo Philene put in poſſeſſion of the halfe of thoſe goods, whereof ſhe was altogether out of hope, was well ſatiſfied, and had the Romane for hir father, Elisa for hir ſister, and hir husband for hir kinsman. That valyant

Roman was so careful ouer Philene, as if she had ben his owne daughter, and so indeuored, as he brought to passe that she obtainede hir beloued Scicilian to husbande: who also sent for hym to Carthage, where he continued with his wife in the Romane's house, and loved them both so dearely as though he had ben father to the one, and father in lawe to the other. In this maner these two poore wenches attained their two husbands, for hauing of whom, theyr onely care was for Ryches, and for lacke thereof were dryuen to despayre: and in the ende both (though diuerfly, and the one more fortunat than the other) recouered riches, and with the same theyr husbandes, to their heartes singular ioye and contentation. Which lucke I wyshe to all other poore Girles (but not hangyng rype, or louyng in despayre) that bend their mindes on Mariage, and feeke to people by that estate, their countrey common wealth. But leauinge for a time these Tragicall Nouels and heauy chaunces, wee purpose to remember soine morall matters right worthy of remembraunce: Letters they bee from a godly Pagane clerk, the famous Philosopher Plutarch, Schoolemaister to an Emperour of no leſſe vertue, than hys mayſter's Schoole and mynde was fraught with diuine Precepts. Wherefore proceede (good Reader) to continue the paynes vpon the readinge of these, so well as thou haſt vouchſafed to employ thy time before. They ſhal no leſſe delite thee, if vertue brooke thee, they ſhal no leſſe content thee if duty please thee, than any delightſome thing, whereupon (at any tyme) thou haſt employed thy va- caunte tyme.

## THE TWELFTH NOUELLE.

## LETTERS OF THE EMPEROUR TRAIANE.

*Letters of the Philosopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the sayd Emperour to Plutarch: the lyke also from the sayd Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be conteyned godly rules for gouernment of Princes, obedience of Subiects, and their duties to common wealth.*

BICAUSE these Letters ensuinge (proceeding from the infallible Schoole of Wisedome, and practised by an apt Scholler of the same, by a noble Emperor that was well trained vp by a famous Philosopher) in myne opinion deserue a place of Recorde amonge our Englishe Volumes, and for the wholsome errudition, ought to Englishmen in english shape to bee described, I haue thought good in this place to introduce the same. And although to some it shal not peraduenture seeme fit and conuenient to mingle holy with profane, (accordinge to the prouerbe) to intermedle amongs pleasaunt histories, ernest epistles, amid amorous Nouels, learned Letters, yet not to care for report or thought of futch findefaults, I iudge them not vnseemely, the course of thos historiess. For amid the diuine works of Philosophers and Oratours, amongs the pleasaunt paynes of auncient Poets, and the Nouell writers of our time, merry verses so well as morall matters be mingled, wanton bankets so wel as wise disputationes celebrated, tauntinge and iocund Orations so well as effectuall declamations and persuasions pronounced. These letters contayne many graue and wholesom documents, fundry vertuous and chosen Institutions for Prynces and Noble men, yea and for futch as beare offyce and preferment in commonwealth from highest title to meanest degree. Theese letters do vouch the reioyce of a Schoolemayster for bringinge vp a Scholler of capacity and aptnesse, to imbrace and Fix in Memory futch lessons as he taught him. These Letters do gratulate and remembre the ioy of the disciple for hauninge futch a maister. These letters do pronounce the minde of a vertuous Prince towardes

hys subiects for choyse of him to the empire, and for that they had respect rather to the vertue and condition, than to the nobility or other extreme accident. To be short, theſe letters ſpeake and pronounce the very humbleneſſe and fealty that ought to reſt in ſubiectes' hearts: with a thouſand other excellent ſentences of duties. So that if the Emperor Nerua had bin aliue agayne to perufe theſe letters and Epiftles of congratulation betweene the Schoolemayſter and Scholler, he would no leſſe haue reioyſed in Plutarch than king Philip of Macedon did of Aristotle, when hee affiſmed himſelf to be happy, not ſo much for hauiing ſutche a ſonne as Alexander was, as for that he was borne in ſutche a time, as had brought Aristotle to be his maifters. That good Emperor Nerua, ſhewed a patern to his ſucceſſor by his good vertuous lyfe and godly gouernment, which made a ſucceſſor and a people of no leſſe confeſſion than they were trayned, accordingly as Herodian voucheth, that for the moft part the people be wont to imitate the Life of their Prince and foueraygne Lord. If Philip deemeſt hymſelfe happy and bleſſed for hauiing ſutche a ſonne and mayſter, then might Nerua terme himſelfe threefolde more happy for ſutche a Nephew and ſutche a notable Schoolemayſter as Plutarch was, who not only by doctrine but by praćtice proued a paſſing good Scholler. Alexander was a good Scholer and for the time wel praćtised his maifters Leſſons, but afterwards as glory and good hap accompanied his noble diſpoſition, ſo did he dege-nerate from former life, and had quite forgotten what he had learned, as the ſecond Nouell of this Booke more at large declareth. But Traiane of a toward Scholler, proued ſutche an Emperor and victor ouer himſelfe, as ſchoolinge and rulinge were in him mira-  
culous, and ſurmounting Paragon of piety and vertue: where-  
fore not to ſtay thee from the perufinge of theſe Letters,  
the right image of himſelfe: thus beginneth  
Plutarch to write vnto his famous  
Scholler Traiane.

*A Letter of the Philosopher Plutarch to the Emperor Traiane, wherein is touched how Gouerners of Common wealths ought to be prodigal in deedes and spare in words.*

My most dread soueraygne Lorde, albeit of longe tyme I haue known the modefty of your mynde, yet neyther I nor other liuing man did euer know that you aspired to that, which many men defire, which is to be Emperour of Rome. That man should withdrawe hymselfe from honour, it were cleane without the boundes of wysedome: but not to lycence the heart to desire the fame, that truely is a worke diuine, and not proceedinge of humayne nature. For he doeth indifferently well, that repreffeth the works which his handes be able to do, without staying upon his owne desires, and for good confideration wee may terme thine Empire to be very happy, fith thou haft so nobly demeaned thy selfe to deserue the fame without search and seekinge industrious policy to attayne thereunto. I haue known within the city of Rome many great personages, which were not so mutch honored for the offices whych they bare, as they were for the meanes and deuises whereby they fought to be aduaunced to the fame. May it please you to vnderstand (most excellent Prince) that the honor of a vertuous man doth not confisit in the office, which he presently hath, but rather in the merites that preferred him thereunto: In such wise, as it is the office that honoreth the partye, and to the officer there resteth but a painful charge. By meanes wherof, when I remembre that I was your gouerner from your youth, and instructed your vertuous mind in letters, I can not chose but very much reioyce, so well for your soueraigne vertue, as for your maiefie's good fortune, deming it to be a great happineſſe vnto me that in my time Rome hath inioyed him to be their fouraigne lord, whom I had in tymes past to be my scholler. The principalities of kyngdomes ſome winne by force, and maintaync them by armes, which ought not ſo to be in you, nor yet conceiue opinion of your ſelfe, but rather to thinke that the empire which you gouerne by vniuerſall consent, yee ought to entertaine and rule with general iuſtice. And therfore if you loue and reuerence the Gods, if you

bee pacient in trauels, warie in daungers, curteous to your people, gentle to straungers, and not couetous of treasure, nor louer of your owne desires: you shall make your fame immortall, and gouern the common wealth in soueraign peace: that you be not a louer of your own desires, I speake it not withoute cause, for there is no worse gouernement than that which is ruled by selfe wyll and priuate opinion. For as he that gouerneth a common wealth ought to lyue in feare of al men, euen so mutch more in feare of him selfe, in so mutch as he may commit greater error by doinge that which his owne luste commaundeth, than if he were ruled by the counsell of other. Assure you sir, that you can not hurt your selfe, and mutch lesse preiudice vs your subiects, if you do correct your selfe before you chastise others, esteemyng that to bee a ryght good gouernment when you be prodigal in workes, and spare of speache. Assay then to be such a one now, that you do commaunde, as you were when you were commaunded. For otherwise it would lyttle auaille to do things for deseruing of the empyre, if afterwards your dedes be contrary to former deserts. To com to honour it is a humane worke, but to conferue honour it is a thing diuine. Take hede then (most excellent Traiane) that you do remembre and still reuolve in minde, that as you be a Prince supreme, so to apply your selfe to be a passing ruler. For there is no authority amongs men so high, but that the Gods aboue be iudges of their thoughts, and men beneth beholders of their deedes. Wherfore sith presentlye you are a mighty Prince, your duety is the greater to be good, and leisure lesse to be wycked, than when you were a pryuate Man. For hauing gotten authoirity to commaund, your lyberty is the lesse to bee idle: so that if you bee not sutch a one as the common people haue opinion of you, and such againe as your maister Plutarch desireth, you shall put your selfe in greate Daunger, and myne Ennymyes wyll seeke meanes to bee reuenged on mee, knowynge wel that for the Scholler's faulte the Mayster Dayly suffreth wronge by flaundrous checke imputed vnto hym (although withoute cause.) And for so much as I haue ben thy maister, and thou my scholer, thou must indeuour by well doyng, to render me some honour. And lykewyse if thou do euyll, great infamy shall lyght on me, euen as

it did to Seneca for Nero his cause, whose cruelties don in Rome were imputed to his mayster Seneca. The like wronge was done to the Philosopher Chilo, by beyng burdened with the neglygent nouriture of his Scholler Leander. They truely were famous personages and greate learned men, in whom the gouernemente of myghty Princes was reposid: notwithstanding, for not correcting them in their youth, nor teachyng them with carefull dylygence, they blotted for euermore theyr renoume, as the cause of the destruction of many common wealthes. And forsomuch as my pen spared none in times past, bee well assured Traiane, that the same will pardon neither thee or mee in tyme to come: for as wee bee confederate in the fault, euen so we shal be heires of the pain. Thou knowest well what leffons I haue taught thee in thy youth, what counsell I haue gyuen thee, beeyng come to the state of man, and what I haue written to thee, fithens thou haft ben Prince, and thou thy selfe art recorde of the wordes which I haue spoken to thee in secrete: in all whych I neuer persuaded thyng but that intended to the seruice of the gods, profite of the common wealthe and increase of thy renoume: wherfore, I am right sure, that for anye thing which I haue written, sayd, or persuaded there is no cause I should feare the punishment of the gods, and much lesse the reprochful shame of men, verily beleuing that al which I coulde say in secrete, might without reproch be openly published in Rome. Nowe before I toke my pen in hand to write this Letter, I examined my lyfe, to know, if (during the time that I had charge of thee) I dyd or sayd in thy presence any thing that might prouoke thee to euill example. And truely (vnmete for me to say it) vpon that searche of my forepassef life, I neuer found my selfe guilty of fafte vnmeete a Roman Cytyzen, nor euer spoke woerde vnfeemelye for a Phylosoper: by meanes whereof I doe ryght heartely wyshe, thou wouldest remember the good eduction and instructyon whych thou dyddeſt learne of mee. I speake not thys, that thou shouldest gratifie me againe with any Benefite, but to the ende thou myghtest serue thy selfe, esteemyng that no greater pleasure there is that can redounde to me, than to heare a good report of thee. Be then well assured that if an Empyre bee bestowed vpon thee, it was not for that thou wer a Citizen of

Rome or a couragious person descended of noble house, rich and mighty, but only because vertues did plentifully abounde in thee. I dedicated vnto thee certaine bookeſ of old and auncient common wealth, which if it please thee to vſe, and as at other times I haue ſayd vnto thee, thou ſhalte finde mee to be a proclaimer of thy famous workeſ, and a chronicler of all thy noble factes of armes: but if perchaunce thou follow thine owne aduife, and chaunge thy ſelfe to bee other than hitherto thou haſt ben, preſently I inuocate and cry out vpon the immortall Gods, and this Letter ſhall be wytnesse, that if any hurt do chaunce to thee, or to thine Empire, it is not through the counfell or meaneſ of thy maister Plutarch. And ſo farewell moſt Noble Prynce.

*The aunſwere of the Emperour Traiane to hys mayſter Plutarch.*

COCCEIUS Traiane Emperour of Rome, to the Philosopher Plutarch, ſometimes my mayſter: falutation and conſolation in the Gods of comfort. In Agrippina was deliuereſ vnto me a letter from thee, whych ſo ſoone as I opened, I knew to be written wyth thine owne hand, and enditeſ with thy wyſdom. So flowing was the fame with goodly woordes and accompanied with graue ſentences, an occaſion that made mee reade the fame twice or thrice, thinking that I ſaw thee write and heard thee ſpeak, and ſo welcome was the fame to me, as at that very instant I cauſed it to be red at my table, yea and made the fame to be fixed at my bed's heade, that thy well meanyng vnto me might be generally knownen, how mutch I am bound vnto thee. I eſteemed for a good preſage the congratulation that the Conſul Rutulus did vnto me from thee, touchinge my commyng to the empire: I hope through thy merites, that I ſhall be a good Emperoure. Thou ſayefte in thy letter, that thou canſte by no meaneſ beleue that I haue giuen bribeſ, and vſed meaneſ to buye myne Empire, as other haue done. For aunſwere thereunto I ſay, that as a man I haue diſired it, but neuer by ſolicitation or other meaneſ attempted it: for I neuer ſaw wythin the City of Rome any man to bribe for honour, but for the fame, ſome notable infamy chaunced vnto hym, as for

example wee may learne of the Good old man Menander, my friende and thy neyghbour, who to be Consul, procured the same by vnlawful meanes, and therfore in the end was banished and died desperately. The greate Caius Cæsar, and Tiberius, Caligula, Cladius, Nero, Galba, Otho Vitelius, and Domitian, some for usurpyng the Empire, some for tyranny, some for gettyng it by bribes, and some by other meanes procuring the same, lost (by the sufferance of the righteous gods) not onely their honour and goodes, but also they died miserably. When thou dydſt reade in thy schole, and I that time an hearer of thy doctrine, many times I hearde thee say, that we ought to trauel to deserue honour, rather than procure the same, esteemyng it vnlawfull to get honour by meanes vnlawfull. He that is without credite, ought to assay to procure credite. Hee that is with out honour, ought to seeke honour. But the vertuous man hathe no neede of noblenesse, ne hee himselfe, ne yet any other person can berieue him of due honour. Thou knowest wel Plutarch, that the yere past, the office of Consul was gyuen to Torquatus, and the Dictatorship to Fabritius, who were so vertuous and so little ambitious as not defyrous to receyue such charges, absented themselues, although that in Rome, they might have ben in great estimation, by reaſon of those offices, and yet neuertheleſſe without them they bee preſently eſteemed, loued and honoured: and therefore I conceiue greater delight in Quintius Lincinatus, in Scipio Africanus, and good Marcus Portius, for contemning of theyr offices, than for the victories which they atchieued: for victories many times conſift in fortune, and the not caryng for honorable charge in onely wifedome. Semblably, thou thy ſelfe art witneſſe, that when myn vngle Cocceius Nerua was exiled to Capua, he was more viſited, and better ſerued, than when he was at Rome: whereby may bee inferred, that a vertuous man may bee exyled or banished, but honour he ſhall neuer want. The Emperor Domitian (if you do remember) at the departure of Nerua, made me many offers, and thee many fayre promises to entertain thee in his house, and to ſend mee into Almayne, which thou couldeſt not abyde, and much leſſe conſent, deeming it to be greater honour with Nerua to be exiled, than of Domitian to be fauored. I ſweare by

the Gods immortall, that when the good olde man Nerua sent me the ensigne of the Empyre, I was vtterly ignorant thereof, and voyd of hope to atteyne the same: for I was aduertised from the Senate, that Fuluius sued for it, and that Pamphilius went about to buy it. I knew also that the Consul Dolobella attempted to enioy it: then sith the gods did permit, that I should be Emperour, and that myne vncle Nerua did commaund the same, the Senate approued it, and the common wealth would haue it to be so: and sith it was the generall consent of all men, and specially your aduyse, I haue greate hope that the Gods will be fauorable vnto me, and Fortune no ennimie at all: assuring you, that like ioy whych you do faye you had by teachyng me, and seing me now to be Emperour, the lyke I haue to thynke that I was your Scholler: and sith that you wyll not call mee from henceforth any other but Soueraygne Lord, I wyll terme you by none other name, than Louyng father. And albeit that I haue ben vistid and counselled by many men since my commyng to the Empyre, and by thee aboue the rest, whom before all other I wyll beleue, confideryng that the intent of those which counsell me, is to draw my mynd to theyrs, your letters purportyng nothyng else but mine aduaun- tage. I doe remember amongs other woordes, which once you spake to Maxentius the Secretary of Domitian, this saying: that they which doe presume to gyue counsell vnto Prynces, oughte to bee free from all passions and affectiōns: for in counsell, where the wyll is moste euclined, the mynde is more prompte and ready: that a Prince in all thyngs doe his wyll I prayfe not: that he take aduise and counsell of euery man I leffe allowe. That which he ought to doe (as me thinke) is to doe by counsel, forseeing for al that to what counsel he applieth his mynd: for counsel ought not to be taken of hym whom I doe well loue, but of hym of whom I am well beloued. All this I have wrytten (my mayster Plutarch) to aduertise you that from henceforthe I desire nothyng else at your handes, but to be holpen wyth your aduise in myne assayres, and that you tell me of my committed faults: for if Rome do thinke me to be a defender of their common wealth I make ac- compte of you to bee an ouerseer of my life: and therefore if you thinke that I am not thankfull ynough for the good aduyse, and

holsom warenings that you gyue me: I am to intreate you (myne owne good mayster) not to take it in ill part, for in such cases, the grieve that I conceiue, is not for the good less ons you gyue me, but for the shame that I fayle in followyng them. The bryngyng of me vp in thy house, the hearyng of thy lectures, the folowyng of thy doctryne, and liuing vnder thy disciplyne, haue ben truly the pryncipal causes that I am commen to this Empyre. This mutch I say (mayster) for that it were an vnnatural parte in thee not to affist me to beare that thing, which thou hafte holpen me to gayne and winne: and although that Vespafian was of nature a very good man, yet his greatest profite redounded to him by entertayning of the Philosopher Appolonius. For truelye it is a greater felicity for a Prince to chaunce vpon a good and faythfull man, to be neare about him, than to atchieue a large realme and kingdome. Thou sayest (Plutarch) that thou shalt receiue great contention, from henceforth, if I be such a one now as I was before, or at leſtwife if I be no worse. I belieue that which thou doest say, bicause the Emperour Nero, was the first fие yeares of hys empyre good, and the other nine yeares exceedingyng euill, in futch wyſe as he grew to be greater in wickedneſſe, than in dignyty. Notwithstanding, if thou thinke that as it chaunced vnto Nero, so may happen vnto Traiane, I besech the immortall Gods rather to deprive me of life, than to suffer me to raigne in Rome: for tyrantes bee they, whych procure dignytyes and promotyons, to vſe them for delighte and filthye luste: and good Rulers bee they which ſeeke them for profite of Common wealthe: and therfore to them whych before they came to thofe degrees were good, and afterwardes waxed Wycked, greater pity than enuye ought to be attributed, confideryng ſpecyally, that Fortune did not aduaunce them to honour, but to shame and villany: beleue me then (good maister) that fith hitherto I haue ben reputed vertuous, I wyl affay by God's affiance to aſpire to be better, rather than to be worſſe. And ſo the Gods preſerue thee.

*The Letter of the Emperour Traiane to the Senate of Rome, wherein  
is conteined, that honour ought rather to be deserued than pro-  
cured.*

COCEIUS Traiane Emperour of the Romanes, euer Augustus, to  
our sacred Senate health and consolation in the gods of comfort.  
We beinge aduertised here at Agrippina of the Deathe of the  
Emperour Nerua, your foueraigne Lord and my predecessor, and  
knowing it to be true, that you haue wept and bewailed the losse  
of a Prince so noble and ryghteous, we likewise haue felt like  
forow, for the death of so notable a father. When children lose  
a good father, and subiects a good Prynce, eyther they muste dye  
wyth them, or else by teares they must rayse them vp again, for  
so much as a good Prince in a common wealth is so rare, as the  
Phœnix in Arabia. My lord Nerua broughte me out of Spayne  
to Rome, nourished me vp in youth, caused mee to bee trained  
in letters and adopted me for his sonne in mine olde age: which  
graces and benefits truly I can not forget, knowyng that the in-  
grate man prouoketh the Gods to anger, and men to hatred. The  
death of a vertuous man is to be lamented of all men, but the  
death of a good Prince, ought to be extremely mourned: for if a  
common person die, there is but one dead, but if a god Prynce  
dye, together with him dieth a whole Realme. I speake this (O  
ye Fathers) for the rare vertues abounding in myne vncle Nerua:  
for if the gods were disposed to sell vs the liues of good Princes  
already departed, it were but a small ransome to redeeme them  
with teares: for what gold or syluer may be sufficient to buie the  
lyfe of a vertuous man. Truely there woulde be a greate masse  
of money gyuen by the Greekes for Alexander, by the Lacedemonians  
for Lycurgus, by the Romanes for Augustus, and by the  
Carthaginians for Annibal. But as you knewe the gods hauing  
made all thynges mortall, so haue they referued onely themselues  
to bee immortall. How eminent and passing the vertue of the  
good is, and what priuiledge the godly haue, it may easily bee  
knowne: for so mutch, as honour is carried euen to the very  
graues of the dead, but so it is not to the greate Palaces of the

wycked. The good and vertuous man, without fighte or knowledge we loue, serue, and aunswer for him: wherein the wycked we cannot beleue what he sayeth, and lesse accepte in good part the thyng whych he doeth for vs. Touchynge the election of the Empyre, it was done by Nerua, it was demaunded by the people, approued by you, and accepted by me. Wherefore I prayt the immortall Goddes that it may bee lyked of theyr godheads: for to small purpose auayleth the election of Prynces, if the gods doe not confyrme it: and therefore a man maye knowe hym whych is chosen by the Gods, from him that is elected by men, for the one shal declyne and fal, the other shalbe vpholden and preferued: the choyse of man so vaynely exalted doth bowe and abafe, but that which is planted by the gods, although it bee tostled to and fro wyth feuerall Wynds, and receiueth greate aduerſitye, and boweth a lyttle, yet the same shall never fal. Ye know right wel (most honorable Fathers) that I never demaunded the Empyre of Nerua my Soueraigne Lorde, although he broughte me vp and was his Nephew, hauing heard and wel remembryng of my Mayster Plutarch, that honour ought rather to bee deserued than procured. Notwithstanding I wyll not deny but ioyfull I was when my Lord Nerua sent me the enfigne of that greate and hygh dignite: and yet I wyll confesse that hauing begon to taſt the trauailes and cares which that imperiall ſtate bringeth, I did repente more then a Thousand times for taking vppon mee a charge ſo great: for Empire and gouernement is of ſutche quality that although the honor be mighty, yet the gouernour ſustaineth maniſtold paines and miſerable trauailes. O how greatly doth he bind himſelf, which by gouernment bindeth other! for if hee bee iuste they call hym cruell, if hee bee Pitifull, he is contempned, if liberall, he is eſteemed Prodigall, if he keepe or gather together he is counted couetous, if hee be peaceable and quiet, they deeme him for a coward, if he be couragious, he is reputed a quareller, if graue, they will ſay he is proude, if he be eaſie to be ſpoken to, hee is thought to be light or ſimple, if ſolitary, they will eſteeme him to be an hypocrite, and if he be ioyfull, they will terme hym diſſolute: In ſutche wife as they wil be contented, and vſe better termes to al others what ſo euer, than towardeſ him, which gouer-

neth a common wealth : for to futch a one they recken the morsels which he eateth, they measure his pases, they note his words, they take heede to his companies, and iudge of his works (many times wrongfully,) they examine and murmure of his pastimes, and attempt to Conie&tur hys Thoughtes: consider then the trauayles which bee in gouernement, and the enuy which many times they beare vnto him that ruleth. We may say, that there is no stafe more sure than that which is furthest of from Enuy. And if a man cannot but wyth great payne gourne the wyfe which hee hath chosen, the children which he hath begotten, nor the seruaunt which he hath brought vp, hauing them altogether in one house: how is it possible that he can still conserue in peace a whole commonwealth ? I praye you tell mee, in whom shall a poore Prince repose his trust, syth that many times hee is most flaunded by theym whom he fauoureth best ? Prynces and great Lordes cannot eate without a Garde, cannot sleepe without a watch, cannot speake without espiall, nor walke without some safetey, in futch wife as they being Lords of al, they be as it were, Prifoners of their owne people. And if we wil beholde somewhat neerely, and consider the seruitude of Princes, and the liberty of Subiectes, we shall finde that he which hath most to doe in the Realme, or beareth greatest swinge, is most subiect to Thralldome. So that if Prynces haue authority to geue liberty, they haue no meanes to be free themselues: the gods haue created vs so fre, and euery man desireth to haue hys liberty so mutch at wyll, that a man be he never so familiar a freende, or so neare of kin, we rather haue him to be our subiect, than our Lorde and mayster : one man alone commandeth all, and yet it seemeth to him but little: ought we then to marueile, if many be weary to obey one ? Wee loue and esteeme our selues so mutch, as I never saw any which of his owne good wil would be subiect, ne yet agaynst his will was made a Lord, a Principle by dayly experiance proued very true: for the quarrels and warres that be amongs men, are not so mutch for obedience sake, as for rule and commaundment. I say moreouer, that in drinking, eating, clothing, speaking, and louing, al men be of diuers qualities: but to get lyberty, they be all conformable. I haue spoken thus mutch (O Fathers conscript) vpon

occasion of mine owne Empire, which I haue taken with good will, albeit afterwards I was sory for the great charge. For the waltering Seas and troublesome gournement be two things agreeable to beholde, and daungerous to proue. Notwithstanding fith it hath pleased the Gods that I should be youre Lord, and you my subiects, I befeech you hartely to vse your obediance, as to your soueraygne lord, in that which shall be right and iust, and to aduertise me like a father, in things that shall seeme vnreasonable. The Consul Rutulus hath fayed much vnto mee in your behalfe, and hath saluted me for the people, hee himselfe shall bring aunswere and shal salute you al in my name. The Allobrogians and the inhabitaunts about the riuier Rhene, be at controuerſie for the limittes of their countrey, and haue prayed me to be their Arbitrator, which will stay me a little there. I require that this letter may be red within the Senate house, and manifested to the whole people. The Gods preferue you.

*An other Letter of the Emperour Traian to the Romayne Senate, contayning how gouerners of Common wealths ought to bee friendes rather to thos whych vſe traficke, than to them that gather and heape together.*

COCEIUS TRAIANE Emperour of the Romaynes to our holy senate health and consolation in the Gods of comfort. The affayres be so manyfolde, and businesſe so graue and weighty, which we haue to doe with diuers Countries, that scarce we haue tyme to eate, and space to take anye rest, the Romane Prynces hauing still by auncient custome both lacke of tyme, and commonly want of money. And bicause that they which haue charge of common wealths, to the vttermoſt of their power ought to be fryends to traficke of marchandise, and enimyes of heapyng treasure together, Prynces haue ſo many people to please, and ſo greate numbre of crauers, that if they keepe any thing for them, the ſame ſhall rather ſeeme a ſpice of theft than of prouidence. To take away an other man's goodes, truly is a wycked part: but if it bee per-

mitted to take Treasure, better it were to take it out of the Temples, than to defraude the people: for the one is consecrated to the immortall Gods, and the other to the pore commons. I speake this (right honorable fathers) to put you in remembraunce, and also to aduise you, that you take good heede to the goodes of the common wealth, howe they bee dyspended, howe gathered togerher, howe they bee kepte, and howe they be employed. For ye ought to vnderstand, that the goodes of the Common wealth be committed to you in trust, not to the ende yee shoulde enyoy them, but rather by good gouernement to vse them. We do heare that the Walles be ready to fal, the Towers be in decay, and the Temples in great ruine, wheroft we be not a lyttle offended, and you ought also to be ashamed, for so mutch as the damages and detryments of the Common wealth, we ought eyther to remedy, or else to lament. Ye haue wrytten vnto mee to know my pleasure, whether the censors, pretors, and ediles shoulde be yearlye chosen, and not perpetuall, as hitherto they haue bene: and specyally you say, that the state of the Dictators (which is the greatest and highest dignety in Rome) is onely but for fixe moneths. To that I aunswyer, that we are wel contented wyth that aduyse: for not wythout cause and iust reason our predeceffours dyd abolyshe the fyrt kynges of Rome, and ordayne, that the Consuls shoulde yearlye be chosen in the Common wealthe. Whych was done, in confyderation that hee whych had perpetuall gouernement, many tymes became insolente and proude. And therefore that the charges and offices of the Senate, shoulde be yearlye, to auoyde danger, which if they shoulde be perpetual there myght ensue great hurt and damage to the common wealth: for if the Officers beyng yerely chosen, be good, they may be continued: and if they bee euyll, they may be chaunged. And truely the officer, whych knoweth that vpon the end of euery yeare he must be chaunged and examined of his charge, he wyll take good heede to that whych he speakest, and first of all wil confider what he taketh in hand. The good Marcus Portius was the first that caused the Officers of the Romane Common Wealthe to bee thus visted and corrected. And bycause that these Almayne Warres doe styll increase, by reason that kyng Deceballe wyll not as yet bee brought to obedience of the

Romanes, but rather goeth about to occupy and winne the Kingdomes of Dacia and Polonia, I shall be forced through the busynesse of the wars, (so long continuing) to deuyse and consult here vpon the affayres touchyng the gourernement of the common wealth of Rome. For a lesse euyll it is for a Prynce to be negligent in matters of Warre, than in the gourernement of the Common Wealth. A Prynce also ought to think, that he is chosfen, not to make wars, but to gourerne, not to kyll the Enimies, but to roote out vices, not that he goe in person to inuade or defend his foes, but that he residre and be in the Common Wealth, and not to take away other men's goodes, but to do iustice in euery man, for so mutch as the Prynce in the warres can fight but for one, and in the publyke wealth he committeth faults against a numbre. Truly it liketh me wel, that from the degree of captaines men be aduaanced to bee emperors, but I think it not good, that emperours do descende to be captains, confidering that, that realm shal never be in quyet, where the Prince is to gret a warrior. This haue I spoken (fathers conscript) to the intent ye may beleue, that I for my parte if these warres of Almayne were to begin, I being at Rome, it wer impossible that I should be brought vnto the same, for that my principal intent, is to be esteemed rather a good gouerner of a common wealth, than a forward captain in the field: nowe then principally I commend vnto you the veneration of the temples, and honor of the gods, bicause kings never liue in surety, if the gods be not honored, and the temples serued. The last words which my good lord Nerua wrot vnto me were these: "Honour the Temples, feare the gods, mainteine Iustice in thy comonwealth and defend the pore: in so doing thou shalt not be forgotten of thy friend, nor vanquished by thy foe." I do greatly recommend vnto you the vertues of amity and fraternitie, for that you know how in great common wealthes, more hurt and damage do ciuile and neighborly wars bryng vnto the same, than those attempted by the enimies. If parents against parents, and neighbours against neighbours had not begon mutuall hatred and contention, never had Demetrius ouerthrownen the Rhodes, never had Alexander conquered Thyr, Marcellus Syracusa, Scipio Numantia. I recommend vnto you also the poore people, loue the orphane

and fatherlesse children, support and help the widowes, beware of quarrels and debates amongs you, and the causes of the helplesse fe that ye maintaine and defende: bicause the Gods dyd neuer wreake more cruell vengeance vpon any, than vpon those which dyd ill intreate and vse the poore and neady: and many times I haue heard my Lord Nerua say, that the gods neuer shewed them-selues so rygorous, as agaynst a mercilesse and vnpitifull people. Semblably, we pray you to be modest of woords, pacient to suffer, and ware in your forme of lyfe. For a great fault it is, and no lesse shame to a Gouerner, that he prayse the people of his com-mon wealth, and gyue them occasion to speake euill of him: and therefore they which haue charge of the common wealth, ought rather to repose trust in their workes, than in theyr woords, for so mutch as the Citizens or common people, do rather fixe theyr iudgement vpon that which they fee, than on that which they heare. I would wysh that (touching the assayres appertinent to the Senate) they might not know in you any sparke of ambicion, malice, deceipte, or enuy, to the intent that the iust men might not so mutch complain of the commaunding of the common wealth, as vpon the entertainment and profite of the same. The Empire of the Greeks putting theyr felicity in eloquence, and we in well doing. I speake this (ryght honorable Fathers) to Counsell and Exhorte ye, that when ye be assembled in Senate, ye do not consume tyme in dysputing and holding opinions for the verification of any thynge. For if you will judge wythout parciality and affection without great disputation, ye may come to reason. I do remember that being at a lesson of Appolonius Thianeus, I heard him say that it was not so expedient that Senators and Emperors should be skilful and wyse, as if they suffred them-selues to bee gouerned by those that were of great experience and knowledg: and verely he said truth: for by that meanes he prohibited and forbad them, not to arrest and stand vpon their owne opinion, whereof they ought to be many times suspicuous. Lykewyse we recommend vnto you the censores, who haue charge of Iudgement, and the Tribunes, whose office is to attende the affrayes of Common Wealthe, that they bee wyse and learned in the Lawes, expert in the Customes, prouident in Iudgements, and

ware in theyr trade of lyfe : for I say vnto you, that a wyse man is more availeable in gouernement of a common wealth, than a man of ouermutch skyll and expyrience. The forme then whych ye shal obserue in matters of Iudgement shall be thus: that in ciuile proesse you keepe the law, and in criminall causes to moderate the same, bicaufe haynous, cruell, and rigorous lawes be rather made to amaze and feare, than to be obserued and kept. When you gine any sentence, ye ought to consider the age of the offendaut, when, how, wherefore, with whome, in whose prefence, in what time, and how longe ago, forsomutch as euery of these thyngs may eyther excuse or condempne: whych you ought to beare and vse towards them in lyke sort as the gods towards vs, who gine vs better helpe and succoure and correct vs leſſe than we deserue. That confideration the Judges ought to haue, bycause the offenders doe rather trespassē the Gods than men: if then they be forgiuen of the gods for offences whych they commit, reason it is that we pardon faultes don by thosē rather then by our selues. In like maner we commaund you, that if your enimies do you any anoiance or iniury, not incontinently to take reuenge, but rather to diffemble the same, bicause many wrongs be don in the world, which were better to be diffembled than reuenged. Wherin ye shal haue like regard, touching offices in the Senate and Common Wealth, that they be not giuen to ambitious or couetous persons: for there is no Beaste in the World so pestiferous and Venomous, to the Common Wealth, as the Ambitious in commaunding, and the couetous in gathering togither. Other things we let passe for this tyme, vntil we haue intelligence howe these our commaundements be fulfilled. This Letter shal be red in the chyefest place within the Senate, and afterwards pronounced to the people, that they may both know what yee commandē, and see also what ye doe. The Gods keepe you, whome we pray to preferue our mother the City of Rome, and to fende vs good successe in these our Warres.

*A notable Letter sent from the Romane Senate to the Emperour Traiane, where in is declared how sometimes the region of Spayne did furnish Rome wyth golde from their Mines, and now do adorne and garnish the same with Emperours to governe their Common wealth.*

THE sacred Romane Senate, to thee the great Cocceius Traiane new Emperour Augustus, health in thy gods and ours, graces euerlastyng wee render to the immortall Gods, for that thou art in health, which wee defyre and pray may be perpetual. We signified vnto thy maiesty the death of Nerua Cocceius, our soueraigne Lord, and thy predecessor, a man of sincere lyfe, a fryend of his Common Wealth, and a zealous louer of Iustice, wherein also we aduertised, that like as Rome did weepe for the cruell lyfe of Domitian, so mutch the more bitterly doth she bewayle the death of thine vncle Nerua, whose councel (although hee was very olde and diseased) which he gaue vs lyng on his Bedde, we loued better, and imbraced with greater conforte, than all the enterpryfes and deedes don by his predecessors, when they were in health and lusty: and besides the ordinary mourning vsed to bee done in Rome for Prynces, wee haue caused all recreation and pastime to cease, so wel in the common wealth as with euery of vs particularly. We haue shut vp the Temples and made the Senate vnderstand, how displeasantly we accept the death of good men. The good old gentleman Nerua dyed in hys house, and was buried in the fielde of Mars: he died in debte, and we haue payd hys debtes: he dyed callyng vppon the Gods, and we haue canonized him amoungs theyr numbre, and that which is most to be noted, hee died commendng vnto vs the common wealth, and the Common wealth recommending it self vnto him: and a little before his latter gaspe, to the principall of the holy Senate, and many other of the people, standing about his bedfide, he sayde: "O ye fathers, I committe vnto you the common wealth and my selfe also vnto the Gods: vnto whom I render infinite thankes, bicause they haue taken from me my children, to bee mine heires and haue lefte mee Traiane to succede." You do remembre (most

dread soueraign lord) that the good Empereour Nerua had other succeffours than your maiesty, of nearer alyance, of greater frendship more bound by seruice, and of greater prooфе in warfare: notwithstandingyng amongs other noble personages, vpon you alone he cast his eyes, reposinge in you such opinyon and confidence, as to reuiue the prowes and valyaunt facts of the good Emperor Augustus, he suppressed in oblivion the insolent facts of Domitian. When Nerua came vnto the Crowne, he found the treasure pilled, the Senate in diffentyon, the people in commotion, Iustice not obserued, and the Common wealth ouerthrownen: which you likewyse presentlye shall finde, although otherwyse quiet and wholy reformed: wherfore we shalbe right glad, that you conferue the Common wealth in the state wherin your vncle Nerua left it, confideryng specially that new Prynces vnder colour to introduce new customs, do ouerthrow their common Wealths: fourtene Prynces your predecessours in the Empyre were naturally borne in Rome, and you are the firste straunger Prince. Wherefore we pray the immortall Gods, (sith that the stocke of our auncient Cæfars is dead) to send thee good Fortune. Out of the countrey of Spaine was wont to come to this our Romane city great abundance of gold, siluer, steele, leade, and tinne, from theyr mines: but now in place thereof, she giueth vs Emperours to gouern our common wealths: sith then that thou commest of so good a countrey as Spayne is, from so good a Prouince as is Vandolosia, and from so excellent a citty as Cales is, of so noble and fortunate a Linage as is Cocceius, and aduaunced to so noble an Empire, it is to be supposed that thou wilt proue good and not euil: for the Gods immortall many times do take away their graces from vngratefull men: moreouer (most excellent prince) sith you wrote vnto vs the maner and order what we ought to doe: reason it is that we write to you agayne what you ought to foresee: and sith you haue tolde vs, and taught vs to obey you, meete it is that we may know what your pleasure is to commaunde: for that (it may come to passe) that as you haue bene brought vp in Spayne, and of longe time bene absent from Rome, through followinge the Warres, that not knowing the lawes whereunto we are sworn, and the customes which we haue in Rome, yee commaunde some thinge

that may redound to our damage, and to your dishonor: and therefore we accoumpt it reason that your Maiesty bee aduertised hereof, and the same preuented, for so much as Princes often-times be negligent of many things, not for that they wil not foresee the same, but rather for want of one that dare tell them what they ought to doe: and therefore we humbly beseech your most excellent maiesty, to extende and shewe forth your wisedome and prudence, for that the Romanes hearts bene drawen and made pliant rather by fauourable diligence, than by prouoked force. Touchinge the vertue, Iustice, may it please you to remembre the same: for your olde vncle Nerua was wont to say, that a Prince for all his magnanimitie, valiaunce, and felicity, if he do not vse and maintayne Iustice, ought not for any other merite to be praysed and commended. Semblably we make our humble Petition, that those commaundements which you shal send and require to be put in execution, be thoroughly establisched and obserued: for the goodnesse of the lawe doth not consist in the ordinaunce, but in the fulfilling and accomplischemet of the same: wee will not also omit to say vnto you (most famous Prince) that you must haue pacience to suffer the importunate, and to dissemble with the offenders: for that it is the deede of a Prince to chastise and punishe the wrongs done in a common wealth, and to pardon the disobedience done vnto him. You send vs word by your letters that you wil not come to Rome, vntyll you haue finished the Germaine Warres: whych seemeth vnto vs to be the determination of a vertuous and right noble Emperour, for so mucht as good Princes such as you be, oughte not to desire and chose places of delite and recreation, but rather to seke and win renowne and fame. You commaunde vs also to haue regarde to the veneration of the Temples, and to the seruice of the Gods: whych request is iuste, but very iuste it were and meete that your selfe should doe the same: for our seruice would little preuaile, if you should displease them. You wil vs also one to loue an other, whych is the counsel of a holy and peaceable Prince: but know ye that wee shal not be able to doe the same, if you wil not loue and intreat vs all in equall and indifferent forte: for Prynches chearyfinghe and louing some aboue the rest, do raife flanders

and grudges amongs the people: you likewise recommend vnto vs, the poore and the widowes: wherin we thinke that you ought to commaund the Collecters of your Tributes, that they do not grieue, when they gather your ryghtes and customes: for greater finne it is to spoyle and pill the needy fort, than meritorious to succour and relieue them. Likewise you do persuade vs to be quiet and circumspet in our affayres, which is a persuasione remblyng the nature of a worthye Prynce and also of a pitifull father. In semblable maner you require vs not to be opinionatife and wilfull in the Senate, ne affectionate to self wil whych shal be done accordingly as you commaund, and accept it as you say: but therwithall you ought to think that in graue and wayghty matters, the more depely things be debated, the better they shall be prouided and decreed: you bid vs also to beware, the Censores be honest of lyfe and rightful in doing iustice: to that we aunswere, that in the same we will haue good respect, but it is expedient that you take hede to them whom you shal name and appoint to those offices: for if you do chose such as they ought to be, no cause shal rise to reprehend them. Item wher you say, that we ought to take hede, that our children committe no offences to the people, wherein the aduise of the senate is, that you do draw them awaye from vs, and cal them to the Almayne warres, for as you do knowe (right fourain prince) that when the publicke welth is exempt, and voyd of enimies, then the same wil begin to bee replenyshed wyth youthfull vices. Notwithstanding when the warres bee farre of from Rome, then the same to them is profitable, bicause there is nothing which better cleanseth common wealths from wicked people, than warres in straunge Countries. Concernyng other things which you write vnto vs nedefull it is not now to recite them, but only to see them kept: for truely they feeme rather to be the lawes of God Apollo him selfe, than counsels of a Mortall man. The gods preferue your Maiesfty, and graunt you good succeſſe in those your warres.

Theſe Letters and Epiftles, although beſides the Scope and Nature of a Nouell, yet ſo worthy to be read and practyſed, as no History or other mortall Precepte more: exprefſing the great care of a mai-

ter towards his scholler, that he should proue no worse being an emperor, than he shewed hymselfe diligent when he was a Scholer: fearing that if he should gourne contrary to his expectation, or degenerate from the good institution, whych in hys yong yeares hee imbraced, that the blame and flaunder should rest in hymselfe: that was his tutor and bringer vp. O careful Plutarch, O most happy maister, as well for thine owne industry, as for the good succeſſe of ſuch a Scholer: and O most fortunate and vertuous Emperor, that could ſo wel brooke and diſteſt the bliſſed perſuasions of ſutche a maister, whose mind wyth the blaſt of promotion, was not ſo fwolne and puffed, but that it vouchſafed to cal him father and maister, ſtil crauing for in iſtigation of reprooſe, when he ſlid or ſlypped from the path of reaſon and dueuty. And happy Counſel and Senate that could ſo wel like and praettyſe the documents of ſuch an Emperour.

## THE THIRTEENTH NOUELL.

*A notable History of three amorous Gentlewomen, called Lamia, Flora, and Lais: conteyning the futes of noble Princes and other great Personages made unto them, with their answeres to diuers demaundes: and the manner of their death and funerals.*

LEAUYNGE now our morall discourse of a carefull Mayster, of a prouydent Scholer, of a vertuous Emperoure, of a sacred Senate, and vniforme magistery, returne we to the setting forth and description of three arrant honest Women, which for lewdnesse wer famous, and for wicked Lyfe worthy to be noted with a blacke coale, or rather their memory raked in the Dust and Cinders of their Corpses vnpure. But as all histories be ful of lessons of vertue and vice, as Bookes, sacred and prophane, describe the liues of good and bad for example sake, to yelde meanes to the posterity, to ensue the one and eschue the other, so haue I thought to intermingle amongst these Nouels the feuerall sortes of either, that ech Sexe and Kinde may pike out like the Bee, of ech Floure, Honny, to store and furnishe with delights their well disposed myndes. I purpose, then, to vnlace the dissolute lyues of three Amorouse Dames, that with their graces allured the greatest Princes that euer were: enticed the noble men, and sometimes procured the wiest and best learned to craue their acquaintance, as by the sequele hereof shall well appeare. These three famous Women, (as Writers do witnesse) were furnished with many goodly graces and giftes of nature: that is to say, great beautye of face, goodly proporcion of body, large and high foreheads, theyr breastes placed in comely order, smal waisted, fayre handes of passing cunning to play vpon Instruments, a heauenly voice to fayne and fing: briefly, their qualities and beauty were more famous than euer any that were born within the Countries of Afia and Europa. They were neuer beloued of Prince that did forfake them, nor yet they made request of any thing which was denied them: they neuer mocked or flowted man (a thing rare in women of theyr condition) ne yet were mocked of any: but theyr specyal propreties wer to allure men to

loue them : Lamia wylth hir pleasaunt loke and eye, Flora with hir eloquent tongue, and Lais wylth the grace and sweetenesse of hir singing voyce : a straunge thinge that he which once was surpryfed wylth the loue of any of those three, eyther to late or neuer was delyuered of the same. They were the richeſt courtizans that euer lyued in the worlde, ſo long as theyr life did laſt, and after theyr deceaſe, great monumentes were erected for theyr remembraunce, in place where they died. The moſt auncient of theſe three Amorous dames was Lamia, who was in the tyme of King Antigonus, that warfared in the ſeruice of Alexander the Great, a valyant gentleman, althoſh not fauored by Fortune. Thys kynge Antigonus left behynde hym a ſonne and heyre called Demetrius, who was leſſe valyaunt, but more fortunate than his father, and had bene a Prynce of greate estimation, if in hys youthe hee had acqyred frendes, and kept the fame, and in hys age had not ben gyuen to ſo many vices. Thys King Demetrius was in loue with Lamia, and preſented hir wylth rich giftes and rewardes, and loued hir ſo affectionately, and in futch fort, as in the loue of his Lamia he ſemed rather a foile than a true louer : for, forgetting the grauity and authoritye of his perſon, hee dyd not onelye gyue hir all ſuch things as ſhe demaunded, but beſides that hee vſed no more the company of his wyfe Euxonia. On a tyme Kyng Demetrius aſking Lamia what was the thing wherewylth a woman was ſoneſt wonne ? “There is nothing,” anſwered ſhee, “whych ſooner ouercommeth a Woman, than when ſhe ſeeth a man to loue hir with al hys hart, and to ſufteyne for hir fake greate paynes and paſſyons wylth long continuance and entier affection, for to love men by colluſion, cauſeth afterwards that they be mocked.” Agayn, Demetrius aſked hir further : “Tell me, Lamia, why doe diuerſe Women rather hate than loue men ?” Whereunto ſhee anſwered : “The greateſt cauſe why a Woman doth hate a man, is, when the man doth vaunt and boaſt himſelfe of that which he doth not, and per- formeth not the thing which he promifeth.” Demetrius demaunded of her : “Tell me, Lamia, what is the thing wherewith men doe content you beſt ?”—“When wee ſee him,” ſayde ſhee, “to be dyscrete in wordes, and ſecrete in his dedes.” Demetrius aſked hir further : “Tell me, Lamia, how chaunceth it that men

be ill matched?" "Bycause," answered Lamia, "it is impossible that they be well maryed, when the wife is in neede, and the husbande vndiscrete." Demetrius asked hir what was the cause that amitye betwene two louers was broken? "There is nothing," answered she, "that soner maketh colde the loue betwene two louers, than when one of them doth straye in loue, and the Woman louer to importunate to craue." He demaunded further: "Tell me, Lamia, what is the thinge that mooste tormenteth the louing man?" "Not to attayne the thing which he desireth," answered she, "and thinketh to lose the thing whych he hopeth to enioy." Demetrius yet once agayne asked hir thys question: "What is that, Lamia, which most troubleth a Woman's hart?" "There is nothing," answered Lamia, "wherwith a woman is more grieved, and maketh hir more sad, than to be called ill fauored, or that she hath no good grace, or to vnderstand that she is dissolute of lyfe." This lady Lamia was of iudgement delicate and subtyll, although il imployed in hir, and thereby made al the world in loue with hir, and drew al men to hir through hir fayre speach. Now, before she lost the heart of Kyng Demetrius, shee haunted of long time the vniversities of Athenes, where she gayned great store of money, and brought to destrucyon many young men. Plutarch, in the lyfe of Demetrius, saith, That the Atheniens hauing presented vnto him xii. c. talents of money for a subfide to pay his men of warre, he gaue al that summe to his woman Lamia: by meanes whereof the Atheniens grudged, and were offended wyth the kyng, not for the losse of their gift, but for that it was so euil employed. When the King Demetrius would affiure any thyng by oth, hee swore not by his gods, ne yet by his predecessors, but in this fort: "As I may be styll in the grace of my lady Lamia, and as hir lyfe and mine may ende together, so true is this which I say and do, in this and thys fort." One yere and two Moneths before the Death of King Demetrius, his frend Lamia died, who forowd so mucht hir death, as for the absence and death of hir, he caused the Phylosophers of Athens to entre in this Disputation, Whether the teares and forow whiche he shed and toke for her sake, were more to be estemed than the riches which he spent in her obsequies and funerall pompes. This Amorous gentlewoman Lamia, was borne

in Argos, a City of Peloponnesus, besides Athenes, of base parentage, who in hir first yeares haunted the countrey of Asia Maior, of very wyld and dissolute lyfe, and in the ende came into Phænicia. And when the Kyng Demetrius had caused hir to be buried beofore hys chamber-window, hys chiefest frendes asked him, wherefore hee had entoomed hir in that place? his aunswere was this: "I loued hir so wel, and she likewyse me so hartyly, as I know not which way to satissie the loue which she bare me, and the duety I haue to loue her agayne, if not to put hir in such place as myne eyes maye wepe every day and mine hart still lament." Truely this loue was straung, which so mighty a Monarch as Demetrius was, did beare vnto such a notable curtizan, a woman vtterly void of grāce, barren of good workes, and without any zeale or spark of vertue, as it should appeare. But sith we read and know that none are more giuen or bent to vnreasonable loue, than mighty Princes, what shoulde it bee demed straung and maruellous, if Demetrius amongs the rest do come in place for the loue of that most famous woman, if Fame may stretch to eyther sorts, both good and euill? But let vs come to the seconde infamous gentlewoman, called Lais. She was of the isle of Bithritos, which is in the confines of Græcia, and was the daughter of the great Sacrificer of Apollo his temple at Delphos, a man greatly experienced in the magike art, wherby he prophecyed the perdition of his daughter. Now this amorous Lias was in triumph in the time of the renoumed King Pyrrhus, a Prince very ambitious to acquire honor, but not very happy to keepe it, who being yonge of fifteene or feuentene yeares, came into Italy to make warres against the Romains: he was the first (as some say) that aranged a camp in ordre, and made the Phalanx, the mayne square and battell: for before hys time, when they came to entre battell, they assailed confusedly and out of array gaue the onset. This amorous Lias continued long time in the campe of Kynge Pyrrhus, and went wyth hym into Italy, and wyth him retourned from warre agayne, and yet hir nature was futch, as shee woulde neuer bee mainteined wyth one man alone. The same Lias was so amorous in her conuersatyon, so excellent fayre, and of so comely grāce, that if shee would haue kept hir selfe faythfull to one Lorde or gentleman, there

was no prynce in the world but if he would haue yelded himselfe and all that he had at hir commaundement. Lias, from hir retourne out of Italy into Greece, repayred to the citye of Corinth, to make hir abode there, where she was pursued by many kings, lordes, and prynces. Aulus Gellius saith (which I haue recited in my former part of the Pallace of pleasure, the fiftenth Noeuill,) that the good Philosopher, Demosthenes, went from Athens to Corinth, in disguised apparell, to see Lais, and to haue hir company, But before the dore was opened, she sent one to demaunde .xi. C. Sestercios of siluer: whereunto Demosthenes answered: "I buy not repentance so deere." And I beleue that Demosthenes spake those wordes by folowing the sentence of Diogenes, who sayeth, that euerie beast after such acte is heauy and fad. Som wryters affirme of this Amorous Lais, that thing whych I neuer reade or hearde of Woman: whych is, that shee neuer shewed signe or token of loue to that man whych was desyrous to doe her seruice: nor was neuer hated of man that knew her. Whereby we may comprehend the happe and fortune of that amorous Woman. Shee neuer shewed semblance of great loue to any person, and yet shee was beloued of all. If the amorous Lamia had a good Spirite and mynde, Lais truely had no leſſe. For in the art of loue shee exceeded all other women of hir detestable Arte and Scyence, as well in Knowledge of Loue as to profite in the same. Vpon a Daye a Younge Man of Corinth demaunding of hir, what hee shoulde say to a Woman whome hee long tyme had loued, and made so greate fute, that thereby he was like to fal into dispayre. "Thou shalt say," (sayd Lais) "vnto hir, that fith she wyl not graunt thy request, yet at least wylle it myght please hir to suffer thee to bee hir seruant, and that shee would take in good parte the Seruice that thou shalt doe vnto hir. Whych requeste if shee doe graunte, then hope to attayne the ende of thy attempte, bycause wee Women bee of such nature, as opening our mouthes to gyue some mylde and pleasant answere to the amorous person, it is to bee thoughte that wee haue gyuen our heart vnto hym." An other Daye, in the presence of Lias, one prayed the Phylosophers of Athens, saying, that they were very honest personages, and of great learnynge. Whereunto Lais aunswered: "I can not tell what great knowledg they haue, nor what science

they studye, ne yet what bookes youre Philosophers doe reade, but thys I am sure, that to me beyng a woman and neuer was at Athenes, I see them repayre, and of Philosophers beecome amorous persons." A Theban knighte demaunded of Lais, what he might doe to enjoy a ladye wyth whose loue hee should bee surprised: Shee aunswered thus. "A man that is desirous of a woman, must folow his sute, serue hir, and suffer hir and somtymes to feeme as though he had forgotten hir. For after that a womans heart is moued to loue, she regardeth more the forgetfulnesse and negligence vsed towards hir, than she doth the seruice done before." An other Gentleman of Achaia asked hir what he shoulde doe to a woman, whom he suspected that shee had falsified hir fayth Lais aunswered, "make hir beleue that thou thinkest she is very faythful and take from hir the occasions wherby shee hath good cause to be vnfaythful: For if she do perceiue that thou knowest it, and dissemblest the matter, she wyll sooner dye than amende." A gentleman of Palestine at another time inquired of hir what hee should doe to a Woman whynch he serued, and did not esteeme the seruyce done vnto hir, ne yet gaue him thankes for the loue which hee bare hir. Lais fayed vnto him: "If thou be disposed to serue hir no longer, let hir not perceiue that thou haft gyuen hir ouer. For naturally we women be tendre in loue, and hard in hatred." Beyng demaunded by one of hir Neyghbours what shee shoulde doe to make hir Daughter very wyse. "Shee" (fayde Lais) "that wyll haue hir Daughter to bee good and honest, must from her youth learne hir to feare, and in going abrode to haunte little company, and that she be shamefast and moderate in hir talke." An other of hir neighbors inquyryng of hir what shee myght doe to hir daughter whynch began to haue delyght to rome in the fieldes and wander abroade. "The remedy" (fayde Lais) "that I finde for your daughter disposed to that condition, is, not to suffer hir to be ydle, ne yet to be braue and sumptuous in apparel." This amorous gentlewoman Lais, dyed in the Citye of Corinth, of the age of .lxxii. Yeares, whose death was of many matrones desired and of a great numbre of amorous persones lamented. The thyrd amorous gentlewoman was called Flora, which was not so auncient, ne yet of so greate renoume as Lamia and Lais

were, whose country also was not so famous, For she was of Italy, and the other two of Grecia, and although that Lamia and Lais exceded Flora in antiquity, yet Flora surmounted them in lineage and generositie. For Flora was of noble house, although in life lesse than chaft. She was of the country of Nola in Campania, issued of certayne Romans, Knights very famous in facts of Armes and of great industrie and gournement in the common wealth. When the Father and mother of this Flora deceaseth, she was of the age of xv. yeares, indued with great riches and singular beauty, and the very orphane of all hir kynne. For shee had neyther brother lefte wyth whom shee myght sojourne, ne yet vncle to gyue her good counsell. In such wyse that lyke as this young maistres Flora had youthe, riches, lyberty and beauty, even so there wanted neyther baudes nor Pandores to entyce hir to fal, and allure hir to folly. Flora seeing hir self beset in this wife, she determined to goe into the Affrick warres, where she hazarded both in hir person and hir honor. This dame florished and tryumphed in the tyme of the firste Punique warres, when the Consul Mamillus was sent to Carthage, who dispended more Money vpon the loue of Flora, than hee did vpon the chase and purfute of his enimies. This amorous lady Flora had a writyng and tytle fixed vpon hir gate, the effect wherof was this: *King, Prince, Dictator, Consul, Censor, high Bishop, and Questor may knocke and come in.* In that writyng Flora named neither emperor nor Cæsar, bycause those two most Noble names were long tyme after created by the Romanes. Thys Amorous Flora woulde neuer abandon hir Person, but wyth Gentlemen of Noble House, or of greate Dignytye and Ryches. For shee was wonte to say that a Woman of passinge Beauty shoulde be so mutch esteemed as shee doth esteeme and fette by hir selfe. Lias and Flora were of contrary maners and conditions. For Lias would first bee payde, before shee yelded the vse of hir bodye: but Flora wythout any semblance of desire eyther of golde or siluer was contented to bee ruled by those with whom shee committed the facte. Wherof vpon a day being demaunded the question, she answered: "I gyue my body to prynces and noble Barons, that they may deale with mee lyke Gentlemen. For I

fweare vnto you by the Goddesse Venus, that nener man gaue me so little, but that I had more than I looked for, and the double of that which I could demaund.” This Amorous lady Flora was wont many times to faye, that a wife woman (or more aptly to terme her a subtyll Wench) oughte not to demaund reward of her louer for the acceptable pleasure which she doth hym but rather for the loue whych she beareth him, bycause that al thinges in the world haue a certayn prycy, except loue, which cannot bee payde or recompenced but wyth loue. All the Ambassadours of the worlde, whych had acceſſe into Italy, made ſo greate reporte of the Beauty and Generofſtie of Flora, as they dyd of the Romane common wealth, bycause it ſeemed to bee a Monſtrous thynge to ſee the Ryches of hir houſe, hir trayne, hir beauty the princes and great lordes by whom ſhe was required, and the preſents and giftes that were gynen vnto hir. This Amorous Flora had a continual regard to the noble houſe whereof ſhee came touchyng the magnyficeſce and ſtate of her feruycce. For albeit that ſhe was but a common woman, yet ſhe was ferued and honored lyke a great lady. That day wherein ſhe rode about the city of Rome, ſhe gaue occaſion to be ſpoken of a whole month after, one inquirynge of an other what great Romaine lordes they were that kepte her company? Whose men they were that waigted vpon her? And whose liuery they ware. What Ladies they wer that rode in her trayne. The brauery of hir apparell, hir great beauty and port, and the wordes ſpoken by the amorous gentlemen in that troupe were not vnremembred. When this maiftres Flora waxed old, a yong and beaſtfull gentleman of Corinth, demaunded her to wyfe, to whom ſhe anſwered: “I know well that thou wilt not marie, the three ſcore yeares whych Flora hath, but rather thou defireſt to haue the twelue hundred thouſand Seftercios which ſhe hath in hir Coffres. Content thy ſelfe therefore, my frende, and get thee home agayne to Corinth from whence thou comest. For to ſutche as be of myne age great honor is borne, and reuerence done for the riches and wealth they haue, rather than for mariage.” There was nener in the Romane Empyre, the lyke amorous woman that Flora was, indued wyth ſo many graces and Queenelyke

qualities, for shee was of noble house, of singuler beauty, of comely personage, discrete in hir affayres, and besides al other comly qualyties, very lyberall. This maistres Flora spent the most part of hir youth in Affrica, Almayne and Gallia Transalpina. And albeit that shee would not suffre anye other but great lords to haue posseffion of hir body, yet shee applyed hir selfe to the spoile of those that were in place, and to the praye of those that came from the warres. This amorous Flora died when shee was of the age of LXXV. yeares. Shee left for the principal heire of all hir goods and Iuells. the Romaine people, which was estemed sufficient and able to make newe the Walles of Rome, and to raunsome and redeme the common Wealth of the same. And bycause that shee was a Romaine, and had made the state therefore hir heyre, the Romaines builded in hir honor a sumptuous Temple, whych in memorye of Fora was called Florianum: and euery yeare in the memorye of hir, they celebrated hir feast vpon the day of hir death: Suetonius Tranquillus fayeth, that the first feaste which the Emperour Galba the second celebrated wyth in Rome, was the feast of the amorous Flora, vpon whych daye it was lawful for men and women, to doe what kynd of dishonesty they could deuise. And shee was estemed to be the greater faint which that day shewed her selfe mooste dissolute and wanton. And bicause that the temple Florianum, was dedycated to amorous Flora, the Romanes had an opinion, that al women which vpon the same day repayred to the Temple in whorish apparell, should haue the graces and giftes that Flora had. These were the fond opinions and maners of the auncient, which after their owne makinge and deuises framed Gods and Goddeffes, and bycause shee proued vnshamefast and rich, a Temple must bee erected, and Sacrifices ordayned for hir Whorish triumphes. But that noble men and Kings haue bene rapt and transported with the lurements of sutch notorious strumpets, is and bath bene common in all ages. And commonly sutch infamous women be indewed with greatest gifts and graces, the rather to noosell and dandle their fauorers in the laps of their fadinge pleasures. But euery of them a most speciall grace, aboue the rest. As of a Kyng not long agoe we reade, that kept

three, one the holiest, another the craftiest, and the third the  
meriest. Two of which properties meete for honest Women:  
although the third so incident to that kinde as heat to a liuinge  
body. Cease wee then of this kynde, and let vs step forth to be  
acquaynted with a lady and a Queene the Godlyest  
and stoutest, that is remembred in any  
auncient Monument or  
Hystory.

## THE FOURTEENTH NOUELL.

*The lyfe and giftes of the most Famous Queene Zenobia with the letters of the Emperour Aurelianvs to the sayde Queene, and her stoute aunsweare thereunto.*

ZENOBLA Queene of Palmyres, was a right famous Gentlewoman, as diuerse Hystoriographers largely do report and write. Who although shee was no Christian Lady, yet so worthy of Imitation, as she was for hir vertues and heroycall factes of Immortall prayse. By hir wysedome and stoutnesse she subdued all the empire of the Orient, and refisted the inuincible Romans. And for that it is meete and requisite to alleage and aduouch reasongs by weight, and words by measure, I wil orderly begin to recite the History of that most famous Queene. Wherefore I say, that about the .284. Olimpiade, no long tyme after the death of the vnhappy Emperour Decius, Valerian was chosen Emperour by the Senate, and (as Trebellius Pollio his Hystorian doth describe) he was a well learned prince, indued with manyfold vertues, that for his speciall prayse, these wordes be recorded of him. *If all the World had bene affembled to chose a good Prince, they would not haue chosen any other but good Valerian.* It is also written of hym, that in liberality he was noble, in words true, in talke wary, in promise constant, to his frends familiar, and to his enemies seuere, and which is more to be esteemed, he could not forget seruice, nor yet reuenge wronge. It came to passe that in the xiv. yeare of his raygne, there rose futch cruell Warres in Asia, that forced he was to go thither in his owne person, to refist Sapor king of the Persians, a very valyaunt man of Warre and fortunate in his enterpryses, which happinesse of hys not long time after the arryuall of Valerian into Asia, hee manifested and shewed. For beeyng betwene them such hot and cruell warres, in a skymish, throughe the greate faulfe of the General, (which had the conduct of the armye) the Emperour Valerian was taken, and brought into the puissance of King Sapor hys ennemy, whych cursed tyrant so wickedlye vfed that victory, as hee woulde by no meanes put the

Emperour to raunsome, towards whom hee vsed such cruelty, that so oft and so many tymes, as hee was disposed to gette vp on horsebacke hee vsed the body of olde Valerian to serue hym for aduaantage, setting his feete vpon the throate of that aged gentleman. In that myserable office and vnhappy captiuitie serued and dyed the good Emperour Valerian, not wyth oute the greate forrowe of them that knew him, and the rueful compaßion of those that fawe him, which the Romans considering, and that neither by offre of gold, or siluer, or other meanes, they were able to redeeme Valerian, they determined to choose for Emperour his owne sonne called Galienus: which they did more for respect of the father, than for any minde or corage they knew to bee in the sonne. Who afterwardes shewed himselfe to bee farre different from the conditions of his father Valerian, being in his enterpris a cowarde, in his promisſes a lyer, in correſtion cruell, towards them that serued him vnthanckfull, (and which is worse,) hee gaue himselfe to his desires, and yealded place to ſenſuality. By meanes wheroſt, in his tyme the Romain Empyre more than in any others raygne, loft moſt prouinces and receiued greatest shame. In factes of warre he was a cowarde, and in gouernement of common wealth, a very weake and feeble man. Galienus not caryng for the ſtate of the Empire, became ſo myſerable as the Gouernors of the ſame gaue ouer their obedience, and in the tyme of hys raygne, there roſe vp thyrty tyrants, whych vſurped the ſame. Whoſe names doe followe, Cyriades, Posthumus the yonger, Lollius, Victorinus, Marius, Ingenuus, Regillianus, Aureolus, Ma-crianus, Machianus the younger, Quietus, Odenatus, Herodes, Mœnius Ballista, Valens, Pifo Emilianus, Staturius, Tetricus, Etricus the younger, Trebelianus, Heremianus, Timolaus, Celsus, Titus, Cenforinus, Claudius, Aurelius, and Quintillus, of whom xviii, were captaynes and ſeruiters vnder the good Emperour Valerian. Sutch delight had the Romanes, in that auncient world, to haue good Captaynes, as were able to bee preferred to be Emperours. Nowe in that tyme the Romanes had for their Captayne generall, a knight called Odenatus, the Prynce of Palmerines, a man truely of great vertue, and of paſſinge induſtry and hardineſſe in factes of warre. This Captayne Odenatus maried a

woman that descended of the auncient linage of the Ptolomes, ometymes Kinges of Ægypt, named Zenobia, which (if the historians do not deceiue vs) was one of the most famous Women of the Worlde. Shee had the heart of Alexander the great, shee possessed the riches of Cræsus, the diligence of Pyrrhus, the trauel of Hannibal, the warie foresighte of Marcellus, and the Iustice of Traiane. When Zenobia was married to Odenatus, she had by hir other husband, a sonne called Herodes, and by Odenatus shee had two other, whereof the one was called Hyeronianus, and the other Ptolemus. And when the Emperour Valerian was vanquyshed and taken, Odenatus was not then in the Campe. For as all men thought, if he had ben there, they had not receyued so greate an ouerthrow. So sone as good Odenatus was aduertized of the defaict of Valerian, in great haste he marched to the Roman Campe, that then was in great disorder. Whych with greate diligence hee reassembled, and reduced the same to order, and (holpen by good Fortune,) wythin xxx. Dayes after hee recouered all that whych Valerian had loste, makynge the Persian kyng to flee, by meanes whereof, and for that Odenatus had taken charge of the army, hee wanne amonges the Romanes great reputation, and truely not with out caufe: For if in that good time he had not receyued the charge the name and glory of the Romanes had taken ende in Asia. Duryng all thys tyme Galienus, lyued in hys delyghtes at Myllan, wythout care or thoughte of the Common wealth, consumynge in his wylfull vices, the Money that was leuied for the men of war. Whych was the cause that the gouernours of the prouinces, and Captens general, feing him to be so vicious and neglygent, vsurped the prouinces and armies which they had in charge. Galienus voyde of all obedience sauing of the Italians and Lombards, the first that rose vp against him were Posthumus in Fraunce, Lollians in Spayne, Victorinus in Affrica, Marius in Britane, Ingenuus in Germanie, Regillianus in Denmark, Aureolus in Hungarie, Macrianus in Mesopotamia, and Odenatus, in Syria. Before Odenatus rose against Valerian, Macrianus enioied Mesopotamia and the greatest part of Syria, whereof Odenatus hauing intelligence, he marched with his power agaynst him and killed him, and discomfited all his army. The death of the Tyran Macrian being

knowen, and that Galienus was so vicious, the armes in Afia assembled and chose Odenatus Emperour : which Election although the Senate publickly durft not agree vpon, yet secretly they allowed it, bycause they receyued dayly newes, of the great Employtes and deedes of armes done by Odenatus, and saw on the other fide the great continued follies of Galienus. Almost three yeares and a halfe was Odenatus Emperour and Lord of all the Orient, duringe which time he recouered all the Lands and Provinces lost by Galienus, and payde the Romane army all the arrerages of their wages due vnto them. But Fortune ful of inconstancy, suffred not this good Prynce very long to raygne. For hauing in hys house a kinfman of hys, named Meonius, to whom he bare great good will, for that he sawe him to be a valiant man of warre, although Ignorant of his Enuy and couetousnesse: it chaunced vpon a day as they two rode on huntinge, and gallopinge after the pursute of a wylde Bore, with the very same Bore Speare which Meonius caried to strike the beast, he killed by treason his good Coufin Odenatus. But that murder was not long time vnureuenged. For the Borespeare wherewith he had so cruelly killed the Emperour his Coufin, was incontinently known by the hunters which folowed Odenatus: whervpon that day the head of Meonius was striken of. And Galienus vnderstandinge the death of Odenatus, gaue great rewardes and presents to them that brought him the newes, beinge so ioyfull as the Romans wer angry to vnderstand those pitiful tydings, bycause through the good ordre which Odenatus vsed in Afia, they had great tranquillity and peace throughout Europa. Now after the death of thys good Emperour Odenatus, the Armies chose one of his two Sonnes to be Emperour of the Orient: But for that he was younge, they chose Zenobia to be Protector of hir sonne, and gouerner ouer the sayd Orient Empyre. Who seeing that vpon the decease of Odenatus certayne of the East Countries began to reuolt, shee determined to open hir Treasure, ressemble hir men of Warre, and in hir owne person to march into the fielde: where she did sutch notable enterprises, as shee appalled hir enemies, and made the whole world to wonder. About the age of .xxxv. yeares Zenobia was widow, beinge the Tutrix of hir children, Regent of an Empyre, and Cap-

tayne generall of the army. In which weighty charge she vsed hir selfe so wisely and well, as shee acquired no lesse noble name in Afia, than Queene Semiramis did in India. Zenobia was constant in that whych she tooke in hand, true in words, liberal, mylde, and feuere where she ought to be, discrete, graue, and secrete in her enterprises, albeit she was ambicious. For, not content with hir title of Gouernesse, or Regent, she wrote and caused her selfe to be called Empresse, she loued not to ride vpon a Mule, or in a litter, but greatly esteemed to haue great horfe in hir stable and to learne to handle and ryde them. When Zenobia went forth of hir Tent to see the order and gouernment of hir Campe, she continually did put on her Armure, and was well guarded with a band of men, so that of a woman, she cared but onely for the name, and in the factes of Armes shee craued the title of valiaunt. The Cap-taynes of hir Army, neuer gaue battell, or made assault, they neuer skyrmished or did other enterprise of warre, but she was present in her owne person, and attempted to shewe hirselfe more hardy than any of all the troupe, a thinge almost incredible in that weake and feeble kinde. The fayd noble Queene was of stature, bigge and well proporcioned, her eyes black and quicke, hir forehead large, hir stomak and Breastes fayre and vpright, her Face white, and ruddy, a little mouth, hir Teeth so whyte, as they seemed like a rancke of white pearles, but aboue all things she was of sutch excellent Spirit and courage, as shee was feared for hir stoutnesse, and beloued for her beauty. And although Zenobia was indued with so great beauty, liberality, riches, and puissance, yet she was neuer stayned with the blemish of vnchaste lyfe, or wyth other vanity: and as hir husband Odenatus was wont to say, that after shee felt hir selfe wyth chylde, shee neuer suffred hym to come neare her, (sutch was hir great Chastity) sayinge that Women ought to marry rather for children than for pleasure. She was also excellently well learned in the Greke and Latine tongue. Shee did neuer eate but one Meale a Day. Hir talke was verye lyttle and rare. The Meate which shee vsed for hir repaste, was either the hanch of a Wylde Bore, or else the syde of a Deere. Shee could drinke no Wyne, nor abyde the fent thereof. But shee was so curyous in good and perfect Waters, as shee would gyue so great

a Pryce for that, as is ordinaryly gyuen for Wyne bee it never so excellent. So foone as the Kings of Ægypte of Persia, and the Greekes, were aduertized of the death of Odenatus, they sent theyr Ambassadours to Zenobia, aswell to vifte and comfort hir, as to bee her confederats and frendes. So much was she feared and redoubted for her rare vertues. The affayres of Zenobia beinge in futch estate in Afia, the Emperor Galienus died in Lombardie, and the Romanes chose Aurelian to bee Emperour, who although he was of a base and obscure lineage, yet hee was of a great valiance in factes of Armes. When Aurelian was chosen Emperour, he made great preparacion into Afia, to inferre warres vpon Queene Zenobia, and in all hys tyme hee never attempted greater enterprise for the Romanes. When hee was arryued in Afia, the Emperour proceded agaynst the Queene, and shee as valiantly defended hir selfe, continually being betwene them great Alarms and skirmishes. But as Zenobia and hir people were of leſſe trauell and of better skyl in knowledge of the Country, so they did greater harme and more anoiance vnto theyr Enimy, and thereof receiued leſſer damage. The Emperour ſeing that hee ſhould haue much adoe to vanquife Zenobia by armes, determined to ouercome hir by gentle wordes and fayre promiffes: for which caufe he wrote vnto hir a letter, the tenor whereof ensueth.

Aurelian Emperour of Rome and Lord of al Afia, to the right honorable Zenobia ſendeth greeting. Although to ſuch rebellious Women as thou art, it ſhould ſeeme vncomely and not decente to make request, yet if thou wylt ſeeke ayde of my mercy, and rendre thy ſelfe vnder myne obedience, bee assured that I wyl doe thee honour, and geue pardon to thy people. The Golde, Siluer, and other riches, within thy Pallace I am content thou ſhalt enioy, together with the kingdome of Palmyres, which thou mayeft keepe duringe thy life, and leaue after thy death to whom thou ſhalt think good, vpon condicion notwithstandinge, that thou abandone all thine other Realmes and Countryes which thou haſte in Afia, and acknowledge Rome to be thy ſuperior. Of thy vaffalls, and ſubieſtes of Palmyres, we demaund none other obedience, but to be confederates and frendes, ſo that thou breake vp thy Campe, wherewyth thou makeſt warre in Afia, and diſobeyeft the city of Rome, wee will

suffer thee to haue a certayne number of men of warre, so wel for the tuicion of thy person, as for the defence of thy kingdome, and thy two Children which thou haddest by thy husbande Odenatus. And he whom thou louest best shal remayne with thee in Afia, and the other I will carry with me to Rome, not as prisoner, but as hostage and pleadge from thee. The prisoners which thou haft of ours, shalbe rendred in exchange for those which we haue of thine, without raunsome of eyther parts. And by these meanes thou shalt remayne honored in Afia, and I contented, will retourne to Rome. The Gods be thy defence, and preferue our mother the city of Rome from all vnhappy fortune.

The Queene Zenobia hauinge reade the letter of the Emperour Aurelianuſ, without feare of the contents, incontinently made futch aunſwere as followeth.

Zenobia Queene of Palmyres, and Lady of all Afia, and the kingdomes thereof, to thee Aurelianuſ the Emperour, health, and consolation, &c. That thou do intitle thy ſelfe with the Emperour of the Romanes I doe agree, but to preſume to name thy ſelfe lord of the Eaſt kingdomes, I ſay therein thou doeft offend. For thou knoweft wel, that I alone am Lady Regent of all the Orient, and the only dame and mayſtrefſe of the fame. Th'one part whereof descended vnto me by lawful Inheritaunce from my predeceſſors, and the other part, I haue won by my proweſſe and deedes of armes. Thou ſayeft that if I rendre obedience vnto thee, thou wilt do me great honor: To that I aunſwere, that it were a dishonest part of me, and a deede moſt vniuſt, that the Gods hauing created Zenobia to commaund all Afia, ſhe ſhould now begyn to bee ſlauē and thral vnto the city of Rome. Semblably, thou ſaieſt that thou wylt gyue and leauē me al the golde, ſiluer, and other ryches whych I haue: Whereunto I aunſwer, that it is a wycked, and fond request, to diſpoſe the goodes of another as they were thine owne. But thine eyes ſhall neuer ſee it, ne yet thy handes ſhal touche it, but rather I hope in the Gods aboue to beſtow and crye a larges of that which thou haſte at Rome, before thou finger that whych I haue and poſſeſſe in Afia. Truely Aurelianuſ, the warres which thou makeſt agaynt me, and thy quarrell, bee moſt vniuſte beſtore the ſupernall Gods, and very vnrea-

sonable before men, and I for my part if I haue entred or doe take armes, it is but to defend my self and myne. Thy comming then into Asia is for none other purpoe, but to spoile and make hanocke of that which an other hath. And think not that I am greatly afraide of the name of Romane Prynce, nor yet the power of thyne huge army. For if it bee in thy handes to gyue battell, it belongeth only to the gods to gyue eyther to thee or me the victory. That I remaine in fielde it is to me greate fame, but thou to fight with a widdowe, oughtest truelye to bee ashamed. There be come vnto myne ayde and Campe the Persians, the Medes, the Agamennonians, the Irenees, and the Syrians, and with them all the Gods immortall, who be wont to chaftice futch proude princes as thou art, and to helpe poore Widowes as I am. And if it so come to passe, that the Gods doe permit and suffre my lucke to be futch, as thou do bereue me of lyfe and dispoyle me of goods, yet it will be bruted at Rome, and published in Asia, that the wofull wight Zenobia, was ouerthrowne and flayne, in defence of hir Patrimony, and for the conseruation of hir husbande's honor. Labor no more then Aurelianuſ, to flatter and pray me, nor yet to threaten me: requre me no more to yelde and become thy prisoner, nor yet to surrender that which I haue: for by doinge that I can, I accomplish that I ought. For it will be fayd and noyfed through the world, (may it so come to passe as Fortune do not fauor mee) that if the Emprefſe Zenobia be captiue, ſhe was not yet vanquished. Now touchinge my ſon which thou demaundest to eary with thee to Rome, truely that request I cannot abide, and mutch leſſe do meane to graunt, knowing full well that thy house is ſtored full of manyfolde vices, where myne is garniſhed with many notable Philofophers: whereby if I leaue vnto my Children no great heapes of goods, yet they ſhalbe wel taught and inſtructed: For the one halfe of the day they ſpend in Learninge, and the other halfe in exerciſe of Armes. For concluſion of thy demaund, and finall auffwere, thereunto, I pray thee trauayle no more by letters to write vnto mee, ne yet by ambaffage to ſpende any furder talke, but attend vntill our controuerſie bee decided rather by force of Armes than by vttered wordes. The Gods preferue thee.

It is sayd that Aurelianuſ, receiuing that aunſwere did reioyce, but when he had red it, he was greatly offendēd, which incontinently hee made to bee known, by gathering together his Camp, and beſieginge the Citty wherein Zenobia was. And Aurelianuſ, wroth and outraged with that aunſwere, although his army was weary and halfe in dispayre (by reaſon of the longe Warres,) yet he vſed ſutche diligence and expedition in the ſiege of that place, as the Queene was taken and the city rafeſ: which done, the Emperour Aurelianuſ retourned to Rome, carying with him Zenobia, not to doe hir to death, but to tryumph ouer her. At what tyme to ſee that Noble Lady goe on foote, and marche before the tryumphinge Chariot bare footed, charged with the burden of heauy chaynes, and hir two children by hir fide: truly it made the Romane Matrons to conceyue great pity, being wel knownen to al the Romans, that neither in valorous deedes, nor yet in vertue or chaſtity, any man or woman of hir time did excell hir. The dayes of the triumph being done, all the noble Ladies of Rome aſſembled and repayred to Zenobia, and vſed vnto her great and honorable entartaynement, giuing hir many goodly prefentes and rewards. And Zenobia liued in the company of thoſe noble Matrons the ſpace of .x. yeares before ſhe dyed, in estimation like a Lucrecia, and in honour like a Cornelie. And if Fortune had accompanied hir perfonage, ſo well as vertue and magnanimity, Rome had felt the egrēneſſe of hir diſpleaſure, and the whole world taſted the ſweetneſſe of hir Regiment. But nowe leauē we of, any longer to ſpeak of Zenobia, that wee may dire&t our course to the hard fate of a King's daughter, that for loue maried a ſimple perfon bred in hir father's houſe, who in base parentage, and churliſhe kynde coulde not be altered: but ſhewed the fruiſts of brutiſhneſſe: tyll Lady Fortune pityinge the Ladie's caſe: prouided for her better dayes, and chaſtized her vnkinde companion with deſerts condigne for ſutche a matche.

## THE FIFTEENTH NOUELL.

*Euphimia the Kyng of Corinth's daughter fell in love with Acharisto, the seruaunt of her father, and besides others which required hir in mariage, she dismayed Philon the King of Peloponeſus, that loued hir very feruently. Acharisto conspiring against the Kyng, was discouered, tormented, and put in prison, and by meanes of Euphimia deliuered. The King promised his daughter and kingdome to him that presented the head of Acharisto, Euphimia so wrought, as hee was presented to the King. The King gaue him his daughter to wyfe and when he died made him his heyre. Acharisto began to hate his wyfe, and condemned hir to death as an adultereſſe. Philon deliuered hir: and vpon the ſute of hir ſubiects, ſhe is contented to mary him, and therby he is made Kyng of Corinth:*

CONSTANCY in honest loue (being a perfect vertue, and a precious ornament to the beloued, induinge eyther, besides ioy and contentacion, with immortall fame and Glory,) hath in it ſelfe theſe onely marks and properties to be knownen by, Chrafty, and toleration of aduerſity: For as the mynde is conſtant in loue, not variable, or geuen to chaunge, ſo is the body continent, comely, honest and pacient of Fortunes plages. A true conſtant minde is moued with no ſugred perſuasions of frendes, is diuerted with no eloquence, terrified with no threats, is quiet in all motions. The bluſtering blaſts of parents wrath, cannot remoue the conſtant mayde from that which ſhe hath peculiarily choſen to hir ſelfe. The rigorous rage of frendes, doth not diſmay the louing man from the embracement of hir whom he hath amonſt the reſt ſelecte for his vncchangeable feare. A goodly example of conſtant and noble loue this history enſuing deſcribeth, althoſh not like in both, yet in both a ſemblable conſtancy. For Euphimia, a kings daughter, abandoneſt the great loue borne vnto hir by Philon, a yong prince, to loue a ſervant of hir father's, with whom ſhe perſeuered in great conſtancy, for all his false and ingratefull dealings towards hir. Philon feeing his loue defiſed neuer maried vntill he maried hir,

whom afterwards he deliuered from the false furmised treason of hir cancred and malicious husband. Euphimia fondly maried agaynst hir father's will, and therefore deseruedly afterwards bare the penaunce of hir fault: and albeit she declared hir selfe to be constant, yet duty to louinge Father ought to haue withdrawen hir rash and heady loue. What daungers do ensue sutch like cases, examples be rife, and experience teacheth. A great dis-honour it is for the Lady and Gentlewoman to disparage hir noble house with mariage of hir inferior: yea and great grieve to the parents to see their children obstinate and wilfull in careleffe loue. And albeit the Poet Propertius describeth the vehement loue of those that be noble, and haue wherewith in loue to be liberall, in these veres:

*Great is the fayth of Loue,  
the constant mynde doth mutch auayle:  
And hee that is well fraught with wealth,  
in Loue doth mutch preuayle.*

Yet the tender Damosell or louing childe, be they neuer so noble or rich, ought to attend the father's tyme and choyse, and naturally encline to parent's will and likinge, otherwise great harme and detriment ensue: for when the Parentes see the disobedience or rather rebellious mynde of theyr childe, their conceiued sorrow for the same, so gnaweth the rooted plante of naturall loue, as either it haftneth their vntimely death, or else ingendreth a heape of melancholie humors: whych force them to proclame defiance and bytter curse against their propre fruit, vpon whom (if by due regard they had bene ruled) they would haue pronounced the sweete bleffyng that Isaac gaue to Iacob, the mother's best beloued Boye: yea and that displeasure may chaunce to dispossesse them of that, whych shoulde haue bene the onely comfort and stay of the future age. So that neglygence of parent's heft, and careleffe heede of Youthfull head, breedeth double woe, but specially in the not aduised Chylde: who tumbleth himselfe first into the breach of diuine lawes, to the curses of the same, to parent's wrath, to orphan's state, to begger's lyfe, and into a sea of manifold miseries. In whom had obeydience ruled, and reason taken place, the hearte myght haue bene satifised, the parent wel pleased: the life

ioyfully spent, and the posteritie successively tast the fruits that elders haue prepared. What care and sorrow, nay what extre-  
metie the foresayde Noble Gentlewoman susteined, for not yeld-  
ing to hir father's minde, the sequele shall at large declare. There  
was sometimes in Corinth, a City of Grecia, a Kinge, which had  
a daughter called Euphimia, very tenderly beloued of hir father,  
and being arriued at the age of mariage, many Noble men of  
Grecia made sute to haue hir to wife. But amongs al, Philon  
the young king of Peloponesus, so fiercely fell in love wyth hir, as  
he thought he could no longer liue, if he were maried to anye  
other: for which cause her father knowing him to be a King, and  
of singular beautye, and that he was far in loue wyth his Daughter,  
would gladly haue chosen him to be his sonne in lawe, persuading  
hir that she should liue with him a lyfe so happy as was possyble  
for any noble lady matched wyth a Gentleman, were he neuer so  
honorable. But the daughter by no meanes would consent vnto  
hir father's wyll, alleaging vnto him diuers and sundry considera-  
cions wherby hir nature by no meanes would agree, nor heart con-  
fente to ioyne wyth Philon. The king aboue all worldly thynges  
loued his fayre daughter: and albeit hee would fayne haue broughte  
to passe, that she should haue taken him to husband, yet he would  
not vse the father's authoritie, but desired that Loue rather than  
force should mach his daughter, and therfore for that tyme was  
contented to agree vnto hir wyll. There was in the Court a young  
man borne of hir Father's bondman, whych hyght Acharisto, and  
was manumised by the kinge, who made him one of the Esquiers  
for hys body, and vfed his seruyce in sundrye enterpryses of the  
warres, and bicause hee was in those affayres very skilfull, of bolde  
personage, in conflicts and battayles very hardy, the king did very  
much fauor him, aswell for that he had defended him from mani-  
fold daungers, as also bycause he had deliuered him from the trea-  
son pretended against him by the kyng of the Lacedemonians:  
whose helpe and valyance, the king vfed for the murder and de-  
struction of the sayde Lacedemonian king. For whych valiant  
enterpryse, he bountifullly recompenced him wyth honorable pre-  
fermentes and stately reuenues. Vpon this yong man Euphimia  
fixed hir amorous eyes, and fell so farre in loue, as vpon him alone

she bent her thoughtes, and all her louing cogitations. Whereof Acharisto being certified, and well espying and marking her amorous looks, nouryshed with lyke flames the fire wherewyth she burned. Notwythstanding his loue was not so feruently bent vpon her personage, as his desire was ambitious for that she shoulde be her father's onely heyre, and therfore thought that he shoulde be a most happy man, aboue al other of mortall kynde, if he myght posseſſe that inheritance. The king perceiuing that loue, told his daughter, that she had placed her minde in place so ſtralunge, as hee had thought her wysdome would haue more warely foreſeen, and better wayed her eſtate and birth, as com of a princely race, and would haue demed ſutche loue, farre vnworthy her degree: requiringe her wyth fatherly words, to withdraw her ſettled mynde and to ioyne with him in choyſe of husbande, for that he had none other worldly heire but her, and tolde her how he ment to beſtow her vpon ſutche a personage, as a most happy life ſhe ſhould leade, ſo long as the deſtenies were diſpoſed to weauē the Webbe of her Predeſtined life: and therefore was reſolved to Espouſe her vnto that noble gentleman Philon. Euphimia hearkned to this vnlike tale, and with vnlike words refuſed her father's heſt, proteſting vnto him ſutche reaſons to like effeſt as ſhee diſ before, therby to draw him from his conceiued purpose, wherunto the wife king hauiing made replye, continuing his intended mynde, at length in ragyng wordes, and ſtormed mind, he ſayd vnto Euphimia: "How muſt the ſweter is the wyne, the sharper is the egred fawce thereoſ. I ſpeake this Parable, for that thou not knowing or greatlye regarding the gentle diſpoſition of thy father's nature, in the ende mayſt ſo abuse the ſame, as where hitherto he hath bene curteous and benigne, he may become through thy diſordred deedes, ryghte ſowre and ſharpe:" and without vtterance of further talke, departed. Who reſting euill content wyth that fonde fyxed Loue, thoughte that the next way to remedy the ſame, was to tell Acharisto how greuously he toke his preſumed fault, and in what heinous parte he conceiued his ingratitude, and how for the benefits which liberally he had beſtowed vpon him, he had broughte and enticed hys daughter to loue him, that was farre vngreeable her eſtate. And therfore

he called hym before hym, and with reasons firste declared the duetye of a faythfull seruaunt to his Soueraigne lord, and afterwards hee sayd: That if the receyued benefits were not able to lette him know what were conuenient and seemely for hys degree, but would perseuere in that which he had begon, he would make him feele the iust displeasure of a displeased Prince, whereby hee shoulde repent the tyme that euer hee was borne of Woman's wombe. These woordes of the Kyng seemed greeuous to Acharisto, and not to moue hym to further anger hee seemed as though that (being fearfull of the Kyng's displeasure) he did not loue his daughter at all, but sayd vnto hym, that he deserued not to bee so rebuked, for that it lay not in his power to wythstand hir loue, the same procedyng of hir own good wyll and lyberty: and that hee for his part neuer requyred loue: if shee did bend hir mynd to loue hym, hee could not remedye that affection, for that the freewyll of sutch vnbrydled appetite rested not in hym to reforme. Notwythstandyng, bycause he vnderstoode hys vnwylling mind, he from that tyme forth would so endeuer hymselfe as he shoulde well perceyue that the vnstayde mynde of the young gentlewoman Euphimia, was not incensed by hym, but voluntarily conceyued of hir selfe. "You shall doe well" (sayde the kyng) "if the effecte procede accordinge to the promise: and the more accep table shall the same bee vnto mee, for that I defyre it shoulde so come to passe." The king liked wel these words although that Acharisto had conceiued within the plat of his entended mind, som other treason. For albeit that he affirmed before the kyng's owne face, that hee would not loue his daughter, yet knowing the assured wil of the louyng gentlewoman, hee practised the mariage, and like an vnkind and wretched man, deuised conuenient tyme to kil him: and fully bent to execute that cruel enterpryse, he attempted to corrupt the chiefeſt men about him, promisſing promociſons vnto ſome, to ſome he assured reſtitucion of reueueſes, which by father's fault they had loſt beſtore, and to other golden hilles, ſo that hee miſtē attayne by ſlaughter of the king, to wynne a kingly ſtate and kiŋdomē: which the ſooner he peruaideſ himself to acquire, if in ſecrete ſilence, they coulde put vp that which by generall voice they had agreed. And although

they thought themselues in good assurance, that theyr enterpryse could take no ill successe, by reason of their sounde and good discourse debated amonges themselues for the accomplishment thereof, yet it fortuned that one of the conspiracy (as commonlye in futch lyke trayterous attemptes it chaunceth) beeynge wyth hys beloued Ladye, and shee makyng mone that little Commodytye succeeded of hir Loue for hir Aduauncement, brake out into these wordes: “ Hold thy peace” (sayde hee :) “ for the tyme wyll not bee longe before thou shalt bee one of the chiefest Ladies of this land.” “ Howe can that bee? ” (sayde hys Woman.) “ No more adoe? ” (quod the Gentleman :) “ Cease from further questions, and bee merrye: for wee shall enioye together, a verye Honourable and a quyete Lyfe.” When hir Louer was departed, the gentlewoman went to an other of hir goffips very iocunde, and tolde hir what hir Louer had sayd: and shee then not able to keepe Counsell, wente and tolde an other: in such wylle as in the ende it came to the eares of the King’s steward’s wyfe, and she imparted the same vnto hir husband, who marking those words, like a man of great wisedome and experiance, did verily beleue that the same touched the daunger of the king’s person: and as a faythfull seruant to his lorde and maister, diligently harkned to the mutteringe talke murmured in the Court, by him which had tolde the same to his beloued Lady: and knowinge that it proceeded from Acharisto, which was an obstinate and sedicious varlet, and that he with three or four other his familiars, kept secret company in corners, iuged that which he first conjectured, to be most certayne and true: wherefore determined to moue the king thereof, and vpon a day finding him alone, he sayd vnto him, that the fidelity and good will wherewith he serued him, and the desire which he had to see hym lyue in longe and prosperous Estate, made hym to attend to the salfegard of hys person, and to hearken vnto futch as should attempt to daunger the same: for which cause, marking and espying the doings of certayne of his chamber (whose common assemblies and priuy whisperings mislyking) he feared least they conspiring with Acharisto, shoulde worcke treason, for berieuinge of his life: and to th’ intent their endeouours might be preuented, and his safety foreseen, he thought good to reueale the same to

hys Maiesty. Then he tolde the King the words that were spoken by the first Gentlewoman, to one or two of her companions, and discloſed the preſumptions which he had ſeene and perceyued touchinge the fame. Amongſ the ill conditions of men, there is nothinge more common than Poyſon, Conſpiracieſ, and Treafon of Prynces and great Lordes: and therefore euery little ſuſpicion preſumyng ſutche perill, is a great demonstration of lyke myſchiefe: which made the Kyng to geue credit to the Woordes of hys Steward, hauing for hys long experieue knownen him to be faythfull, and truſty. And ſodaynly he thought that Achariſto attempted the fame, that after hys death, by mariage of Euphimia, he might be the Inheritor of hys Kyngdome: the belieue whereof, and the ſingular credite which he repoſed in hys Steward, beſides other thinges, cauſed hym to comaund the captayne of hys Guard to apprehend thoſe 4 of whom hys Steward told hym, and Achariſto, committinge them to feuerall Prifons. Then he ſent hys Officers to examyne them, and found vpon their confeſſions, the accuſation of his steward to be true: but Achariſto, althoſh the whole effecte of the Treafon was confeſſed by thoſe foure conſpiratores that were apprehended, and aduouched to his Face, and for all the Tormentes wherewith he was racked and cruciated, yet ſtill denied, that eyther he was authour of the enterpriſe, or partaker of a treafon ſo wicked: then the king incontinently cauſed the foure Gentlemen of hys Chamber to be rewarded accordinge to the worthineſſe of their offence, and were put to death, and Achariſto to be repreyued in ſharpe and cruell prison, vntill with tormentes he ſhould be forced to confeſſe that which he knew to be moſt certayne and true by the evidence of thoſe that were done to death. Euphimia for the impreſonment of Achariſto, conceiued incredibl sorrow, and vneths could be perſuaded, that hee would imagine, mutch leſſe conſpyre, that abhominable fact, aſwell for the loue which Achariſto ſeemed to beare vnto hir, as for the great good wyl wherewith he was affuſed that ſhe bare vnto hym, and therefore the death of the kyng to be no leſſe grieve vnto him, than the fame woulde be to hir ſelfe, the Kyng being hir naturall and louing father: Achariſto thought on the other ſide, that if hee might ſpeake with Euphimia, a way woulde be founde eyther for hys

escape, or else for hys delyuery. Whereupon Acharisto beinge in this deliberation, found meanes to talke wyth the Iaylor's wyfe, and intreated her to shewe hym so mucht fauour, as to procure Euphimia to come vnto him: she accordingly brought to passe, that the yong Gentlewoman in secrete wife came to speake wyth thys trayterous varlet, who so soone as he fawne her, shedinge from hys eyes store of teares, pitifully complayninge, sayd vnto her: "I know Euphimia, that the kinge your father doth not inclose me in this cruell prison, ne yet afflicteth me wyth these miserable torments, for any suspcion he conceyueth of me for any intended fact, but only for the loue which I beare you, and for the like, (for whych I render humble thanks) that you do beare to me: and because that I am wary of this wretched state, and know that nothing else can rid me from this paynefull Lyfe, but onely death, I am determined wyth myne owne propre hands to cut the threed of life wherewith the destinies hitherto haue prolonged the same, that thys my breathinge Ghoast, which breatheth forth these doleful playntes, may flee into the Skyes, to rest it selfe amonges the restfull spirites aboue, or wandre into the pleasaunte hellish fieldes, amongs the shadows of Creusa, Aeneas wyfe, or else wyth the ghost of complayning Dido. But ere I did the same, I made myne humble prayer to the maiesty diuine, that hee would vouchsafe to shew me so much grace, as before I dye, I myghte fulfi my couetous eyes with sight of you, whose ymage still appeareth before those greedy Gates, and fansie reprefenteth vnto my myndfull heart. Which great desired thing, sith God aboue hath graunted, I yeld him infinit thankes, and sith my desteny is futch, that futch must be the end of loue, I doe reioyce that I muste dye for your sake, which only is the cause that the King your father so laboureth for my death: I neede not to molest you wyth the false euidence giuen against me, by thosse nialicious villaines, that be already dead, which onely hath thus incensed the Kinge's Wrathe and heauy rage agaynst mee: whereof I am so free, as worthilye they bee executed for the same: for if it were so, then true it is, (and as lyghtly you myght beleue) that I neuer knew what Loue you beare mee, and you lykewyse did neuer knowe, the loue I bare to you: and therefore you may thinke that so impossible is the

one, as I dyd euer meane, thinke, or ymagine any harme or peryll to your father's person. To be short, I humbly do besech you to beleue, that so faythfully as man is able to loue a woman, so haue I loued you: and that it may please you to bee so myndfull of me in thys fadyng Lyfe, as I shal be of you in that life to come." And in sayinge so, wyth face all bathed in teares, he clypped hir about the myddle, and fast imbracing hir said: "Thus takinge my last farewell of you (myne onely life and ioy) I commende you to the gournement of the supernall God, and my selfe to death, to be dysposed as pleaseth him." Euphimia, which before was not perswaded that Acharisto was guylty of that deuised Treason, nowe gaue full belyefe and credite to his wordes, and Weeping wyth him for company, comforted him so wel as she could, and bidding him to bee of good chere, she sayde, that she wold seeke such meanes as for hir sake and loue he shold not dye: and that before longe time did passe, shee wold help him out of prison. Acharisto, although he vttered by ruful voice that lamentable talke, for remedye to ridde himselfe from pryon, yet he did but fayne all that he spake, addyng further: "Alas, Euphimia, do not incurre your Father's wrath to please my minde: suffer me quietly to take that death, which finister Fortune and cruell fate hath prouided to abridge my dayes." Euphimia, vanquished with inspeakable grieve and burning passion of loue, said: "Ah, Acharisto, the onely ioy and comfort of my lyfe, do not pierce my heart with such displesant wordes: for what shold I do in this wretched world, yf you for my sake shold suffre death? Wherfore put away that cruel thought, and be content to faue your Lyfe, that hereafter in ioye and myrth you may spend the same: trusting that yf meanes may be founde for your dispatche from hence, we shal liue the rest of our prolonged Lyfe together, in sweete and happy dayes: for my Father is not made of stone flint, nor yet was noured of Hircan Tigre: he is not so malicious but that in tyme to come hee may be made to know the true discourse of thine innocent life, and hope thou shalt atteyne his fauour more than euer thou didst before, the care whereof onely leauue to me, and take no thought thy selfe: for I make promise vpon myne assured faith to brynge the same to passe: wherfore giue ouer thy conceyued

gryefe, and bende thy selfe to lyue so merie a life, as euer gentleman did, trained vp in court as thou hast bene.” “I am content,” said Acharisto, “thus to doe. The Gods forbid that I should declyne my hearte and mynde from thy behest, who of thy wonted grace doest seeke continuance of my Lyfe, but rather, sweete Euphimia, than thou shouldest suffre any daunger to performe thy promise, I make request (for the common loue betwene vs both) to leaue me in this present dangerous stafe: rather would I lose my lyfe than thou shouldest hazard the least heare of thy heade for my releefe.” “Wee shall be both salfe ynough, (aunswered Euphimia) for my deuice proceedinge from a woman’s heade, hath already drawen the plot of thy deliueraunce.” And with those wordes they both did end their talke, whose trickling teares did rather finishe the same, than willing mynds: and eyther of them geeuing a kyffe vnto the Tower Walle, wherein Acharisto was fast shutte, Euphimia departed turmoyled wyth a Thousande amorous Pryckes, and ceased not but firste of all to corrupt and winne the Layler’s Wyfe, whose husband was sent forth on busynesse of the king’s: the conclusion of which practise was, that when shee caried meate to Acharisto, according to the order appoynted, she should fayne hirselfe to be violently dispoyled of the Pryson Key by Acharisto, who taking the same from hir: should shut hir in the Prison and escape, and when hir husband did returne, shee should make complaunt of the violence done vnto hir: accordinge to which deuise, the practyse was accomplished: And when hir husbande returned home, hearing his wyfe crie out within the Tower, was maruayl-lously aynazed, and vnderstandinge that Acharisto was fled, (ignoraunt of the pollicy betwene his Wyfe and Euphimia,) hee fell into great rage, and speedely repayred to the Kynge, and tolde him what had chaunced. The Kinge thinking that the breach of Prison was rather through the woman’s simplicite than purposed malice, did mitigate his displeasure, howbeit forthwith he sent out scouts to spy, and watch into what place Acharisto was gone, whose secret flight, made all their trauayle to be in vayne. Then the Kinge when hee saw that he could not be found, made Proclamation throughout his realme, that who so would bringe vnto him the head of Acharisto, should haue to Wyfe hys onely Daughter, and

after hys decease shoulde posseffe his Kingdome for Dowry of that mariage. Many knightes did put themselues in redineffe to atchieue that enterprize, and aboue al, Philon was the chiefe, not for gredineffe of the kingdome, but for loue which hee bare vnto the Gentlewoman. Whereof Acharisto hauinge intelligence, and percyuinge that in no place of Europa hee could bee safe and sure from daunger, for the multitude of them which pursued him vnto death, caused Euphimia to vnderstand the miserabile Estate wherein hee was. Euphimia which bent hir minde, and employed hir study for his safegarde, imparted hir loue which shée bare to Acharisto, to an aged Gentlewoman, which was hir nurse and gouerneffe, and besought hir that shée would intreat hir sonne called Sinapus, (one very well beloued of the king) to reach his help vnto hir desyre, that Acharisto might retourne to the court agayn. The Nourse like a wyse woman lefte no persuasion vnspoken, nor counsell vnremembred, which shée thought was able to diffuade the yong gentlewoman from hir conceiued loue: but the wound was so deepeley made, and hir hearte so greuously wounded with the three forked arrows of the little blinde archer Cupide, that despisinge all the reasons of hir beloued nurse, shée sayde, how shée was firmlye bent eyther to runne from hir father, and to feke out Acharisto, to sustaine wyth him one equall fortune, or else with hir owne hands to procure death, if some remedy were not found to recouer the king's good grace for the returne of Acharisto. The Nurse vanquished with pity of the yong mayden, fearinge both the one and the other daunger that myght ensue, sent for Sinapus, and vpon their talke together, Euphimia and hée concluded, that Acharisto shoulde bee brought agayne vnto the Courte, and that shée hir selfe shoulde present him to the King: wherein shoulde want no kinde of diligence vntill the Kyng did entartayne him agayne for his faythfull seruaunt, as he was wont to do. Vpon which resolusion, Acharisto was sent for, and being come, Sinapus and Euphimia together with the nurse tolde hym in what fort they three had concluded touchinge his health and safegarde: which of him being well lyked, did give them humble thankes: and then Sinapus went vnto the kyng, and told him, that there was one newly arriued at Corinth, to make a prefent vnto his grace of the head of

Acharisto. At which newes the kynge shewed hymselfe so ioyfull, as if hee had gotten an other Kingdome: and beinge placed vnder his cloath of state, with his Counsell and Princely trayne about hym, tellinge them the cause of that assembly, commaunded hym that brought those news, to bring the party forth newely come vnto the City to present the head of Acharisto before the presence of the King, who no sooner looked vpon him, but fell into futch a rage, as the fire seemed to flaine out of his angry eyes, and commaunded him presently to be taken and put to death. But Acharisto falling downe vpon hys knees, humbly besought his maiesy to geeue him leaue to speake: but the kinge not suffering him to vtter one word commaunded hym away. Then the Counsellours and other Lords of the Court, intreated his grace to heare him: at whose requestes and supplications he seemed to be content. Then Acharisto began to say: "Most sacred Prynce, and redoubted souerayne Lord, the cause of this my presumptuous repaire before your maiesy, is not to shew my selfe guilty of thy late deuised conspiracy, ne yet to crane pardon for the same, but to satisfie your Maiesy, wyth that contented desire, whych by Proclamation ye haue pronounced through your highnesse Realmes and dominions: which is, to offer this heade for reuenge of the faulte vniustlye layed vnto my charge by those foure, which worthily haue tafted the deserued payne of theyr offense. Wherfore I am come hither of myne owne accord, to shew the loue and greate desyre, whych euer I had to serue and please your Maiesy: and for that I would not consume my life in your displeasure, I make offer of the same to your mercifull wyll and dysposition, chosynge rather to die, and leaue your maiesy satisfied and contented, than to lyue in happy state, your princely minde displeased: but desyrous that your maiesy shoulde know myne innocence, I humblye besech your grace to heare what I can say, that my fidelity maye bee throughly vnderstanding, and the wickednesse of the Varlets, mine accusers wel wayed and considered." Then he began to rehearse all the things done by hym for the seruyce of his crowne and maiesy, and finally into what daunger he did put himself, when he kylled the Lacedemonian king, that went about by treason to murder him: whych enterpryse might appeare vnto

him to bee a sure and euident testimony, that hee ment nothinge hurtfull or preiudiciale to his highneſſe: and that hee esteemed not his life, when hee aduentured for his seruice and fauegard to employ the ſame: and after theſe alleaged cauſes, he added briefly, that the loue which his maieſty knew to be beſtweene him and Euphimia his Daughter, ought to haue perſuaded him, that he had rather haue ſuffered death himſelfe, than commit a thing diſpleaſant to Euphimia. And knowing that a more offeſive thynge coulde not chaunce to hir, than the vilent death of her father, hee myghte well thyncke that hee woulde haue deuyfed the death of a Thouſande other, rather than that horible and abhominable deede, ſutche as hys greateſt Ennemy woulde neuer haue done, mutch leſſe hee whych was bounde vnto hym by ſo many Receyued Benefittes, for whose ſeruice and preſeruacion he had dedicated and vowed hys Lyfe and Soule: but if ſo be his maieſtie's rancor and diſpleaſure could not be mitigated, but by doinge him to death, hee defird that none of his alleaged reaſons ſhould bee accepted, and therefore was there ready to ſacrifice his life at his maieſtie's diſpoſition and pleaſure. Achariſto by naſure could tel his tale excedingly well, and the more his tongue ſtode him in ſeruice, the greater appeared his eloquence: whych ſo piercēd the minde of the king and perſuaded the Counſellers, and other of the Court, as he was denied giltleſſe of the treaſon: and the matter was ſo debated, and the King intreated to graunt him pardon, as he was accompted moft worthy of his fauour. Then the kyng, by the aduife of hys Counſell, was perſwaded, that by force of hys proclamation, hys daughter ſhould be giuen to Achariſto in mariage, and his kinge-dome for a dowrie, bicause hee had offered his owne heade, accordyng to the effeſte of the ſame. So the kinge repenteſe himſelfe that he had offendēd Achariſto, in the end agreed to the aduife of his Counſell, and gaue him his daughter to wife: whereof Euphimia was ſo ioyful, as they bee that atteyne the ſumme of their heart's deſire. The father liued one whole yeare after this mariage, and Euphimia ſo pleaſant a life for a certayne time, as was poſſible for any Gentlewoman. Hir father was no ſooner dead, but the vnkinde man, nay rather brute beaſte, had forgotten all the benefits receyued of his kinde and louing wife: and hauing by hir onelye

meanes got a Kingdome, began to hate hir so straungely, as he could not abide hir sight, (futch is the property of cancered obliuion, which after it crepeth into ambicuous heads, neuer hath minde of passed amitie, ne regardeth former benefite, but like a monster and deadly ennemy to humaine nature, ouerwhelmeth in his bottomleffe gulfe all pietie and kindnesse) and determined in the ende for recompence of futch great good turnes, to defpoyle hir of hir Lyfe. Howe thinke you, fayre Ladies, was not this a fayre rewarde for the loue, the trauailes and forrowes susteined for this ingrate and vilianous man, by that royal lady, to saue his life, and to take him to husband? Here is manifest (*probatum*) that in a vile and seruyle minde, no vertue, no duety, no receiued benefites can be harboured. Here is a leffon for yong Gentlewomen to beware howe they contemne and despise the graue aduise of theyr auncient fathers. Here they may see the damage and hurt that vnaduised youth incurreth, when negle&tyng theyr Parents holesome admonitions, they gyue themselues to the loue of futch as be vnworthy theyr estate and callyng. For what shoulde ayle the Gentle pucell borne of gentle bloud but to match her selfe in like affinity, and not to care for curryshe kind, or race of churle. Bee there no Gentlemen to be found of personage and beauty worthy to ioyne in loue wyth them? Bee they so precious in nature or tender in education as theyr lyke can not be vouchsafed to couple in mariage yoke? Compare the glysteringe gold to drossie durte, and futch is the difference betweene gentle and vngentle. But perhaps bringyng vp may alter nature, and custome transforme defect of birth: as Licurgus the lawmaker dyd trye betwene the Curiish whelpe and the Spanyell kinde, both by trayning vp running to their contraries, the Spanyel not vsed to hunt eigre vpon the potage dishe, the other nouseled in that pastime pursueng his game. But that Metamorphosis is feldome feene amongs humane sort, and therfore I aduise the gentle kind, to matche themselues in equall lotte, and not to trust Sir Custome's curteſie in choyſe of feere. Returne we then to vnkind Acharisto, who now in full possession of his desired pracie, reuertinge to his puddle of carlishe will and cancered nature, after many thousand wronges don to his most noble and gentle Quene, accused hir to be an adulteresse, and as one indeede,

(although most innocent) she was condemned to the mercilesse fire. Philon, Kyng of Peloponefus, which (as we haue sayd before) loued Euphimia as he did the balles of his owne eyes, vnderstanding the crueltye that this wicked Man vsed towards hir, to whom both his lyfe and Kyngdome did belonqe, moued wyth nobility of mynd, determined to declare to Euphimia the inward feruent loue which he bare hir, and to chastise Acharisto for his ingratitudo with due correction. Wherfore depely debating wyth himselfe of this aduenture, thus he sayde: "Now is the time Euphimia, that Philon shewe what faythful Loue he hath euer borne vnto thee, and that he delyuer thee both from the present daunger wherein thou art, and from the hands of that vnykynde wretche, that is farre vnworthy of sutch a wife: for if thou haddest agreed to thy father's wyll, and yelded to the pursute of him that loued thee beste, thou haddest no neede of rescue nowe, ne yet bene in perill of the wastfull flames of fire, which be ready to consume thy flesh and tender corps, full tenderly sometimes beloued of thy deare father, and of thy louyng frend Philon." When he had spoken those wordes, hee earnestly disposed him self vpon that enterpryse. There was in those daies a custome in Corinth, that they which were condemned to death, were caried 111. miles forth of the City, and there the sentence pronounced against them, were put to execution. Philon hauyng intelligence hereof, did put in readinesse a good troupe of horsemen, and being secretly imbarked, arriued at Corinth, and closely the nyght before Euphimia should be brought to the fire, harde by the place where the miserable Lady should be burnt, into a woode he conueyed his People: and so soone as the Sergeants and officers were approached neere the place wyth the lady, he issued forth, and did set vpon the throng, not sufferyng one of them to remayne aliue, to carye newes. When he had delyuered Euphimia from that present daunger of hir lyfe, and the compayne disperced, he sayd to the Queene: "Nowe thou mayst see (fayre Queene) the diuerfitie, betwene the disloyaltie and vnkindenesse of Acharisto, and the faith and loue of Philon. But for that I meane not to leaue hys ingratitudo vnrevenged, thou shalt staye here, vntyll thou heare newes of the due chastifment which I shall gyue hym." Thoſe

dire and cruell words foretold of hir husband's death moued hir honest and Pyncely hearte that by no meanes could bee altered from the gentle nature, which it first had tafted and receiued: and althoughe shee had suffred Mortall and Solempne iniury of hir vnkynde husbande for Manyfolde Benefites, yet (shee good gentlewoman) woulde permyt no duetye of a trustye and faythfull Wyfe vnperformed. Wherefore shee besoughte Philon vpon her knees, not to procede to further reuenge of Acharisto, telling him, that enough it was for hir to haue escaped that present peryl, from which he like a princely Gentleman had deliuered hir, and therefore duering hir life was most bounde vnto him. Philon greatly wondred at the goodnesse of this Ladie: howbeit the ingratitude of that Varlet by no meanes he would suffer to bee vnpunished. And beeing aduertised that Acharisto remayned in hys Palace without any suspicyon of this aduenture, banded neyther with Guarde or other assurance, committed Euphimia to safe custodie, and sodainly assailed the Palace of Acharisto: and finding the Gates open, he entred the city, crying out vpon the Wickednesse and treason of Acharisto. At which wordes the whole City began to ryse, to helpe Philon in his enterpryse: for there was no state or degree, but abhorred the vnkind order of that Varlet, towards the noble woman their Queene. Philon aided with the people, assaulted the Palace, and in short space inuaded the same: and the Varlet beeing apprehended, was put to death. The Corinthians seeing the noble mind of Philon, and the loue which he bare to Euphimia, and knowing that their late Kyng was disposed to haue matched her wyth Philon, were very willing to haue him to be their Kinge, and that Euphimia should be his wife, supposinge that vnder the gouernement of a Prynce so gentle and valiant, they might liue very happily and ioyefullye. Execution don vpon that moste vnkinde varlet, Philon caused the Lady to be conueyed home into hir royal pallace: and the people with humble submision, began to persuade hir to marie wyth that younge Prince Philon. But shee which had lodged hir thoughts and fixed hir mind vpon that caytife, who vnnaturally had abused hir, would by no meanes consent to take a new husband, saying, that the seconde mariage was not to bee allowed in any woman. And albeit that shee

knewe howe greatly she was bounde to Philon, as duringe life not able to recompence his louing kindneffe and valyante exployte performed for hir safegard, yet for al hir vnhappy fortune, shee was minded styll to remayne a widow, and well contented that Philon shoulde posseffe hir whole domynion and kingdome, and she pleased to lyue his subiecte: which state she sayd, did like her best. Philon, that not for desire of the Kingdome, but for loue of the Lady had attempted that worthy and honourable enterprize, sayd vnto hir: “Euphimia, it was onely for youre sake that I aduentured thys daungerous indeuor, to ridde you from the slander that might haue ensued your innocent death, and out of the cruel hands of hym, whom vnworthily you did so dearely loue. No desyre of kyngdome or worldly glorie induced me herevnto: no care that I had to enlarge the boundes of my countrey foile pricked the courage of my mynd (that is altogether empty of ambytione) but the Passion of careleffe Loue, whych thys long tyme I haue borne you in your happy father’s dayes, to whom I made incessant sute: and to your selfe I was so long a Suter, vntyll I receyued extreame repulfe: for which I vowed a perpetuall fingle Lyfe, vntyll thys occafyon was offred: the brute whereof when I hearde first, so stirred the mynde of your most louyng knight, that drousie sleepe or greedy hunger, coulde not force this restleffe body to tarry at home, vntyl I reuenged my selfe vpon that villaine borne, which went about wyth roasting flames to consume the innocente flesh of hir whome I loued best. And therfore mustred together my men of armes and in secret fort imbarked our felues and arryued here: where wee haue accomplished the thyng we came for and haue settled you in quiet raygne, free from peryl of traiterous mindes, crauing for thys my fact nougnt else of you but wylling mynd to be my wife: which sith you do refuse, I passe not for rule of your kyngdom, ne yet for abode in Corinth, but meane to leaue you to your choyse. For satissified am I, that I haue manifested to the world the greatnesse of my loue, which was so ample as euer king could beare to vertuous Queene: and so farewell.” At which words he made a signe to his people, that they shoulde shippe them felues for return to Peloponesus. But the Senatours and al the people of Corinth feing the curtesie of Philon,

and how greatly their Queene was bound vnto him, fel downe  
vpon their knees, and with ioyned hands besought hir to take him  
to husbande, neuer ceasing from teares and supplication, vntyl  
she had confenteed to their requeste. Then the mariage  
was solempnised with great ioy and triumph, and the  
whole City after that tyme, lyued in great felicity  
and quiet, so long as nature lengthned the  
dayes of thosse two Noble  
Prynces.

## THE SIXTEENTH NOUELL.

*The Marchionisse of Monferrato, with a basket of Hennes, and certaine pleasant wordes, repreffed the fond loue of Philip the French Kynge.*

GOOD Euphimia (as you haue harde) did fondly apply hir loue vpon a seruile man, who though bred vp in court where trayninge and vse doth alter the rude conditions of sutch as be intertayned there, yet voyde of all gentlenesse, and frustrate of Nature's sweetenesse in that curteous kinde, as not exchaunginge natuue fiercenesse for noble aduauncement, returned to hys hoggish foyle, and walowed in the durty filth of Inhumanity, *whose nature myght wel with fork, or staffe be expelled, but home againe it would haue come*, as Horace pleadeth in his Epistles. O noble Gentlewoman, that mildly suffred the displeasure of the good king hir father, who would fayne haue dissuaded hir from that vnseemely match, to ioyne with a yong Prince, a king, a Gentleman of great perfection: and O pestilent Carle, being beloued of so honourable a pucell, that for treason discharged thy head from the block, and of a donghill flauie preferred thee to be a king, wouldest for thosse deserts in the ende frame fayned matter to consume hir. With iust hatred then did the Noble Emperour Claudio Cæsar prosecutē those of bond and seruile kinde that were matched with the free and noble. Right well knew hee that some taste of egrenesse would rest in sutch sauage fruite, and therefore made a law, that the issue of them should not haue like liberty and preheminence, as other had, which agreeably did couple. What harme sutch mariage hath deferred to diuers states and persons (t'auoide other examples) the former Nouell teacheth. Wherfore to ende the same, with bewailing of Euphimia for hir vnluckie lot, begin we now to glad our selues with the wife and stoute aunswer of a chaste Marquesse, a Gentlewoman of singular beauty and discretion, made to the fond demaund of a mighty Monarch, that fondly fell in loue with hir, and made a reckening of that, which was doubtfull to recouer. This king by Louing Hir whome he neuer saw,

fared like the man that in his slepe dreamed that he had in holde the thyng furthest from him. For the King neuer saw hir, before he heard hir praised, and when hee hearde hir praised, for purpose to winne her, he trauailed oute of his way, so sure to enjoy hir, as if he had neuer seene hir. This historie, although briefe, yet sheweth light to noble dames that be purfued by Prynnes, and teacheth them wyth what regarde they ought to interteine such futers. The Marqueffe then of Monferrato, a citye in Italy, beyng a Gentleman of great proweſſe and valiance, was appointed to transfrete the Seas in a generall paſſage made by the Christians, wyth an huge Armie and great furniture. And as it chaunced, vpon a day greate talke was had in the court of king Philip furnamed Lufcus (bicaufe he was poreblinde) who likewyſe was making preparation to depart out of Fraunce in the ſaid iorney. Report was made by a knight which knewe the ſaid Marquize, that in all the world there was not the like maried couple, as the Marquize and his wyfe were, as well bicaufe the Marquize was bruted to be an excellent gentleman, as alſo for that his wyfe amonges al the troupe of Ladies, that liued in the world that time, was the faireſt and moſt vertuous. Which words ſo entred the French king's head, as ſodainely (neuer ſeeing hir in all his life) he began to loue hir, and for that purpose determined to imbarke him ſelfe at Genoua, that by trauailyng that way by lande, he myght haue good occaſion to ſee the Marchioniffe, thinking that her husband being abſent, hee might eaſily obtein that he deſired. And as he had deuized, he began his enterpryſe: who fending al his power before, toke his iorney wyth a meane trayne of Gentlemen: and beyng within one Daye's iourney of the Ladie's Houſe, hee ſent hir worde that the nexte Daye hee would viſite her at Dynner. The ſage and discrete lady ioyfully auſwered the Mesfanger, that ſhe would accomp̄t his comming for a great and ſinguler pleaſure, and ſayd that hys grace ſhould be moſt heartily welcome. Afterwards ſhe maruelled why ſutche a king as he was, would in hir husband's abſence, come to hir houſe: and in that maruel and conſideration ſhe was no whit deceyued, coniecturinge that the fame of hir beauty was the cauſe of hys comminge. Neuertheleſſe, like a wife Lady and honest gentlewoman, ſhe de-

termined to do him honour, and caused the worshipfull of hir country futch as remayned behinde, to be assembled, for aduice in all thinges that were necessary for hys intertaynement. But the feast and variety of meats that shoulde be serued, she alone tooke vpon hir to dispose and order: wherefore speedily fendinge about, and makinge prouision for all the Hennes that might be gotten throughout the countrey, commaunded hir cookes, of thos Hennes without other thing what so euer, to prepare diuers seruices. The king fayled not the next day to come accordingly as he had sent word: and was with great honour receyued of the Lady, and in beholdinge hir, she seemed vnto hym (besides hys imagination comprehended by the former woordes of the Knyght) to be farre more faire, honest and vertuous, than hee thought, attributynge vnto hir, singuler prayse and commendation. And so much the more his desire was kindled, as she passed the estimation bruted of hir. And after that the King had wythdrawen him selfe into the chamberordeined and made ready for him, as appertained to a Prynce so greate, and that dinner time was come, the King and Madame the Marchionisse sat together at one boorde, and other accordyng to their degrees were placed at feueral tables. The King serued with many Dishes and excellent Wynes, beholdinge sometymes the Lady Marchionesse, conceyued great delight and pleasure. But viewing the seruice, and meates (although dressed in diuers sortes) to be but Hennes, he began to wonder, specially knowing the soyle wherein they were to be so rich and plentifull, as by little trauayle, great abundance of Foule and Venifon might haue bin prouided, and thought that she had indifferent leysure to Chafe and Hunt, after that he had sent hir woerde of hys comminge. Notwythstandinge he would not take occasion to enter into talke of those wants of better Cheare (hir Hennes only excepted) who looking vpon hir, with mery Countenaunce hee sayde vnto hir: "Madame were all these Hennes bred in thys countrey wythout a Cock?" The Marchionisse which full well vnderstoode the cause of his demaunde, thinkinge that God had sent hir an apt tyme for aunswere as she desired, boldly aunswered the Kinge: "No and it please your grace, but of Women, albeit in honour and apparell there is some difference, yet they be al made in this Coun-

trey as they be else where." The kyng hearing hir aunsware, right wel did know the occasion of the Banket of Hennes, and whereunto hir wordes did tend: and confidred that to bestow any further talke to so wyse a Lady, it were in vayne, and that force there could take no place. Lyke as vnadvisedly he fell in loue, so it behoued him of neceffity wylly to staunch the fire for his honour sake, and wythout any more taunting wordes, fearing hir reuenge, he dined without hope to get other thinge of hir. And when hee had done, to the intent by hys fodayne departure, he might couer his dishonest comming, thankinge hir for the honour which he had receyued, and sherecommending him to God, he departed to Genoua.

Here may be proued the great difference betweene Wyfedome  
and Folly, betweene Virtue and Vice. The King more  
by Lust, than other desire, by circumstancies endeu-  
oured to sound the deapth of the Ladie's minde:  
she by comely aunsware, payd hym home for  
his folly. A liuely representation of  
a noble creature, so well bedecked  
wyth Vertue as wyth  
Beauty.

## THE SEUENTEENTH NOUELL.

*Mistresse Dianora demaunded of maister Ansaldo a garden so faire in Januare, as in the moneth of May. Mayster Ansaldo (by meanes of an obligation which he made to a Nicromancer) caused the same to bee done. The husband agreed with the gentlewoman that she shold do the pleasure which maister Ansaldo required, who hearinge the liberality of the husband, acquitted hir of hir promise, and the Necromancer discharged maister Ansaldo.*

OF all things commonly accompanying the maner and trade of man's life, nothing is more circumspectly to be attended and prouided for, than regard and estimation of honesty: which attire, as it is most excellent, and comely, so aboue al other vayne Toyes of outward apparell to bee preferred: and as honesty hath all other good Conditions included in it selfe, as the same by any meanes cannot stray out of that tract, troden before by the steppes of that most excellent vertue: euen so, impossible it is for the party adorned with the same, to wander one iote from that fore-trodden Path: wherefore let eche wyght that traceth this worldly Lyfe, foresee the due obseruation of all thinges incident to that which is honest. Nothiuge in thys lyfe (sayth Tully in his oration, for the Poet Archias) is so mucht to bee regarded. Honesty, for the gettinge whereof all torments of body, all perills and daun-  
gers of death be not to be regarded: honesty then beinge a Treasure so precious, what care not onely for the atchieuinge but for the conseruation ought to bee employed? in the practise whereof, one speciall thinge ought to be attended, which is, how a vow or promise ought to be made, or how the estimation of honesty ought to be hazarded for any thinge feeme it neuer so impossible: for what is it that loue and Money hath not brought to passe? what heard aduentures by Iason? what sleight by Alexander the Sonne of kynge Pryamus? what monsters slayne and labours sus-

tayned by Hercules? what daungers and exploits some haue incurred and other attempted by diuers? to bee short,

*Nihil est quod non effreno captus amore, ausit.*

As Ouide the Poet fayth:

*Nothinge there is, but that the louing man doth dare,  
Surprised with frantike fit, eche deed he doth not spare.*

Wherfore let euery wight beware how they gage their honesty for any enterprise (seeme it neuer so impossible). Maistresse Dianora deerely beloued of a gentleman, and earnestly assayled, in the ende yelded vpon a condition: which if it could be brought to passe (which she thought impossible) was content to surrender to his loue: who consulting with a Magitian, performed hir request: then what folowed, and what counsel hir husband gaue hir, after she had broken the effect of hir promise to hym, and what Curtesie was vfed on all fides, the sequele hereof dysclofeth. The Countrey of Frioli although it be colde, yet is it pleasaunt by reason of many faire mountaines, riuers, and cleere sprynges that are in the same: where there is a City called Vdina, and in the same sometime dwellyng a faire gentlewoman called Mistresse Dianora, the wyfe of Gilberto, a notable rich man, a very curteous personage, and of good behauour. This Lady, for hir graces and vertues, was intierly beloued of a Gentleman and great Lord, called maister Ansaldo Grandese, who for his liberalty and valyance in armes, was famous and well knownen: and albeit that hee loued hir feruently, seking al meanes possible to be beloued of hir, soliciting hir many tymes by Anibassadours, yet his labour was in vayn. And the Lady being offended for hys dayly sute and trauyyle, hee for al hir refusall and disagreement to his desire, would not abstaine from louing hir, but still mayntayne his importunate sute: she denising with her selfe how to rid him away, made a request vnto him, so straunge and impossible, (in hir iudgement) as he was not able to bring the same to passe: and vpon a day she sayd vnto an old woman, (the which cam often tymes to sue vnto hir in hys behalf) these words: "Good wife, thou hast many times assured me, that Maister Ansaldo doth loue mee aboue all other, and thou hast offered vnto me maruellous giftes and presents in hys name: al which I haue refused, vpon consideration,

that I mynd not to fauour or loue him for his goods: but if thou canst iustify by warrantize, or other probable argument, that hee loueth me so mutch as thou sayest, I will condescend without fayle to loue him againe and to doe the thing that it shal please him to commaund me: therfore if he wil assure me to do that thing which I shal require hym to do, tel him that I am at his commaundement." "What is that madame," (said the old woman) "that you desire?" "The thing which I demaund" (answered the Gentlewoman) "is, that he should cause to be made here without the Citie, during the moneth of Januarie next commyng, a garden full of greene herbes, floures and trees, bespred wyth leaues, euen as it were in the moneth of May: and if so be that he do it not, then let him neuer send thee or any other vnto me agayn: for if afterwards he be importunate vpon me, like as I haue hitherto kept it close from my husbante and parents, euen so complayning vnto them, I wyll affaye to bee dispatched from hys long and tedious fute." When the knight vnderstoode that request, and the offer that hys Mystresse made him (although it seemed a thinge very difficulte and all most impossible to bee done) knowinge very well that she did the same for none other purpose, but onely to put him out of hope that euer hee should enjoy hir, hee determined notwithstandinge, to proue what hee was able to do. And for that purpose sent to seeke in many places of the Worlde if there were any man that could affist him and geue him Counfel therin. In the ende there was one found that offred to doe it (if he were well waged thereunto) by the art of Necromancie, with whom maister Anfaldo bargained for a great summe of Money. Then he expected the moneth of Ianuarie with great deuotion, whych beeing come, euen when the coldest wether was, and that al places were ful of snow and yce, this Necromancer vsed his art in futch fort, as in the night after the holy dais of Christmasse, in a faire medow adioyning to the city, ther appered in the morning (as they can testify that saw the same) one of the fairest gardens that euer any man saw, full of herbes, trees, and fruities of all sortes: which when maister Anfaldo had seen, God knoweth if he were glad or not: and incontinently caused to be gathered the fairest fruities and floures that were there, and secret-

lye fente the same to his Friende, inuiting hir to come and see the Garden which she had procured him to make, to the intent thereby she might know the loue that he bare hir, and to remember the promise which she made him, and confirmed by othe, that he might from that time forth esteeme hir a woman so good as hir promise. When the Gentlewoman sawe the flowers and fruictes and hearing tell by report of the straunge things that were in that Garden, began to repent hir selfe of the promise which shee had made: but for all her repentaunce, she like one desirous to se straung things, wente wyth many other women to see the same: and hauing praised it, not wythout greate admiration, she returned home, the angriest woman that euer was, when she had considered in what sort she had abused hir selfe by meanes of that Garden: and hir rage was so greate, that she could by no meanes keepe the same so secrete or close, but that her husband muste perceiue the same, who woulde needes knowe of hir al the whole matter: the Gentlewoman a long time kepte it secrete: in the ende she was constrained to declare vnto him the same in order. Hir husbande hearing what she had promised was sodainly very angry: afterwardes considering the pure intente of his wife, hee wisely appeaseid hir, and sayd: "Dianora, it is not the acte of a wyfe and vertuouse wife to encline hir eare to futch messages as those be, and lesse honest to make any marte or bargain of hir honesty with any person, vnder what condicion soeuer it be. Words which the hart receiueth by the eares, haue greater force than many do esteme, and there is nothing so difficult, but by the amorous is brought to passe. First therfore thou hast done euil to give eare vnto such ambassage, and afterwards for agreement to the bargaine: for the weight of chastity is so ponderous, as by no meanes it ought to be laid in balance, eyther by impossibilities to boast and bragge therof, or else by assurance of their conceiued thought to bring it into question, leaste in all places the same may be dysputed vpon, and blemysh with the note of lightnesse, the person tyll that time vnspotted: but bycause I know the purity of thy heart, I wyll agree vnto thee for discharge of thy promise, whych peraduenture, some other would not doe, moued therunto for the feare I haue of the Necromancer, who if he see Mayster

Ansaldo to be offended bicanse thou hast deluded hym, may doe vs some displeasure: wherfore I wyll that thou go to maister Ansaldo, and if thou canest by any meanes to vfe thy selfe (as thyne honour saued) thou mayst discharge thy promife, I shall commende thy wit: but if there be no remedye otherwyse, for that onely time then lende forth thy Body and not thy wyll.” The gentlewoman hearyng hir husband so wisely speake, could doe nought else but weepe, and sayd, that she would not agree to his requeste. Notwythstanding, it pleased the husband (for al the denial whych his wife did make) that it shoulde be so: by meanes wherof, the next morning vpon the point of day the Gentlewoman in the horliest attire she had, with two of hir seruantes before, and hir mayde behinde, wente to the lodging of maister Ansaldo, who when he hearde tell that hys Louer was come to see hym, maruelled mutch, and rising vp, called the Necromancer, and sayde vnto him: “ My wyll is, that thou see how mutch thyne arte hath preuailed:” and going vnto hir, without any disordinate lust, he saluted bir wyth reuerence, and honestly receiued hir. Then they entred into a faire Chamber, and fittyng downe before a great fire, he sayde vnto hir these Wordes: “ Madame, I humbly beseeche you, if the loue which I haue borne you of long time, and yet doe beare, deserue some recompence, that it please you to tell me vnfainedly the cause which haue made you to come hither thus early, and with such a company.” The shamefast Gentlewoman, hir eyes ful of teares, made answere: “ Sir, the loue which I beare you, nor any promised faith haue brought me hither, but rather the only commaundement of my husband, who hath greater respect to the payne and trauaile of your disordinate loue, than to his own honour or my reputation, who hath caused me to come hither, and by hys commaundement am redy for this once to satisfie your pleasure.” If Mayster Ansaldo were abashed at the begynnyng, he much more did maruell when he hearde the Gentlewoman thus to speake, and moned with the liberality of hir husband, he began to chaunge his heate into compasssion, and said: “ Mistresse, God defend if it be true that you do say, that I should soyle the honour of hym, whych hath pity vpon my loue, and therefore you may tarrie here so long as it shall please you,

with futch assurance of your honesty as if you were my naturall fister, and frankly may depart when you be disposed, vpon futch condicion, that you render in my behalf those thanks vnto your husband which you shal thinke conuenient, for the great liberality whych he hath employed vpon me, deeming my selfe henceforth so much bound vnto him, as if I were his brother or Seruaunt.” The Gentlewoman hearing those wordes, the best contented that euer was, sayd vnto him: “All the worlde could neuer make me beleue (your great honesty considered) that other thing could happen vnto mee by my commyng hyther, than that which pre- fently I see: for which I recken my selfe perpetually bounde vnto you.” And takynge hir leaue, honorablye returned in the afore- sayde company home to hir husband, and tolde hym what had chaunced, which engendred perfect loue and amytye betweene hym and mayster Ansaldo. The Necromancer to whom maister Ansaldo determined to gyue the price, couenanting betwene them, feyng the liberality which the husbande had vsed towards mayster Ansaldo, and the like of mayster Ansaldo towards the Gentle- woman, sayd: “God defend, that fith I haue seene the husband lyberall of his honour, and you bountiful of your loue and curtesie, but that I be likewyse franke in my reward: for knowing that it is well employed of you, I purpose that you shall keepe it still.” The knyghte was ashamed, and would haue forced him to take the whole, or part: but in offryng the same, he lost his laboure: and the Necromancer the third day after, hauyng vndon his Garden, and desirous to departe, tooke his leaue.

Thus Ansaldo extinguishing the dishonest loue kindled in hys hearte, for inioying of his Lady, vpon consideration of honest charity, and regard of Curtesie, repreffed his wanton minde, and absteyned from that which God graunte that others by lik Example may refrayne.

## THE EIGHTEENTH NOUELL.

*Mithridanes envious of the liberality of Nathan, and goinge aboute to kill hym, spake unto him vnowne, & being infourmed by himself by what meanes he might do the same he found him in a little wood accordingly as hee had tolde him, who knowinge him, was ashamed, and became his friende.*

STRAUNGE may feeme thys following Hyfstory, and rare amonges those, in whom the vertue of liberality neuer florished: many we reade of, that haue kept Noble and bountifull houses, entertaininge Guestes, both Forrayne and free borne, plentifully Feastinge them with variety of cheere, but to entartayne a Guest that aspyreth the death of his hoast, and to cherishe hym after hee knew of it, or liberally to offer his life, seldome or neuer we reade, or by experience knowe: but what moued the conspirator to frowne at the state and life of Nathan? euen that froward pestilent passion Enuy, the consumer and deadly monstre of all humanity: who imitatinge the like cost, and port of his deuout hoast Nathan, and seekinge after equall glory and fame, was through enuie's force for not attayninge the like, driven to imagine how to kill a good and innocent man: for enuy commonly wayteth vpon the vertuous, euen as the shadow doeth the body. And as the Cantharides (which similitude Plutarch vseth) delight in ripe and prosperous wheate, and crawle in spreadinge roses, so enuy chiefly them which in vertue and richeſſe do abound: for had not Nathan bene famous for hys goodnesſe, and glorious for liberality, Mithridanes would neuer haue prosecuted him by enuy, nor gon about to berieue hys lyfe. He that enuieſt the vertuous and industrious person, may bee compared to Dedalus, whom the Poets fayne to murder Telon hys Apprentice for deuising of the Potter's wheele: and Mithridanes disdaynfull of Nathan's hospitality, would haue slayne him: but how ashamed Mithridanes was of his practife, this example at large discourteth. Very true it is (at least wyſe if credite may bee giuen to the words of certayne Genoua Merchauntes, and of others whych haue trauayled that

countrey) how in Cataya, there was sometimes a rich Gentleman without comparisfon, named Nathan, who hauing a place or Pallace ioyning vpon the high way, by which the trauaylers to and from the West, and East, were constrainyd to passe, and hauing a noble and liberal heart, desirous by experiance to haue the fame to be knownen, and wyth what nature and quality it was affected, he assembled dyuers maister Masons and Carpenters, and in short tyme erected there one of the stateliest Pallaces for greatnesse and costly furniture that euer was feene in that countrey, which afterwards he caused to be stored with all things necessary, honourably to enterteyn ech Gentleman that passed that way: and with a great trayne of seruantes he welcomed and accepted futch as iourneyed to and fro. And in this commendable custome he perfuered so longe as both in the East and West partes, report was bruted of his renoume and fame: and being come to auncient yeares, not for all that weary of his liberality, it chaunced that his fame flewe to the eares of a yong gentleman called Mithridanes, who in a country not farre of from his, had his abode and resiance. Mithridanes knowing himselfe to be so rich as Nathan, enuious of his vertue and liberality, purposyd by some meanes or other to defame and obscure his neyghbour's good reporte: and hauing builded a Palace like to that which Nathan did posseffe, began to vfe curties to thofe which passed to and fro, in outragious and disordred sort: whereby in little time he purchased great fame. Now it chaunced vpon a day, as Mithridanes was alone in the court of his Palace, a poore woman entring in at one of the gates of the same, craued almes, and had it and so succeſſiuely euen to the twelfth and thirteenth time, also ſhe retorneſt agayne, which Mithridanes perceiuing, ſaid vnto her: "Good wyfe you come hither very often:" and yet he denied not hir almes. The old woman hearing thofe words, ſayd: "O how maruellous is the liberality of Nathan, whofe palace hath xxxii. entries by ſeuell gates, ſo greate as this, and daily beggiſt almes there, neuer made ſemblance as though he knew me, and yet the fame was not denied me: and being come hither but xiii. times, I haue bene marked and reprooued:" and ſaying ſo, ſhe went her way, and neuer after came thither agayne. Mithridanes hearyng theſe

wordes to proceede from the old woman fell into a great rage, deeming the fame reported of Nathan to be a diminution of his own, and said: "Ah wretch, when shal I be able to attayne the liberality of Nathan's greatest things? and why then goe I about to excel him, when in litle matters I am not able to come neare him? verily I labour all in vaine, if I myselfe do not seeke meanes to rid him of his life, fith crooked age is not disposed to dispatch him, I must therfore doe the same with myne own hands. And in that fury makyng no man priuy to his intent, he rode forth with a fiall traine, and in three dayes arriued where Nathan dwelte, and then commaunded his men in any wise not to be knownen that they came with him, and likewise that they knewe him not, but to prouide lodging for themselues, vntyll futch tyme as they had further newes from him. Mithridanes then being arriued about evening, al alone, found Nathan walking vp and downe before his faire Palace, without other company than himself, who in simple attire and garment went forth to meeete him: of whom Mithridanes, bicause he knew not Nathan, demaunded if he could tell him where Nathan dwelt. Nathan pleasantly made him answer: "My sonne, ther is no man in these quarters that can better tel thee than I, and therfore yf thou please, I wyll bring thee thither." Mithridanes said, that he should doe hym a very great pleasure: but he would not if it were possible bee seene or knownen of Nathan: "And that can I very wel do," said Nathan, now that I know your mynd. Being then lighted of from his horse, he went with Nathan, who by and by interteined him with diuersity of talk, to his faire Palace: and Nathan incontinently caused one of his seruaunts to take Mithridanes' horse, and said vnto him in hys eare that he should wyth all speede giue order to his houshalde, that none should tel the younge Man that he was Nathan, which accordingly was done: but after they were in the Palace, Nathan brought Mithridanes into a very fayre chambre, that none mighte see him excepte futch as he had appoynted to serue hym: and caufinge greate honour to bee done vnto him, hee hymselfe kepte him company. As they two were together, Mithridanes asked him (to whom hee vsed conuenable reuerence as to his father) what he was? whom Nathan answered: "I am one of Nathan's pore seruaunts, that

from the time of my youth haue bene broughte vp wyth him, and never aduaunced me to any thing but to that which you see: wherefore, although euery man greatly prayfeth him, yet haue I no cause to commend hym." These wordes gaue some hope to Mithridanes, by better aduise and surety to execute his wicked intente: and Nathan asked him very curteously what he was, and for what businesse he was come thither, offeryng him helpe and counsel in that he was able to do. Mithridanes then pausd a while before he would make him answere: and in the ende purposyng to put his trust in him, required with great circumstance of wordes his fayth and after that his counsell and ayde. Then he wholy discouered what he was, wherefore he was come, and the cause that moued hym. Nathan hearing thosse woordes, and the mischievous determination of Mithridanes, was chaunged and troubled in mynde, notwythstanding wythout making any semblaunce of displeasure answered him with bolde countenaunce: "Mithridanes, thy father was a Gentleman, and of stoute stomacke, from whome so farre as I see, thou wylt not degenerate, by attemptyng so great an enterpryse as thou hast done. I intende to be lyberall to ech man and praiſe greatly the Enuye whych thou beareſt to the Virtue of Nathan, bycause if there were many ſutche, the Worlde which is now myſerable, would ſhortly become proſperous and happye: and doe make thee promyſe, that the intent thou goeſt about, ſhall be kepte ſecrete, whereunto I can ſooner gyue Counſell than any great helpe, and mine aduyſe is this: you may ſee from the place where we now be a lyttle Groaue, about a quarter of a Myle hence, whereunto Nathan in a maner walketh euery mornyng, and tarrieth there a long time: there you may eaſily finde him, and do your pleaſure: and if you kyll him, you may goe, (to the intent without daunger you may returne home to your owne Houſe) not that way you came, but by that you ſee on the lefte hand leade out of the wod, whych although it be not ſo common as the other, yet is the neareſt way and ſafeſt for you to paſſe." When Mithridanes was thus informed, and that Nathan departed from him, he cauſed worde ſecrety to be ſent to his Men, which likewyſe lodged there, in what place they ſhould waignt for him the next day: and when the day was com, Nathan not altering the counſel he gaue to Mith-

ridanes, ne chaunging any part of the same, went all alone into the little woodde, to receiue his Death. When Mithridanes was vp, and had taken his bowe and sword, (for he had none other weapons) he mounted vpon his horse, and rode to the little woodde, where a farre of he espied Nathan, commyng thitherward all alone, and determining before he would set vpon him to see him and heare him speake, made toward him, and catchyng him by the band vpon his head, said vnto him : " Old chorle thou art dead." Wher- vnto Nathan made none other answer, but said, " I haue deserued it." When Mithridanes heard his voyce and looked him in the face, he knew by and by that it was he which had curteously receiued him, familiarly kept him company, and faithfully had gyuen him counsel. Wherupon, his fury affwaged, and his anger conuerted to shame: by meanes whereof, throwing downe his sworde which he had drawn to strike him, he lighted of from his horse, and did prostrate himselfe at Nathan his father's feete, and said vnto him weeping: " I manifestly perceiue right louing father your great lyberality, and by what pollicy you be come hyther to render to me your lyfe: whereunto I hauyng no ryght, declared my selfe desyrous to haue the same: but our Lord God, more carefull of my deuoir than my self, hath euen at the very point, when it was moste needfull, opened the eyes of myne vnderstandynge, which cursed spite and cancred enuy haue closed vp: and therefore, the more you were ready to gratify my desire, the greater punishment I knowledge my selfe to deserue for my faulte. Take then of me if it please you sutch vengance as you thynke meete for myne offence." Nathan caused Mithridanes to rise vp, kissinge and imbracinge hym tenderly, and sayd vnto hym : " My sonne, thou needest not to demaund pardon, for the enterprize done, good or euill as thou list to name it: for thou diddest not go about to rid me of my lyfe for any hatred thou diddest bear me, but only to be accompted the better: be assured then of me, and verily beleue, that there is no lyuing man, that I loue better than thy self, considering the greatneffe of thine heart not inclyned to hoorde or gather togither the droffy muck of Syluer, as the myserable do, but to spend that which is gathered. Be not ashamed for hauing a will to kill me, thereby to great re-

nowme: for Emperours and greatest kings, neuer stretched forth their power, and racked their Realnes, and consequently aspired fam, for other purpofe but to kyl: not by murdering one man as thou didſt meane, but of infinit numbers, besides the burning of Countries, and rafing of Cities: wherefore if to make thy ſelue more famous, thou wouldest have killed me alone, thyne enterprife was not newly to be wondred at, but a thyng in dayly practife." Mithridanes no more excuſinge hys wicked intent, but prayſinge the honest excuse, which Nathan had deuifed, drew neare vnto hym to enter into further talke wyth hym, which was, how he greatly maruelled, that he durſt approch the place, with ſo little reſcue, where his death was fworne, and what he meant him ſelue to tell the way and meanes: wherein he required him to ſay his mynde, for diſcloſinge of the cauſe. Whereunto Nathan replied: "Maruell not, Mithridanes, of mine intent and purpose, for fithens I was at age diſpoſed to myne owne free will, and determined to do that which thou haſt gone about to do, neuer any came to me, but I haue contented them (ſo farre as I was hable) of that they diſdemaund: thou art come hither with deſire to haue my lyfe, wherefore ſeeing that thou diſdeſt craue, I forthwith dyd meane to gieue it, that thou alone mighteſt not be the man that ſhould depart from hence without atchieuſing thy requeſt: and to bring to paſſe that thou myghteſt haue the ſame, I gaue thee the beſt Counſel I could, aſwel for hereuning of my lyfe, as for enioyngē of thyne owne: and therefore I ſay to thee agayne, and pray thee for to take it, thereby to content thy ſelue, if thou haue any pleaſure therein: for I do not know whych way better to imploу it. I haue all ready kept it foure ſcore yeaſes, and haue conſummed the ſame in pleaſures, and delights, and do know by course of nature in other men, and generally in all things, that long it cannot reaſt in breathing dayes: wherefore I think good, that better it is to geue, as I haue dayly done, and deparke with my Treaſures, than keepe it till nature cary it away in deſpite of my Teeth, and maugre that I haue. It is a little gift to giue one hundred yeaſes, how muſtch leſſe is it then to giue fiſe or eyght of thoſe I haue to liue? Take it then if it pleaſe thee, I thee beſeech: for neuer yet found I man that diſdeſt the ſame, ne yet do know when I

shall finde futch one, if that thy selfe which didst desire it, do not take it: and if it chaunce that I do finde some one, I know full well that so mutch the longer as I shall keepe the same the leſſe esteemed it shall be, and therefore before the same be vile and of little price, take it I beseech thee.” Mithridanes fore ashamed, sayd: “God forbid, that by separating so deare a thing as is thy life, that I should take it, or onely desire the same, as I did erſt, from which I would not diminish yeaſes, but willingly would of myne owne ad thereto if I could.” Whereunto Nathan by and by replied: “And if thou couldest, wouldest thou gieue them? and wouldest thou cause me do to thee that which I neuer did to any man, that is to ſay, to take of thy things which neuer I did of any liuing perfon?” “Yea verily,” aunſwered Mithridanes. “Then,” ſayde Nathan: “thou oughtest there to doe that which I wyll tel thee: which is to remayne here in my house ſo younge as thou art, and beare the name of Nathan, and I would goe to thine, and bee called Mithridanes.” Then Mithridanes anſwered: “If I had alſo ſo great experience as thou haſt, I woulde not refufe thine offer, but bicaufe I am assured, that my deedes woulde diſminiſh the renoume of Nathan, I wyll not marre that in another, which I cannot redrefſe in my ſelfe: and therefore I wyll not take it.” After thys talke, and a great deale more betwene them, they repayred to the Palace, vpon the reuert of Nathan, where many dayes he did great honour to Mithridanes, incoraging and counſelling him, ſo wel as he could, dayly to perſeuere in his high and great indeuour. And Mithridanes deſirous to returne home with his company, Nathan (after that he had let him well to know, that he was not able to ſurpaſſe him in liberality) gaue him leaue.

## THE NINETEENTH NOUELL.

*Mayster Gentil of Carifendi being come from Modena, tooke a woman out of hir graue that was buried for dead, who after she was come agayne, brought forth a Sonne, which mayster Gentil rendred afterwardes with the mother to mayster Nicholas Chasennemie her husband.*

READING this History, I consider two straung and rare chaunces: the one a lyberall and courteous act of an earnest louer towards his beloued and hir husband, in leauinge hir vntouched, and not dishonored, although in full puissance to doe his pleasure: the other a lyke liberal offre by prefentinge whom he dearly loued, and a newe borne Chylde: both supposed to be dead by hir freendes, and therefore Intoumbed in Graue. Wherewithall is to bee noted the rare and singuler desire of a gentlewoman, by humble sute for conseruation of her honour, although longe time pursued by a Gentleman that reviued hir almost from death, and thought her vtterly to be void of life. To praise the one, and to leauue the other not magnified, it were a part of discutesy: but to extol both with shoutes, and acclamations of infinite praise no dout but very commendable. If comparissons may be made with Prynces of elder yeares, and not to note thos of later, truely Mays-ter Gentil by that hys fact, seemeth not mutch inferior to Scipio Africanus for sparing the wyfe of Indibilis, ne yet to king Cyrus for Panthea the wyfe of Abradatus: although both of them not in equall stafe of loue, (as wholly estranged from that passion) like to maister Gentil, who in deed for subduing that grieve and motion, deserueth greater prayse. For sooner is that torment auoyded at the first assault and pinch, than when it is suffred long to flame and raigne in that yelding portion of man, the heart, which once fed with the bayt of loue, is feldome or neuer loosed. To do at large to vnderstand the prooef of those most vertuous persons, thus beginneth the history. At Bologna a very notable Citty of Lombardy, there was a Knyght of very great respect for his vertue, named maister Gentil Cariffendi, who in his youth fell

in loue with a Gentlewoman called maistresse Katherine, the wyfe of one mayster Nicholas Chaffennemie. And bicause during that loue he received a very ill counterchange for his affection that he bare vnto hir, he went away (like one desperate) to be the iudge and potestate of Modena, whereunto he was called. About the time that hir husband being out of Bologna, and the gentlewoman at hir Manour in the countrey, not past a mile and a halfe from the Citty, (whither she went to remayne, bicause she was with childe) it chaunced that she was sodenly surprised with a fickneffe, which was of so great force, as there was no token of lyfe in her, but rather indged by all Phisitians to be a dead Woman. And because that hir neerest Kinne reported that they hearde hir saye, that shee could not bee longe time with Childe, but that the infante must be perfect in her wombe and ready to be deliuered, and therefore affected wyth some other disease and grieve that would bring hir to hir ende, as a Timpany or other swelling, rising of grosse humors, they thought hir a dead Woman, and past recovery: wherefore vpon a time shee falling into a traunce, was verily supposed to be dead. Who after they had mourned hir death, and bewayled the sodayn expiration of hir soule, caused hir to be buried without hope of recovery (euen as she was in that extasie) in a graue of a church adioyning harde by the house wher she dwelt. Which thing incontinently was aduertised master Gentil by one of his frends, who although he was not likely, as he thought, to attayne hir fauor and in vtter dispayre therof, yet it gryeued him very mutch that no better heede was taken vnto hir, thynking by diligence and time shee woulde haue reuyued agayn, sayinge thus in the end vnto him selfe: " How now madam Katherin, that Death hath wrought his wyll wyth you, and I could neuer obteyne duryng your life one simple looke from thosse youre glistering eies, which lately I beheld to my great ouerthrow and decay, wherfore now when you cannot defend your self, I may bee bold (you being dead) to steale from you some desired kiffe." When hee had sayd so, beyng already Nyght, and hauynge taken order that none should know of his departure, he gan vpon his Horse, accompanied with one only seruaunt, and wythout taryinge anye where, arriued at the place where his Lady was buryed, and

opening the Graue, forthwith he entred in, and laying himselfe downe besides hir, he approched neare hir face, and many times kissed hir, pouryng forthe great abundance of teares. But as we see the appetyte of Man not to be content excepte it proceede further (specially of sutch as bee in loue) beyng determined to tarrye no longer there, and to departe, he sayd: "Ah God, why should I goe no further, why should I not touche hir, why should I not proue whyther she be alyue or dead?" Vanquished then wyth that motyon, hee felt hir brests, and holding his hand there for a certayne tyme, perceyued hir Heart as it were to pant, and thereby some lyfe remayning in hir: wherefore so softly as he could, wyth the helpe of his man, he raised hir out of the graue: and settynge hir vpon his Horfe before him, secretly caried hir home to his house at Bologna. The mother of maister Gentil dwelled there, which was a graue and vertuous Matrone, who vnderstandingy by her sonne the whole effect of that chaunce, moued wyth compassion, vnknowne to anye man, placing hir before a great fire, and comfortyng hir wyth a bathe prepared for the purpose, she recouered lyfe in the Gentlewoman that was supposed to bee deade, who so soone as she was com to hir self, threw forth a great figh and sayd: "Alas, wher am I now?" To whom the good old woman sayd: "Be of good cheere swete hart, yee bee in a good place." The Gentlewoman hauing wholly recouered hir senses, and looking round about hir, not yet well knowing where she was, and seing maister Gentill before hir, prayed his mother to tell hir how she came thither. To whome maister Gentil declared in order what he had done for hir, and what meanes he vsed to bryng hir thyther: wherof makyng hir complaynt, and lamentyng the lyttle regard and neglygence of hir frends, she rendred vnto hym inumerable thankes. Then she prayed him for the Loue which at other times he bare hir and for his courtesie, that she might not receyue in hys house any thing that should be dishonorable to hir person, ne yet to hir husband, but so soone as it was Daye to suffer hir to goe home to hir owne House: whereunto maister Gentil answered: "Madam, what soeuer I haue desired in time past, now am I fully purposed neuer to demaund any thyng specially in this place or in any other but the safety of your honour, and that I

would doe to myne owne sister, sith it hath pleased God to shewe me that pleasure, as by my meanes you are reuived from death to life, and to delyuer you to mee in consideration of the loue that I haue born you heretofore: but this good worke, which this Nyghte I haue done for you, well deserueth some recompence. Wherefore my desire is, that you deny me not the pleasure which I shall demaund:" whome the gentlewoman curteously answered, that shee was very ready, so the same were honest and in hir power to doe. Then sayd mayster Gentil: "Mystresse, all your kin and al they of Bologna, doe beleue for a trouth that you bee deade, wherefore there is none that loketh for your recouery agayne: and the pleasure then whych I demaund, is that you wyll vouchsafe secretlye to tarry here wyth my mother, vntill I retourne from Modena, which shal be with so great expedition as I can: and the cause why I desire the same, is, for that I intend to make a fayre and acceptable present of you vnto your husband in the presence of the principal of this City." The gentlewoman knowing hir self to be greatly bound to the knight, and that hys request was honest, was content to doe what hee demaunded. Albeit shee desired earnestly to reioyce hir frendes for hir recouered life, and so promised vpon hir faith. And vnnethes had she ended hir talke, but she felt the pain of chyldbirth: wherfore wyth the ayde of the mother of maister Gentil, she tarried not long before she was deliuered of a fayre Sonne, which greatly augmented the ioy of maister Gentil and hir. Mayster Gentil commaunded that she should haue al thyngs that were necessary to be ministred vnto hir, and that she should be vsed as his owne Wyfe. Then he pruily returned to Modena, where when he had a while supplied his office, he returned to Bologna, and prepared a great feast at his house, the same morning that he arriued, for diuers gentlemen of the city, amongs whom Nicholas Chafennemie was one. When the company of the bidden guests wer com, (the gentlewoman in so good health and lykyng as euer she was, and hir Child wel and lusty), he sate down amongs them doing vnto them incomparable myrth and pastime, and serued them bountifullly wyth dyuers sortes of meates. When dinner was almost done, hauing before told the Gentlewoman what he ment to doe, and in what manner

she should behaue hir selfe, he began thus to say: "My Maysters, I do remember that whilom I haue hearde tell that in the Country of Perfia, there was a goodly custome (as me seemeth) that when som one was disposed to do great honour vnto his friend, he bad hym home to his houfe, and there shewed him the thing whych he loued best, were it wyfe, woman, or daughter, or what so euer it were, affirming that like as he disdayned not to shew the same, which outwardly he loued best, euen so he would if it were possible, willingly disconer his owne heart: whych custome I purpose to obserue in this City. Ye of your curtesie haue vouchsafed to do me so great honour, as to repayre vnto this my simble feast, which benefite I wyl recompence after the Persian manner, by shewing vnto you the thinge which I loue moste deereley aboue any in this worlde, or hereafter shal be able to loue so long as my life endureth: but before I doe the same, I pray you to tell mee your opynyon in a doulte whych I shall propose. There was a certayne person whych in hys house had a good and Faythfull Seruaunte who became extremely sick: that Person without attenyng the end of his diseased seruaunt, caused him to be caried into the midst of the streate wythout any further care for him. In the meane tyme there came a straunger by, who moued by compassion of the sicke seruaunt, bare him home to his owne houfe, where wyth great care and diligence, sparing no cost or charge, made him to recouer his former healthe: I would now fayne know of you, whither for retaining and vsing the seruice of that seruaunt, his first maister by good right myghte complayne vpon the seconde, if he should demaund hym agayne, or by demaunding of him agayne, the seconde not disposed to restore him, might susteyne any damage." The gentlemen after many opinions and arguments debated too and fro amonges them, and at length all concluding in one mind, gaue charge to Nicholas Chasennemie, (bicause he was an eloquent talker) to make the answer: who first praising the Persians custome, said that he was, (with the rest) of this opinion, that the first maister had no further title in his seruaunt, hauing in sutch necessity not onely forsaken him, but throwen him into the streate, and that for the good turnes whych the seconde maister had don him, he ought by good right to be hys: wherefore by kepyng

him, he did no wrong, force, or iniury to the first. Al the rest at the Table (which were very discret and honest persons) sayd altogytther that they were of hys opinion. The knight content with that answer, and specially bycause Nicholas Chasennemie had pronounced it, affyrmed that hee was likewyse of that minde, and afterwards he sayd: "Time it is then that I render vnto you the honor which you haue done me, in manner accordyngly as I haue promyfed. Then he called vnto him two of hys Seruaunts, and sent them to the Gentlewoman, whom hee had caused to be apparelled and decked very gorgeously, praying hir by hir presence to content and satissie al the company. And she taking in hir armes hir little faire sonne, came into the hall, accompanied with the two Seruautes, and was placed (as it pleased the kynght) besides a very honest gentleman, and then he sayde: "Syr, behold the thing which I loue best, and purpose to loue aboue all worldly things, and whither I haue occasion so to doe, your eyes may bee Judges." The gentlemen doing their reuERENCE unto hir, greatly praised hir, and said to the Knight that ther was good reaSON why she oughte to be beloued: Vpon which commendations they began more attentyuely to behold hir, and many of them would haue sayd and sworne that it had bin shee in deede if it had not bin thought that she had bin dead. But Nicholas beheld hir more than the rest, who very desirous to know what she was, could not forbeare (when he saw that the Knight was a little departed from the place) to aske hir whyther shee was of Bologna, or a straunger. When the Gentlewoman saw hir husband to ask hir that question, she could scarce forbeare from making aynswere, notwithstanding to atchieue that whych was purposed, she helde hir peace. Another asked her yf that little Boye was hers: And another if shee were the Wyfe of maister Gentil, or any kin vnto hym: vnto whom shee gaue no answere at all. But when maister Gentil came in, one of the straungers sayd vnto him: "Syr, thy gentlewoman is a very good creature, but she seemeth to be dumbe. Is it true or not?" "Syr, sayde maister Gentil, "that is but a little argument of hir vertue for this time to hold hir peace." "Tell vs then (sayde he) what is she?" "That wil I do very gladly," sayd the knight, "vnder condition that none of you shall remoue out of his place for

any thing I speake, vntill I haue ended my tale : ” which request being graunted, and the table taken vp, maister Gentil which was set downe by the Gentlewoman, sayd : “ My maysters, this gentlewoman is the loyall and faithful seruant, of whom earst I propounded the question, whom I haue releueed from amids the streate, whither hir kin, little caring for hir, threw hir as a vile and vnproufitable thing : and haue by my great care brought to passe, that I haue discharged hir from death, vpon an affection which God knoweth to be so pure and perfect, as of a lumpe of dead lothsome flesh hee hath reuiued so fayre and freshe as you see : but to the intent you may more playnly vnderstand how it is come to passe, I will open the same in few words.” And beginning at the day when he fell in loue with hir, he particularly told them, what had chaunced till that time, to the great maruell and admiration of them that heard him, and then added these woordes : “ By meanes whereof, if your minde be not chaunged within this litle time, and specially master Nicholas, of good right she is my wife, and none by iust title can clayme hir.” Whereunto none at al made answere, looking that he shoulde haue proceeded further. In the meane while Nicholas and the rest that were there, fell into earnest weeping. But maister Gentil, rising from the borde and taking in his armes the litle childe, and the gentlewoman by the hand, went towardes Nicholas, and sayd vnto him : “ Rife vp sir goffip, I do not restore vnto thee thy Wife, whom thy frends and householde did cast into the Streat, but I will geue thee this Gentlewoman my Goffip, with the litle childe, that is, as I am assured begotten of thee, for whom at the christening I made answere and promise, and called him Gentil, and do pray thee that she be no lesse esteemed of thee now (for being in my house almost three moneths) than she was before. For I swere by the almighty God, who made me in loue with hir, (peraduenture that my loue might be the cause of hir preseruation) that she never liued more honestly with hir father, mother, or with thee, than she hath done in company of my mother.” When he had sayd so, he returned towards the Gentlewoman, and sayd vnto hir : “ Maistresse, from this time forth, I discharge you of the promise which you haue made me, and leaue you to your husband franke and free.” And when he

had bestowed the gentlewoman, and the chylde in the fathers armes, he returned to his place agayne. Nicholas ioyfully receyued his Wyfe and childe, for the whych so mutch the more he reioyfed, as hee was furthest of from hope of hir recouery, rendering inumerable thankes to the Knight and the rest, and moued with compassion hee wept for company, greatly praysing maister Gentil for that act, who was commended of ech man that heard the reporte thereof. The Gentlewoman was receiued into hir houfe wyth maruellous ioye : And longe tyme after she was gazed vpon by the Citizens of Bologna, as a thing to their great wonder reuived agayne.

Afterwards Maister Gentil  
continued styll a friend  
vnto Nicholas, and  
vnto hys Wyfe  
and Chyl-  
dren.

## THE TWENTIETH NOUELL.

*Saladine in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receyued into the house of mayster Thorello, who went ouer the Sea, in company of the Christians, and assignd a terme of his wyfe when she shold mary agayne. He was taken, and caried to the Sovldan to be his Faulconer, who knowing him, and suffering himself to be knownen, did him great honour. Mayster Thorello fell sicke, and by Magique Art, was caried in a night to Pavie, where he found his wyfe about to mary agayne, who knowinge him, returned home with him to his owne house.*

VERY comely it is (sayeth Cicero in the seconde booke of hys Offices,) that Noblemens houses shold styll be open to noble Guestes and Straungers. A saying by the honourable and other Estates to be fixed in sure remembraunce, and accordingly practised: For hospitality and houshold intertayntment, heaping vp double gayne and commodity. The Guest it linketh and knitteth in fast band of perfect friendship, common familiarity, disporte of mynde and pleasent recreation, the poore and needy it feedeth, it cherishest, it prouoketh in them deuout prayers, godly blessings, and seruice in tyme of neede. Hospitality is a thing so diuine, as in law of Nature and Chryst, it was well and brotherly obserued. Lot disdayned not to receyue the Aungels, which were straungers vnto him, and by reason of hys common vse thereof, and theyr freudly intertayntment, he and his houshold was delyuered from the daunger of the City, escaped temporal fire, and obteined heauenly rewarde. Abraham was a friendly host to straungers, and therefore in his old dayes, and in the barren age of his wyfe Sara, he begat Isaac. Ietro albeit he was an Ethnicke and vnbeleuyng man, yet lyberally intertained Moyses, and maried him to Sephora, one of his Daughters. The poore widow of Sarepta interteined Helias, and Symon the Currior disdayned not Peter, nor Lydia the purple filke woman, Paule and his fellowes. Forget not Hospitality, (faith the said Apostle Paule,) for wyth the same diuers haue pleased Aungels by receiuing them into theyr houes. If Paule

the true preacher of eternall Healthe, hath so commended kepyng of good Houses which by the former terme wee call Hospitality, then it is a thing to bee vsed amonges those that bee able to mainteine the same: who ought with liberal hand frankly to reach bread and vi&tualls to their acquaintance, but specially to straungers, whych wandering in forein places, be vtterly vnable to helpe themselfues, and peraduenture in sutch neede, as without sutch curtesie, do perishe. For the further amplification of whych vertue, what shall I neede to remember straunge and prophane Histories? as of Symon of Athens, who was so famous in the same, as the tyrant Crytias, when he wished for the ryches of Scopades and the victories of Agefilaus, forgat not also to craue the liberality of Cimon. Pacuuius also, the Prynce of Campania, so friendly entertained Annibal, as when his sonne to do the Romanes a good turne, would haue killed him as he sat at supper, was staied by his fathers request (whom he made priuy of his intent before they fate downe.) Pacuuius had he not more regarded the office of hospitality, than the safety of his countrey, might ful wel by that murder, haue defended the same from the destruction whereunto afterwards it fel. Homere reporteth, that Menelaus fighting a combat with Paris of Troy made inuocation and prayer vnto the Gods, that he might be reuenged vpon him for the rape of his wife Helena, to the intent the posterity hearing of his punishmente, mighte feare to polute friendly housholde interteynment. Wherefore, sith hospitality hath bene thus put in vse in elder tyme, practysed in all ages, and the poluters of the same detested and accursfed, and hath notorious commodities incident vnto it, I deeme it so worthy to be frequented in noble men and all degrees, as theyr Palaces and great houses shoulde swarne wyth guests, and their gates lustring with whole multitudes of the poore to be satissified with relief. Sutch hath ben the sacred vse and reuerent care of auncient tyme. Sutch hath bene the zealous loue of those whose fieldes and barnes, closets, and chestes haue bene stored and stufed with worldely wealth, that comparing that golden age, glistering with piety and vertue, to these our worsse than copper days, cancred with all corruption, we shal find the match so like, as darke and light, durt and Aungell golde. Ceasing then of further discourse hereof,

this history folowing shall elucidate and displaye the mutuall beneuolence of two noble personages, the one a mighty Souldan, an enimy of God, but yet a fryende to thos that fauored good enter-tainment and houfekyng: the other a Gentleman of Pauie, a rich and liberall marchaunt, and a friendly welcomer of straungers. The Souldan demaunding the way to Pauie, somewhat digressing from the same, is not onely honourably conueyed to Pauie, and feasted there, but also sumptuously cheryshed, banketted, and rewarded by the sayd Marchant before his commyng thyther. The merchant man desirous to be one of the hollye voyage intended by christian Princes, passed ouer the feas, who put to his shiffts there throughe the aduerse lucke receyued by the Christians, became the Souldans Fawconer, and afterwardes knownen vnto him by certaine markes and signes, is with greater honor intartained of the Souldan, and more richly guerdoned, sent home agayne by Magike Arte to anticipate the mariage of his wife, vnto whom he had prefixed a certaine date and terme to marry againe if before that tyme, he did not returne. All which Noble entertainment, and the circum-stances thereof, in this manner do begin. In the time of the Empe-roure Fredericke the firste, the Chrystians to recouer the Holy Lande, made a generall voyage and passage ouer the Sea. Saladine a most vertuous Prynce, then Souldan of Babylon, hauing intelligence thereof, a certayne time before, determined in his own person to see and espy the preparation which the Christian Princes made for that passage, the better to prouide for his owne, and hauing put order for his assayres in *Ægypt*, making as though he would go on Pilgrimage, tooke his iourney in the apparel of a Marchant, accom-panied only with two of his chiefest and wifest counsellers, and three seruaunts. And when he had searched and trauelled many christian prouinces, and riding through Lumbardy to passe ouer the Mountaynes, it chaunced that betweene Millan and Pauy, somwhat late he met wyth a gentleman named mayster Thorello de Istria of Pauy, who with his houfhoulde, his dogges and hawkes, for his pleasure went to soiorne in one of his Manours, that was delectably placed upon the ryuer of Tefino. And when maister Thorello sawe them come, thinckinge that they were certayn Gentlemen straungers, he desired to do them honour. Wherfore

Saladine demaunding of one of mayster Thorello his men, how farre it was from thence to Pauie, and whether they might come thither time inough to go in, master Thorello would not suffer his man to speake, but he himself made aunswere, saying: "firs, yee cannot get into Pauie in time, for that the Gates will be shut before your comming." Than sayd Saladine: "tell us then wee pray you, bicause we be straungers, where wee may lodge this night." Maister Thorello sayd: "That will I willingly do, I was about euen prefently to send one of my men that be here, so far as Pauie, about certayne businesse, him wil I appoint to be your guide to a place where you shall haue very good lodging," and callinge one of his wyfes men vnto him, he gaue him charge of that he had to do, and sent him with them, after whom he followed: where incontynently in so good order as he could, caused to be made redy a sumptuous supper, and the tables to be couered in a pleasant garden. Afterwards hee went himselfe to entertayne them. The seruaunt talking with the Gentlemen of many thinges, conducted them at leysure somwhat out of the way to protract the time, to his maysters house: and so soon as maister Thorello espied them, he with liberall heart and bountifull mynde bad them welcome. Saladine which was a very wyse man, well perceyued that the Gentleman doubted that they woulde not haue come vnto hym if he had inuited them at their first meetinge, and for that cause, to the intent they should not refuse to lodge at his house, he had pollitiquely caused them to be conducted thither, and aunsweringe hys greeting, sayd: "Syr, if a man may quarrell with them that be curteous, wee may complayne of you, who leauinge a part our way which you haue caused somewhat to be lengthened, without deseruinge your good will, otherwise than by one onely salutation, you haue constrainyd vs to take and receyue this your so great curtefie." The wife and well spoken Knight, sayd: "Syr, thy curtefie which you receyue of me, in respect of that which belongeth vnto you, as by your countenaunce I may wel coniecture, is very small, but truely out of Pauie ye could haue got no lodging that had ben good: and therefore be not displeased I pray you to be caried out of the way, to haue a little better intertainment," and saying so, his men came forth to receyue those straungers, and

when they were lighted, their horfes were taken and conveyed into the stables, and mayster Thorello caryed the three Gentlemen to their chambers, which he had prepared for them, where their Bootes were pulled of, and excellent wyne brought forth, somewhat to refresh them before supper: then he held them with plefaunt talke vntyll the houre of supper was com. Saladine and they which were with him, could all speake Latine, and therefore well vnderstood, and they lykewise vnderstoode eche man, by meanes whereof euery of them, thought that the Gentleman was the most curteous and best conditioned Personage, indued with the most eloquent talke that euer they sawe. On the other side it seemed to mayster Thorello, that they were the noblest and Princelik personages, and far more worthy of estimation then he thought before. Wherfore, he was very angry wyth himselfe, that he had no greater company and better intertainment for them that night, which he purposed to recompence the next day at dinner. Wherfore hee sent one of hys men to Pauie, being not farr from thence, to his wife, that was a very wife and noble gentlewoman, and afterwards he brought them into the garden where he curteously demaunded what they were. To whom Saladine answered: "we be marchaunts of Cypres trauailing to Paris, about our businesse." Then said maister Thorello: "I would to God that this country brought forth such gentlemen as the land of Cypres maketh marchants," and so passed the time from one talke to another, vntyll supper time came: Wherfore to honour them the better caufed them to sit downe at the Table, euery of them according to his degree and place: And there they were excedingly wel intreated and serued in good order, their supper being farre more bountifull than they looked for. And they fate not longe after that the table was taken away, but maister Thorello supposing them to be weary, caused them to be lodged in gorgeous and costly beds: and he likewyse within a while after went to bed. The seruaunt sent to Pauie, did the message to his mistresse, who not like a woman wyth a womanish heart, but like one of Princely Mind, incontinently caused many of her husband's frends and seruaunts to be sent for. Afterwards she made ready a great feast, and inuited the noblest and chiefest Citizens of the City: ap-

parelling hir houfe wylth clothe of gold and filke, tapistrie and other furnitures, putting in order all that which hir husbant had commaunded. The next day in the morning the Gentleman rose, with whom maister Thorello mounted on horsebacke, and caryng with him his Hawks, he brought them to the Ryuer, and shewed them diuers flightes. But Saladine demaunding where the best lodgynge was in Pauie, maister Thorello sayd: "I wyll shew you my selfe, for that I haue occasion to go thither." They beleeuing him, were contented, and rode on their way, and being about nine of the clock, arruined at the City, thinking they shold haue ben brought to the best Inne of the towne: but maister Thorello conueyed them to his owne houfe, where fiftye of the chiefest Citizens ready to receiue them sodaynly appeared before them. Which Saladine, and they that were wylth him perceyuinge, conieuctured by and by what that dyd meane, and sayd: "Maister Thorello, this is not the request whych wee demaunded, your entertainment yesternight was to sumptuous and more then we desired, wherefore giue vs leaue we praye you to departe." Whom maister Thorello answered: "My maisters, for that which ye receyued yesternight I wil giue thanks to Fortune, and not to you: for I ouertaking you by the way, forced you in a maner to make your repayre vnto my homely houfe: but for thys morninge voyage, I haue my selfe prepared, and likewyse the Gentlemen about you, with whom to refuse to dine, if you thincke it curtefie, doe as yee please." Saladine and his companions vanquished wylth futch perswuation, lighted, and being receiued by the Gentlemen in louing and curteous order, were conueied to their chambers, which were richly furnished for them, and hauing put of their riding apparel, and somewhat refreshed themselues, they came into the Hall, where all things were in rediness in triumphant sorte. Then Water was brought them to washe, and they placed at the Table, were serued wylth many delicate meats in magnificent and royal order, in futch wise, as if the Emperour himselfe had bene there coulde not haue bene better entartayned. And albeit that Saladine and his companions were great Lordes, and accustomed to see maruey- lous thynges, yet they wondred very mutch at thys, considering the degree of the Knight, whom they knewe to bee but a Citizen

and no Prynce or great Lord. When dinner was done, and that they had talked a little together, the weather waxing very hot, the Gentlemen of Pauie, (as it pleased mayster Thorello) went to take their rest, and he remayned wyth his three Guests: with whom he went into a chamber, where to the intent that nothing which he had and loued might be vnseene, caused his honest Wyfe to be called forth: who being very beautiful and wel fauored, clothed in rich and costly array, accompanied with her two yong sonnes, which were like to Aungels, came before them, and gratiously saluted them. When they saw her, they rose vp, and reuerently receiued hir, then they caused hir to sit downe in the mids of them, sporting and dalyng with hir two fayre sonnes. But after she had pleasantly entred in talk, she asked them of whence they were, and whither they were going? To whom the Gentlemen made the same aunswere that they had done before to maister Thorello. Then the Gentlewoman sayd vnto them with smilinge cheere: "I perceyue then that mine aduice being a woman, is come well to passe. And therefore I pray you, that of your special grace you will do me this pleasure, as not to refuse or disdain the litle present that I shall bring before you, but that you take it, in consideracion that women according to their little ability, giue little things, and that yee regard more the affection of the person whych offreth the gift, then the value of the giuen thing." And causing to be brought before euery of them two fayre Roabes, the one lined with filke, and the other with Meneuayr, not in fashyon of a Citizen, or of a Marchant, but Noblemanlike, and III. Turkey gownes with sleeues of Taffata, lined with linnen cloth, she sayde vnto them: "Take I pray you these roabes, with the like whereof this day I apparelled my husband, and the other things may also serue your turnes, although they be little worth, considering that yee be farre from your Wyues, and the greatnesse of your iorney, which you haue taken, and haue yet to make, and also for that Marchantmen loue to be neat, and fine in things appertinent to their bodies." The Gentlemen mutch maruelled, and playnly knew that Maister Thorello was disposed not to forget any one part of curtefie towards them, and doubted (by reason of the beauty and richeffe of the roabes not marchantlike,) that they

should not be knowne of mayster Thorello, notwithstandinge one of them aunswered her: "These be (Gentlewoman) very great gifts, and ought not lightly to be accepted, if your intreathy did not constraine vs, against which no denial ought to be made." That done, when mayster Thorello returned into the chamber, the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue, and went hir way: and then shee furnished the seruants with diuers other things necessary for them, and Mayster Thorello obtayned by earnest request, that they should tary all that day. Wherefore after they had rested themselues a while, they did put on their roabes, and walked forth on horsebacke into the Citty: and when supper tyme was come, they were bountifully feasted in honorable company: and when bed time approched, went to rest. And so soone as it was day they rose, and founde in steade of their weary Hackneyes, three fat and fayre Palfreyes, and also the like number of fresh and mighty horfes for their seruaunts: Which Saladine seeing, turned towardes his companions, and sayd vnto them: "I sweare by God that ther was neuer a more liberall Gentleman, more courtcouis or better conditioned than this is. And if Christian kings for their part be futch, I meane indued with futch kingly qualities as this Gentleman is, the Souldan of Babylon shall haue inough to do to deale with one, and not to attend for all those which we see to be in preparation for inuasion of his Country." But seeing that to refuse them or render them agayne, serued to no purpose, they thanked him very humbly, and got vpon their horse. Mayster Thorello wyth many of his frends, accompanied them out of the Citty a great peece of the way: And albeit that it mutch greeued Saladine to depart from mayster Thorello (so farre in he was already in loue with him) yet being constrainyd to forgo his company, hee prayed him to returne, who although very loth to depart, sayd unto them: "Syrs, I will be gone, sith it is your pleasure I shall so do, and yet I say vnto you, that I know not what you be, ne yet demaund to know, but so farre as pleafeth you. But what soeuer yee be, you shall not make me beleue at this tyme, that yee be marchauntes, and so I bid you farewell." Saladine hauing taken hys leaue of thos that accompanied mayster Thorello, answered him: "Syr, it may come to passe, that we may let you see

our marchaundise, the better to confirme your beleefe.” And so departed. Saladine then hauing thus taken his leaue, assuredly determined if he liued, and that the Warres he looked for did not let him, to do no leffe honor to mayster Thorello, then he had done to him, and fell into great talke with his companions of him, of his Wyfe and of his things, acts and deedes, greatly praysing all his entretayntment. But after he had trauayled and vewed al the west parts, imbarkeinge himselfe and his company, he returned to Alexandria, throughly informed of his enemies indeuors, prepared for his defence. Mayster Thorello returned to Pauie, and mused a long time what these three might be, but he coulde not so mucht as gesse, what they were. When the tyme of the appoynted passage for the Chryfians was come, and that great preparation generally was made, Mayster Thorello notwithstandinge the teares and prayers of his Wyfe, was fully bent to go thither, and hauinge set all thinges in order for that Voyage, and ready to get on horsebacke, he fayd vnto hir whom he perfectly loued: “Sweete Wyfe, I am goinge as thou seest, this Iourney, aswell for myne honour sake, as for health of my soule: I recommende vnto you our goodes and honor: And bycause I am not so certayne of my retourne, for a thousand accydentes that may chaunce, as I am sure to goe, I praye thee to doe mee thys pleasure, that what so euer chaunceth of mee, yf thou haue no certayne newes of my life, that yet thou tarry one yeare, one Moneth, and one day, the same terme to begin at the day of my departure.” The Gentlewoman whych bytterly wept, answered: “I know not dear husband how I shal be able to beare the forrowe wherein you leaue mee, if you goe awaye: But yf my Lyfe bee more stronge and sharpe, than forrowe it selfe: and whether you lyue or dye, or what so euer come of you, I wyll lyue and dye the Wyfe of Mayster Thorello, and the onely spouse of hys remembraunce.” Whereunto mayster Thorello fayde: “Sweete Wyfe, I am more than assured that touching your selfe, it wyll proue as you do promise: But you beyng a younge Woman, fayre, and well allied, and your Vertue greate and well knowne throughoute the Countreye, I am sure that many greate Personages and gentlemen (if any suspytyon bee conceyued of my Death) wyll make requestes to your brethren and Kindred, from whose purfute

(althoughe you be not disposed,) you can not defende your selfe, and it behoueth that of force, you please theyr wil, whych is the onely reason that moueth mee to demaunde that terme, and no longer tyme." The Gentlewoman sayd: " I wil doe what I can for fulfilling of my promyse: And albeit in the ende that I shall bee constrainyd to doe contrary to my lykyng, be assured that I wyll obey the charge whych nowe you haue gyuen me: And I moste humbly thanke Almyghty God, that hee neuer brought vs into these termes before this tyme." Theyr talke ended, the Gentlewoman weepyng embraced mayster Thorello, and drawyng a Ryng from hir Fynger, she gaue it hym, sayinge: " If it chaunce that I dye before I see you, remember me when you shal beholde the same." He receiuinge the ring, got vp vpon his horse, and takinge his leaue, went on hys voyage, and arriued at Genoua shippid himself in a Galley, and toke his way, whereunto wind and weather so fauored, as wythin fewe dayes he landed at Acres, and ioyned wyth the army of the Chrystyans: wherein began a great mortalyte and Plague, duryng which infection (what so euer was the cause) eyther by the industrie or Fortune of Saladine the rest of the Chriftians that escaped were almost taken and surprised by him, without any fighte or blowe stricken. All which were imprysoned in many cities, and deuided into diuers places, amongs whych prysoners maister Thorello was one, who was caryed captiue to Alexandria, where beyng not knowne, and fearyng to be knowne, forced of necessitie, gane him selfe to the keepyng of Hawkes, a qualitie wherein he had very good skyll, whereby in the ende hee grew to the acquaintance of the Souldan, who for that occasion (not knowing him that time) toke hym out of pryson, and retayned him for his Fawconer. Maister Thorello which was called of the Souldan by none other name than Chrystian, whome hee neyther knewe, ne yet the Souldan him, had none other thing in his mynde and remembraunce but Pauia, and manye tymes assayed to escape and run away: But he neuer came to the poynt: Wherfore dyuers Ambassadoures from Genoua being come to Saladine, to raunsome certayne of theyr Prisoneours, and being ready to returne, hee thought to wryte vnto his wyfe, to let hir know that he was aliuie, and that hee would come home so

foone as he coulde, praying hir to tarry his retourne: Which was the effecte of hys Letter: verye earnestly desiring one of the am-bassadours of his acquayntaunce to doe so much for hym as safely to delyuer those Letters to the Handes of the Abbot of *S. Pietro in ciel Doro*, whych was hys Vnkle. And Mayster Thorello standing vpon these termes, it chaunced vpon a day as Saladine was talking with him of his Hawkes, Thorello began to smyle and to make a Iesture wyth hys mouth, whych Saladine beyng at his house at Pauie did very well note, by which act Saladine began to remember him, and earnestly to viewe hym, and thought that it was he in deede. Wherefore leauing his former talke, he sayd: "Tell me Chryftian of what countrey art thou in the West parts?" "Sir" sayd Mayster Thorello, "I am a Lombarde, of a City called Pauie, a poore man and of meane estate." So foone as Saladine heard that, as assured wheroft he doubted, said to himself: "God hath giuen me a time to let thys man know how thankfully I accepted his curtesy that hee vsed towards me, and without any more words, hauing caused all his apparell in a chamber to be set in order, he broughte him into the same and sayd: "Behold Christian, if amonges al these roabes, there be any one which thou hast feene before. Maister Thorello began to looke vpon them, and saw those which his wyfe had giuen to Saladine: but he could not beleue that it was possible that they should be the same, notwithstanding hee answered: "Sir, I knowe them not, albeit my mind giueth me that these twayne do resemble the roabes which sometimes I ware, and caused them to be giuen to three marchaunt men that were lodged at my house." Then Saladine not able to forbear any longer, tenderly imbraced him, saying: "You be maister Thorello de Istria, and I am one of the three Marchaunts to whom your wife gaue those roabes: and now the time is come to make you certenly beleue what my marchaundise is, as I tolde you when I departed from you that it myght come to passe." Maister Thorello hearyng those wordes, began to be both ioyfull and ashamed, ioyfull for that he had entertained sutch a guest, and ashamed that his fare and lodging was so simple. To whom Saladine sayd: maister Thorello, sith it hath pleased god to fend you hither, thynke from henceforth that you be Lord

of this place and not I." and making great chere, and reioysing one wyth an other, he caused him to be cloathed in royll vestures, and brought him into the prefence of al the Noble men of his country: and after he had reherfed many thinges of his valor and commendation, commaunded him to be honoured as his owne perfon, of all thofe which desired to haue his fauor: Which thing euery Man dyd from that time forth: but aboue the reft, the two Lords that were in company with Saladine at his house. The greatnesse of the fodain glory wherein maister Thorello fawfe himfelfe, did remoue oute of his mind, his affayres of Lombardie, and specially, bicause hee hoped that his letters should trustely be deliuered to the hands of his vnkle. Now there was in the camp of the Christians the daye wherein they were taken by Saladine, a Gentleman of Prouince, which dyed and was buryed, called maister Thorello de Dignes, a man of great estimation: whereby (maister Thorello of Istria known through out the whole army for his nobility and proweſſe) euery man that heard tell that maister Thorello was dead, beleued that it was mayſter Thorello de Iſtria, and not he de Dignes, and by reaſon of his taking, the truth whether of them was deade, was vñknown: Wherfore many Italians returned with thofe newes, amongs whom som wer fo presumptuous, as they toke vpon them to faye and affyrme that they faw him deade, and were at his burial: Whych knownen to his wyfe and his friends, was an occaſion of very great and ineſtimable Sorrow, not onely to them: but to all other that knewe him. Very long it were to tell what great forrow, heauineſſe, and lamentation his wife did vtter, who certain moneths after ſhee had continually fo tormented hir ſelfe, (and when hir grief began to decaſe, being demaunded of many great perfonages of Lombardie) was counſelled by hir brothers, and other of hir kin, to mary again. Which thing after ſhe had many times refuſed, in very great anguſh and dolor, finally being constrained thereunto, ſhe yelded to the minds of hir parents: But yet vpon condicion, that the nuptials ſhould not be celebraſe vntyll ſutche tyme as ſhe had performed hir promife made to maister Thorello. Whileſt the affaires of this Gentlewoman were in thofe termes at Pauie, and the time of hir appoynment within eight dayes approched, it

chaunced that maister Thorello vpon a day espyed a man in Alexandria, (which hee had seene before in the company of the Ambassadors of Genoua,) going into the galley that was bound with them to Genoua, wherfore causing him to be called, he demaunded what voyage they had made, and asked him when they arriued at Genoua? To whom he sayd: "Sir the Galley made a very ill voyage as I hard say in Creta, where I remayned behynd them, for being neare the coast of Sicilia there rose a maruellous tempest, which droue the galley vpon the shoare of Barbarie, and not one of them within bord escaped, amongs whom two of my brethren were likewise drowned." Mayster Thorello giuing credite to the words of this fellow, which were very true, and remembred himselfe that the terme whych he had couenaunted with his Wyfe was almost expired, and thinkinge that they could hardly come by the knowledge of any newes of hym or of his state, beleued verily that his Wyfe was maried agayne, for sorrow whereof he fell into futch melancholy, as he had no lust to eate or drinke, and laying him downe vpon his bed, determined to die: whych soone as Saladine, (who greatly loued hym) did vnderstand, he came to visite him, and after that he had (through instant request) knownen the occasion of his heauiness and disease, hee blamed him very mutch for that he did no sooner disclose vnto him his concept: And afterwards prayed him to be of good cheere, assuring him if he would, so to prouide as he shoulde be at Pauie, iust at the terme which he had assinged to his Wyfe: and declared vnto him the order how. Mayster Thorello geuinge credit to the words of Saladine, and hauinge many times hard say, that it was possible, and that the like had bene many times done, began to comfort himselfe, and to vse the company of Saladine, who determined fully vpon his voyage and returne to Panie. Then Saladine commaunded one of his Nycramancers, (whose science already he had well experienced) that hee shoulde deuise the meanes how mayster Thorello might be borne to Pauie in one night, vpon a bed: Whereunto the Nycromancer aunswered that it shoulde be done, but that it behoued for the better doing thereof, that he shoulde be cast into a sleepe: And when Saladine had geuen order thereunto, he returned to mayster Thorello, and finding him fully

purposed to be at Pauy if it were possible at the terme which he had assignd, or if not, to die: sayd thus vnto hym: "Mayster Thorello, if you do heartely loue your Wyfe and doubt least she be maried to an other, God forbid that I should stay you by any manner of meanes, because of all the Women that euer I saw, she is for maners, comely behauour, and decent order of apparell, (not remembryng her beauty, which is but a fading floure) mee thyncke most worthy to bee prayfed and loued. A gladsome thynge it woulde haue beene to mee (sith Fortune sent you hither) that the tyme which you and I haue to liue in this worlde, we myght haue spent together, and liued Lordes of the Kingdome which I posseffe, and if God be minded not to do me that grace, at least wyse sith you be determined either to dye or to retorne to Pauie, at the terme which you haue appointed, my great desire is, that I myght haue knownen the same in time, to the intente you myghte haue bene conducted thither wyth sutch honour and trayn as your Vertues do deserue: Which sith God wyl not that it bee brought to passe, and that you wyll neades be there presently, I wyll send you as I can in manner before expressed." Whereunto maister Thorello said: "Sir, the effect (bifides your wordes) hath don me suffycient knowledge of your good wyll, which I neuer deserued, and that whych you told me, I cannot beleue, so long as Lyfe is in me, and therefore am most certayne to dye: But sith I am so determinyd, I beseeche you to do that which you haue promised out of hand, bicause to morrow is the last day of the appoyntment assignd to my wyfe." Saladine said, that for a truth the same shoulde be don: And the next day the Souldan purposyng to send hym the nyght following, he caused to be made ready in a great hall a very fayre and rych bed, all quilted according to their manner (wyth vyluet and clothe of gold), and caused to be layed ouer the same, a Couerlet wrought ouer with borders of very great pearles, and rich precious stones: which euer afterwardes was deemed to be an infinite treasure, and two pillowes sutelike vnto that bed: that don, he commaunded that they shoulde inuest maister Thorello, (who now was lustie) with a Sarazine roabe, the richeſt and faireſt thing that euer anye Man saw, and vpon his head one of his longest bands, wreathen according to theyr

manner, and being already late in the Euenyng, hee and diuers of his Barons went into the Chamber wher Mayster Thorello was, and being set down besides him, in weeping wife hee began to say: " Maister Thorello, the time of our separation doth now approche, and bicause that I am not able to accompany you, ne cause you to be waited vpon, for the qualitie of the way which you haue to passe, I must take my leaue here in this chamber, for which purpose I am come hither: Wherefore before I byd you farewell, I pray you for the loue and friendship that is betwene vs, that you do remember me if it be possible before our dayes do end, after you haue giuen order to your affayres in Lombardie, to come agayne to see me before I dye, to the end that I beyng reioyced with your second visitation, may be satisfied of the pleasure which I lose this day for your vntimely haft: and trusting that it shall come to passe, I pray you let it not be tedious vnto you to visite me wyth your letters, and to require me in thynges wherein it may lyke you to commaund, which assuredly I shall accomplish more frankly for you, than for any other liuing man." Maister Thorello was not able to retaine teares: wherefore to staye the fame, he answered him in few woordes, that it was impossible that euer hee shoulde forget his benefites, and his worthy friendship extended vpon him, and that without default he would accomplish what he had commaunded, if God did lend him life and leysure. Then Saladine louingly imbracing and kissing him, pouring forth many teares, bad him farewell, and so went oute of the chamber: And all the other Noble men afterwards tooke theyr leaue likewise of him, and departed with Saladine into the hal wher he had prepared the bed, but being already late, and the Necromancer attending, and hasting his dispatch, a Phisitian broughte him a drinke, and made him beleue that it would fortifie and strengthen him in his iorney, causing him to drinke the same: which being done within a while after he fell a sleepe, and so sleeping was borne by the commaundment of Saladine, and layd vpon the fayre bed, whereupon he placed a rich and goodly crowne of paffinge pryce and valor, vpon the which he had ingrauen so plaine an inscription, as afterwards it was knowne that the same was sent by Saladine to the wife of maister Thorello. After that he put a

ring vpon his finger whych was beset wyth a Diamonde, so shining, as it seemed like a flamynge Torche, the Value whereof was hard to bee esteemed. Then he caused to bee girte aboue hym, a Sworde, the furniture and garnishing whereof could not easilly be valued: and besides all thys, hee honge vpon hys Necke a Tablet or Brooche so beset wyth Stones, and Pearles, as the lyke was neuer seene. And afterwards he placed on either of hys fides, two exceeding great Golden basens, full of double Ducates, and many cordes of Pearles and rings, girdels, and other things to tedious to reherse, wherewith he bedecked the place about him. Which done, he kissted him againe, and wylled the Necromancer to make hast. Wherfore incontinently maister Thorello, and the bed, in the presence of Saladine was caried out of sight and Saladine taried stiil, deuising and talkyng of hym amongs his Barons. Maister Thorello being now laid in S. Peter Churche at Panie, according to his request, with all his Iewels and habilliments aforesayd about him, and yet fast a slepe, the Sexten to ring to Mattens, entred the Church with light in his hand: and chauncing sodenly to espy the rych Bed, dyd notonely maruel thereat, but also ran away in great feare. And when the Abbot and the Monkes saw that hee madefutch hast away, they were abashed, and asked the cause why he ranne so fast? The Sexten tolde them the matter: "Why how now?" sayde the Abbot, "Thou art not futch a Babe, ne yet so newlye come vnto the Church, as thou oughtest so lightly to be afraide. But let vs goe and see what bug hath so terribly frayed thee." And then they lighted many Torches: And when the Abbot and his Monkes were entred the Church, they saw that wonderfull rich bed, and the Gentleman sleeping vpon the same. And as they were in this double and feere, beholding the goodly Iewels, and durst not goe neare the bed, it chaunced that maister Thorello awaked, fetchyng a gret fighe. The Monkes so foone as they saw that, and the Abbot with them, ran all away crying out, "God helpe vs, our Lord haue mercy vpon vs." Maister Thorello opened his eyes, and playnly knew by loking round about him, that he was in the place where he demaunded to be of Saladine whereof he was very glad, and rising vp, and viewing particularly, what he had about him, albeit he knew before the magnificence of Saladine, now he

thoughte it greater, and better vnderstood the same than before. But feyng the Monkes run away, and knowyng the cause wherefore, he began to call the Abbot by hys name, and intreated hym not to bee affrayde: For he was Mayster Thorello his Nephewe. The Abbot hearyng that was dryuen into a greater feare, because he was accompted to bee dead diuers moneths before: but afterwards by diuers arguments, assured that hee was maister Thorello, and so often called by hys name (making a signe of the Crosse) he went vnto him. To whom maister Thorello sayd: "Wherof be you a frayd good father? I am aliuie I thanke God, and from beyond the Sea returned hyther." The Abbot (although he had a great beard, and apparelled after the guise of Arabie) croffed hymselfe agayne, and was wel assured that it was he. Then he tooke hym by the hande, and sayde vnto hym as followeth: "My Sonne thou art welcome home, and maruell not, that wee were afryd: For there is none in all thys Citty, but doth certaynly beleue that thou art dead. In so much as madame Adalieta thy Wyfe, vanquished with the prayers and threatnes of hir frinds and kin, agaynst hir will is betrouweth agayne, and this day the espousals shall be done. For the mariage, and all the preparation necessary for the feast, is ready." Mayster Thorello risinge out of the rich Bed, and reioysing wyth the Abbot and all his Monks, praied euery of them not to speake one word of his comminge home, vntill he had done what he was disposed. Afterwards placing al his rich Iewels in surety and sauegard, hee discoursed vnto his vnkle what had chaunced vnto hym till that time. The Abbot ioyfull for his fortune, gaue thankes to God. Then mayster Thorello demaunded of his vnkle, what he was that was betrouweth to hys Wyfe. The Abbot tolde hym: To whom maister Thorello sayd: "Before my returne be knownen, I am desirous to see what Countenaunce my Wyfe wyl make at the mariage. And therefore, albeit that the religious doe not vse to repayre to sutch Feastes, yet I pray you for my sake take payne to go thither." The Abbot aunswered that he would willingly doe so. And so soone as it was Daye, hee sente woerde to the Brydegrome, that he, and a Frende of hys, woulde bee at the mariage: whereunto the Gentleman aunswered,

that he was very glade thereof. When dinner tyme was come, mayster Thorello in the habite and apparel wherein he was, went with the Lord Abbot to the weddinge dinner, where euery of them that saw him, did maruellously beholde hym, but no man knew him, bicause the Abbot aunswered them that inquired, that he was a Sarazene, sent Ambassador from the Souldan to the French Kinge. Mayster Thorello was then placed at a table which was right ouer agaynst his Wyfe, whom he beheld with great pleasure and delight, and perceyued very wel by hir face that she was not well content with that mariage. She likewife beheld him sometymes, not for any knowledge she had of hym, for his great beard and straunge attire, the firme credite and generall opinion also that hee was deade, chiefly hindred it. But when mayster Thorello thought tyme to proue whether she had any remembraunce of him, he secretly conuayed into hys hande, the ring which she gaue him at hys departure, and called a little Boy that wayted vpon hir, and sayd vnto him: “Go tell the Bryde in my behalfe, that the custome of my countrey is, that when any Straunger (as I am here) is bydden by any new maried woman (as she is now,) for a token of his welcome, she sendeth vnto him the cup wherein she drinketh full of Wyne, whereof after the straunger hath dronke what pleaseth him, he couereth the cup agayne, and sendeth the same to the Bryde, who drinketh the rest that remayneth.” The Page did his message vnto the Bryde, who like a wise Gentlewoman wel brought vp, thinking he had ben some great personage, to declare that he was welcome, commaunded a great cup all gilt, stading before hir, to be washed cleane, and to be filled ful of Wyne, and caried to the Gentleman, which accordingly was don. Mayster Thorello hauing put into hys mouth the aforesayd ring, secretly let fall the same into the Cup as he was drinking, not perceyued of any man, to the intent that she drinking the latter draught, might espy the ringe. When he had dronk, he returned the cup vnto the Bryde, who thankfully receyued the same. And for that the manner of his countrey might be accomplished, when the cup was deliuered vnto hir, she vncouered the same, and pleading the rest of the Wyne, beheld the ring, and without speaking any word, wel

viewed the same, and knowing that it was the very Ring which she had geuen to maister Thorello, when he departed, tooke it out. And stedfastly did marke and looke vpon him, whom she supposed to be a straunger, and already knowinge him, cryed out as though she had bene straught of hir wittes, throwing downe the Table before hir: "This is my Lord and husband, this is of trouth Mayster Thorello." And runnynge to the table without respect to hys apparell of Cloth of Gold, or to any thinge that was vpon the table, pressinge so neere him as she could, imbraced him very heard, not able to remoue hir handes from about his Necke for any thing that could bee sayd or done by the company that was there, vntill mayster Thorello required hir to forbear for that present, for so mutch as she shoulde haue leyfure inough to vse hir further imbrace-ments. Then shee left him, and contented hir selfe for the tyme: but the brydale and mariage was wholly troubled and appalled for that sodayne chaunce, and the most part of the Guests excedingly reioyced for the return of that Noble knight. Then the company beinge intreated to sit and not to remoue, Maister Thorello re-hearsed in open audience what had chaunced vnto him from the day of his departure vntill that tyme, concludinge with a petition to the Bridegrome, that had newly espoused his Wyfe, that he woulde not be displeased if he tooke hir agayne. The new maried Gentleman, albeit it greeued hym very sore, and thought himselfe to be mocked, aunswered liberally and like a Frende, that it was in hys power to do wyth hys owne what hee thought best. The Gentlewoman drawinge of the Rings and Garland which shee had receyued of hir newe Husbande, did put vpon hir finger the Ring which shee founde within the Cup, and likewyse the Crowne that was sent vnto hir by Saladine: And the whole troupe and assembly leauing the house where they were, went home with mayster Thorello and his wyfe, and there the kin and frends, and all the Citizens which haunted the same, and regarded it for a myracle, were with long feastinge and great cheare in great ioy and triumph. Mayster Thorello departing some of his precious Iewels to him that had bene at the cost of the mariage, likewise to the Lord Abbot and diuers others, and hauing done Saladine to vnderstand hys happy repayre

home to his Countrey, recommending himselfe for euer to his commaundement, liued with his Wyfe afterwards many prosperous yeares, vsing the vertue of curtefie more than euer hee did before. Sutch was the ende of the troubles of maister Thorello, and hys wel beloued Wyfe, and the recom-  
pence of their franke and honest  
curtefies.

## THE TWENTY-FIRST NOUELL.

*A Gentleman of meane callinge and reputation, doth fall in loue with Anne, the Queene of Hungarie, whom shee very royally re-quited.*

FOLLOWING the preceding arguments treated in certayne of the former Nouelles, I wyll now discouer the princely kindnesse and curtesye done to a poore Gentleman, by a Lady of later dayes, Anne the Queene of Hungary. whych Gentleman, though beyonde hys reache to catch what he aspired, fell in loue with that bountifull and vertuous Gentlewoman, thinkinge (by like) that she in end woulde haue abased her Maiesy, to recline to hys vayne and doting trauayle. But she like a Queene, not despisinge the poore mans loue, vouchsafed by familiar speech to poure some drops of comfort into his louinge minde, and once to proue, on whom he fixed his fanfie, reached him a Nosegay, and prayed him to bestowe it vpon whom hee liked best. All which familiar dealings she vsed, to keepe the poore pacient from despayre, that so highly had placed hym selfe. But in end perceyuinge his continuaunce, would not reiect and geue hym ouer, or with Scornes and Flouts contemne the Amorous Gentleman: and that longe loue myght gayne some deserued guerdon, she never left hym vntyll she had preferred him to a Noble office in Spayne. The noble disposition of this chaste and gentle Queene, I thought good to adioyn next to that of maister Thorella and Saladine: who for curtesie and passinge mutuall kindnesse, are worthy of remembraunce. And for you noble Dames for a Christall to sharpen your fightes, and viewe the recompence of loue, done by a Queene of passinge beauty, and yet most chaste and vertuous, that it might somewhat touch your squeymish stomackes and haulty hearts, and lenifie that corrousiue humor, which with frowning face, forceth you to ouerperke your humble suppliants. A helpinge preferuatiue I hope this Hystory shalbe to imbolden you, in futes and petitions to their prince and soueraygne: An incoragement (I hope) to be mediators for futch, as by seruice and warfare haue confirmed their faythfull

deuoirs for defence of their Countrey. Remember the care the Romane matrones had for those that deserued well of their Common wealth: as how they mourned for Lucius Brutus one whole yeres space, for his good reuenge ouer the rauishers of Lucrece: and for Martius Coriolanus, for hys piety and mothers sake, discharging his Countrey from the enemies siege. Let mistresse Paolina of the priuy Chamber to this Queene Anne, render example for preferment of futch as be worthy to be cherished and esteemed. O how Liberality beſeemeth a Queene, no leſſe (as one maketh comparison) than the bright beames of the Sunne, or the twinkling starres in the Firmament. Oh how diligence in Gentlewomen, aduaunced to Princes Chambers, no leſſe than the greene leaues to braunched Trees, or dyuers coloured Floures in Nosegayes. So flouriſhing be the fruities that bud from liberality, and freshe the beſeſites that ſucceeđe of the payneful trauayles fustayned in the ſutes of ſeruiceable Gentlemen. This Philippo whom the Queene preferred, and liberally rewarded, was a meane Gentleman, but yet learned and well furnished with commendable qualities. His deserued aduauncement may stirre vp ech Gentle heart, to merite and ferue in Common wealth. His warninge and other vertues may awake the ſluggiſh Courtier, from loytering on Carpets, and doinge thinges vnſeemely: His diligence alſo reuiue the blockiſh ſprites of ſome that rout their tyme in ſluggiſh ſleepe, or waste the day in harlotrie and other filthy exercise. Whose example yf they practife, or imitate futch commendable life as becommeth their eſtates, then glory will followe their deedes, as the shadowe doeth the body. Then welfare and liuelihoode abundantly ſhal bee myniſtry to ſupply want of patrimonie or defect of parents portion. And thus the Hyſtory doth begin. Not long ſithens Queene Anne, the ſister of Lewes, that was king of Hungarie, and wife to Ferdinand Archeduke of Auſtriche, (which at this day is parcel of the kingdome of Hungary and Boeme,) together with the Lady Mary daughter of Philip kynge of Spayne, and wife of the ſayd Lewes, went to keepe hir abode, and ſoiorne in Hispurge, a Countrey among the Dutch very famous, where many tymes the Court of the Hungarian Prynces longe ſpace remayned. Theſe two Noble Queenes remained within the Palace of king

Maximilian, Emperour at that time elected, which Palace is so neare adioyning to the Cathedrall Church, as without sight of the people at their pleasure they myghte by a secrete Gallerie passe to the Church to heare diuine seruyce accustomably celebrated there. Which vse they dayly obserued with theyr Ladies and Gentlewomen, and other Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court. In which church was made and erected a high place in manner of a Closet gorgeously wrought, and in royall manner apparelled of futch amplitude as it was hable to receyue the whole trayn and company attendant vpon the Persons of the two Quenes. Now it came to passe that a Gentleman of Cremona in Italy called Philippo di Nicuoli, whych in those dayes by reason of the recouery of the Duchie of Milane, by the Frenche, departed Lombardie, and went to Hispurge, and was Secretarie to Signa Andrea Borgo, bicause he was well learned, and could wryte very fayre, and therewithall a proper and very haundsome man. This yong Gentleman very mutch frequenting the Church, and seeing the beauty of Queene Anne, to excell all the reast of the Ladies, adorned and garnished with princely behauour and Queenelyke qualytyes, not forefeeyng (when hee beheld hir) the nature of loue, whych once being posseffed, neuer leaueth the pacient til it hath infebled his state lyke the quality of poyson, distillinge through the vaynes, euen to the heart. Which louing venim this Gentleman did drinke with the lookes of his eyes, to satisfey and content his desired minde by vewinge and intentife confidering hir wonderful beauty, that rapt beyond measure, he was myserably intangled wyth the snares of blind and deceiptfull loue, wherewith he was so cruelly inflamed, as he was lyke to forte out of the bounds of reason and Wyt. And the more he did beholde the hyghneffe of hir Maiesty, and the excellency of so great a Lady, and therewithall did weigh and confider hys base degree and Lignage, and the poore state whereunto frowarde fortune that tyme had brought him, the more he thought hymselfe frustrate and voyde of hope, and the more the perillous flames of loue did assayle and fire his amorous heart, kindlinge hys inward partes with loue so deeplye ingraffed, as it was impossible to be rooted out. Mayster Philippo then in this manner (as you haue heard) knotted and intrapped within the

fillets and laces of loue, supposing all labour which hee should imploy to be lost and consumed, throughly bent himselfe with all care and diligence to atchieue this hygh and honorable enterprize, whatsoeuer should come of it: whych effectually he pursued. For alwayes when the Queenes were at church to heare deuine seruice, he fayled not to bee there. And hauinge done his duetyfull reuerence, whych very comely he could do, he vsed to bestow himselfe dyrectly ouer agaynst hir: where delitinge in the beauty of the Queene whych dayly more and more inflamed his heart, would not depart from thence till the Queenes were disposed to goe. And if perchaunce for some occasion, the Queenes went not to Church, maister Philippo for all that (were his businesse neuer so great and needfull) would vouchsafe at least wife to visite the place, where he was wont to see his Lady. Sutch is the ordinary force of loue that although liberty of fight and talke be depryued from the pacient, yet it doeth hym good to treade in the Steps of that Ground where his Mistresse doth vsually haunt, or to see the place vpon whych she eased hir tender corps, or leaned hir delicate elbowes. Thys young man bayted, and fed in amorous Toyes and Deuyfes, now armed wyth hope, and by and by disarmed by despayre, reuolued in hys mynde a thoufand thoughts and cogitations. And although he knew that hys Ladder had not steps inow to clyme so hygh, yet from his determined purpofe hee was not able to remoue: but rather the more difficult and daungerous hys enterpryse seemed to bee, the more grew desire to prosecute and obiect hymselfe to all daungers. If peraduenture the Queenes for their disport and pastime were disposed to walke into the fieldes or gardens of the Citty of Hispurge, he fayled not in company of other Courtiers to make one of the troupe, beinge no houre at rest and quiet if he were not in the sight of Queene Anne, or neere the place where shee was. At that time there were many Gentlemen departed from Lumbardy to Hispurge, which for the most part followed the Lord Francifco Sforza the seconf, by whom they hoped when the Duchy of Mylane was recouered, to be restored to their countrey. There was also Chamberlayne to the sayd Lorde Francesco, one mayster Girolamo Borgo of Verona betwene whom and mayster Philippo, was very neere freendship and

familiarity. And bicause it chaunsfeth very seldome, that feruent loue, can be kept so secrete and couert, but in some part it will discouer it selfe, mayster Borgo easily did perceyue the passion wherewith mayster Philippo was inflamed. And one mayster Philippo Baldo many times being in the company of mayster Borgo and Philippo, did marke and perceiue his loue, and yet was ignorant of the truth, or voyde of conieecture with what Gentlewoman he was inamored. But seeing him contrary to wonted custome altered, and from vsual mirth transported, fetchinge many fighes and strayninges from his stomake, and markinge how many times he would steale from the company he was in, and withdraw himselfe alone, to muse vpon hys thoughts, brought thereby into a melancholy and meane estate, hauing lost his sleepe, and stomak of eating meate: iudged that the amorous Wormes of loue did bitterly gnaw and teare his heart with the nebs of their forked heades. They three then being vpon a time together, debatinginge of diuers thinges amonges themselues, chaunced to fall in argument of loue, and maister Baldo, and Borgo, the other Gentlemen, sayd to mayster Philippo, how they were wel assured that he was straungly attached with that passion, by marking and considering that new life, which lately he led contrary to former vse, intreating him very earnestly, that he would manifest his loue to them, that were his deere and faythfull frends, tellinge him that as in weighty matters otherwise he was already sure what they were, euen so in this he might hardly repose his hope and confidence, promisinge hym all their helpe and fauour, if therein their indeuour and trauayle might minister ayde and comfort. Hee then like one rayfed from a trance, or lately reuived from an extasie, after he had composed his Countenaunce and Gesture, wyth teares and multitude of sobbes, began to say these woordes: "My welbeloued frendes, and trusty companions, being right well assured that yee (whose fidelity I haue already proued, and whose secret mouthes be recommended amongs the wife and vertuous), will keepe close and couert the thinge which you shall heare me vtter, as of futch importaunce, that if the yong Romane Gentleman Papyrus had been here, for all his silence of graue matters required by hys Mother, I woulde vnnethes haue dysclosed the same vnto

hym. Indeede I cannot deny, but must needes confesse that I am in loue, and that very ardently, which I cannot in sutch wyse conceale, but that the blinde must needes clearely and euidently perceyue. And although my mouth would fayne keepe close, in what plight my passions do constraine my inward affections, yet my face and straung maner of life, which for a certayne tyme and space I haue led, doe wittnesse, that I am not the man I was wont to bee. So that if shortly I doe not amend, I trust to arriue to that ende whereunto every Creature is borne, and that my bitter and paynful life shall take ende, if I may call it a lyfe, and not rather a lyuing death: I was resolued and throughly determined, neuer to discouer to any man the cause of my cruell torment, being not able to manifest the same to hir, whom I doe only loue, thinking better by concealinge it through loue, to make humble sute to Lady Atropos, that shee woulde cut of the thred of my dolorous lyfe. Neuerthelesse to you, from whom I ought to keepe nothyng secrete, I wyll dysgarboyle and vnlace the very Secretes of my Minde, not for that I hope to finde comfort and relieve, or that my passions by declaration of them, will lesson and diminishe, but that yee, knowinge the occasion of my death, may make report thereof to hir, that is the only mistresse of my life, that shee vnderstandinge the extreme panges of the truest louer that euer liued, may mourne and wayle hys losse: which thinge if my feely Ghoft may knowe, no doubt where foever it do wander, shall receyue great ioy and comfort. Be it known vnto you therefore, the first day that myne Eyes behelde the diuine beauty and incomparable fauor of that superexcellent Lady Queene Anne of Hungary, and that I (more than wysdom required) did meditate, and consider the singuler behauour and notable curtesie and other innumerable giftes wherewith shee is indued, the same beyond measure did so inflame my heart, that impossible it was for me to quench the feruent loue, or extinguish the least parte of my conceyued torment. I haue done what I can to macerate and mortefie my vnbridled desire, but all in vayne: My force and puissaunce is weake to match with so mighty an aduersary. Alas syres, I knowe what yee will obie& agaynst mee: yee will say that mine ignobility, my byrth and stocke be no meete

matches for sutch a personage, and that my loue is to highly placed, to suffe relief: And the same I do confesse so wel as you. I do acknowledge my condition and state to base, I confesse that my loue (nay rather I may terme it folly) doth presume beyond the bounds of order: For the first tyme that I felt my selfe wrapped in those Snares, I knewe her to beare the Port amonges the chyefest Queenes, and to bee the peerelesse Pryncess of Chrysten-dome. Agayne, I knew my selfe the poorest Gentleman of the Worlde, and the most myserable exile: I thought moreouer it to be very vnseemely for me to direct my mynde vpon a wight so honorable, and of so great estate: But who can rayne the Bridle, or prescribe lawes to loue? What is he that in loue hath free wil and choyse? Truely I beleue no man, bicause lone the more it doth seeme to accorde in pleasure and delight, the further from the mark he shoogeth his bolte, hauing no respect to degree or state. Haue not many excellent and worthy personages, yea Dukes, Emperours and Kinges, bin inflamed with the loue of Ladies, and Women of base and vile degree? Haue not most honorable dames, and Women of greatest renoume despised the honor of theyr states, abandoned the company of theyr husbands, and negle~~ct~~ted the loue of theyr Chyldren, for the ardent loue that they haue borne to men of inferiour fort? All Historyes be full of examples of that purpose: The memoryes of our auncestors be yet in fresh remembraunce, whereof if they were ignorant vnto you that be of great experiance, I could aduouche assured testimony: Yet thus mutch I say vnto you, that it seeme no newe thing for a man to be ouercome by his owne affectyon: It is not the Nobility of hir state, or for that shee is a Queene, it is not the confideration of one parte or other, that moued me first hereunto: But loue it is, that is of greater force than we our selues bee of, which many tymes maketh that to seeme lawfull, which altogether is vnlawful, and by subduing reason maketh the great potenteate lorde tributarie to his wyl and pleasure, whose force is farre greater then the lawes of Nature. And albeit that I neuer hope to attayne to prosperous end of this magnifike and stately loue, whych more and more doth seeme infortunate, yet I can not for my Lyfe else where apply the same, or alter it to other place: And consumynge still

through faithful and feruent loue borne to the Queene, I haue forced and constrained my self by al possible meanes to gyue ouer that fond and foolish enterprise, and to place my mynd else where: but mine endeouour and all my labour and resistance is employed in vayne: Yea and if it were not for feare of eternall damnation, and the losse of my poore afflicted soule (which God forbid) myne owne Handes before this time had ended my desires. I am therefore determined (sith that I can attaine no successe of Loue, and that God doth suffer me to be inspyred wyth that most honourable and curteous Lady, beyond all order and estimation) to content my selfe with the sight of those hir fayre and glistring eyes, farre excelling the sparcling glimpe of the Diamonde or Saphire, and to serue, loue and honour hir, so long as life doth last within this feeble corps: Vpon whose radiant and excelling beautie, my hope shall continually feede: and yet I am not so far voyd of vnderstandinge, but that I do most evidently know none other to be the guide of thys vnmeasurable loue, but folly most extreme." Vpon the end of those words he let fal many teares, and being staied with sobbs and fighes he was able to speake no more. And in very deede he that had seene him, would haue thought that his heart had bene tormented with most bitter and painfull passions. Now they being very attentiuue to his pytifull oration, were attached with incredible forrow, thinking that they had ben in a dreame by hearing of this discourse, and stode styll a while one loking vpon an other, without speaking word: Afterwards comming to themselues, distraughte almost, for the greate admiration and wonder to heare him speake those words, mayster Girolamo and Baldo, with fuaſible arguments went about to counſell him to withdraw his fonde and foolyſh mind, praying him to place the ſame elſewhere, ſhewing him the imposſibility of hys enterpryſe, and the great peril that might ſucceeđe thereoř. But they ſpake to a man that ſeemed to be deaf, who replied, that hee neither coulde or would giue ouer his loue, that had already made ſo depe impreſſion, what ſo euer came of it: Notwythſtandynge they ceaſed not ſtill with ſharp admonitions to beate into his head, the fonde begynning of his foolish loue: and not onely at that tyme, but continually when they were together, they dyd theyr

best by oft repetition of his vayne conceipt, to let him vnderstande his manyfest error: but theyr labour and friendly lessons were to no purpose: Wherefore mayster Borgo, determined to giue him ouer, and to attende what would succede therof. Mayster Philippo continuing hys pursute, neuer faylyng to be at church when he knew the Quenes to be ther, at length it chanced that they began to espy his loue, for that both of them did mark his order, gesture and demeanure, and did note his oft frequentation of the places where they continually haunted and his manner in placynge himselfe at the church directly ouer agaynst them, and his common vse in beholding and loking vpon their faces, iudging thereby that without doubt he was in loue with one of them, or at least with soyme Gentlewoman of their trayne whereof the two Queenes began to vse some talk, although not certain vpon whom his loue was bent. Neuerthelesse they wer desirous to know the troth, and expected oportunitie somtime to dissolute that doubt. In the meane while maister Philippo thought by gazing on theyr beauty, to remoue the fire that miserably did consume the fuck and marow of his bones, seking comfort and relief for his afflicted heart, the more I say he fought for ease, the greater he felt his payn: And truely all they that feruently do loue, aspire to that, which otherwise they woulde eschue, by sight of them whome they do loue, not remembering that the more they doe contemplate the beloued beauty, the more increaseth desire, and with desire extreme and bitter smart. Maister Philippo then lost no occasion or time stil to behold Madame the Queene, were it in the church or courte, or were she disposed for disport and recreation to walke abrode. It chaunced now while things wer at this poynt, the ladies very desirous to know vpon whom maister Philippo did expend his loue, that fortune opened vnto them a meane to vnderstand the same: It was then about that time of the yere, wherein al floures and roses were by Titans force constrained to adorne and decke ech gardens and place of pleasure, and with their fragrant smells and odors, to fent the same in the moneth of May: it was when the Twinnes were dysposed to shroud themselues amongs the hawthorn boughs and honyfuckles that yeld to euery wyght greatest store of delyghts, at what time roses and other floures at

theyr first budding be very rare and scant, sauing in Kings Courtes and prynces Palaces, where futch varieties by art and industrie be most abundant, and all men haue delight to present futch nouelties to the pryncipall ladies. Vpon a day Queene Anne had in hir hands certayne floures in due order couched in a Nosegay, and for hir disport walked vp and down a very fayre and gorgeous garden, in the company of Queene Mary, and other Ladies and gentlewomen, about that tyme of the day the Sun wearie of trauaile, went to hide him self in the back fide of the western mountains, wher amongs other of the Courte was maister Philippo. Queene Anne when she had espyed him, determined to make proufe with what Lady amongs them all, mayster Philippo was in loue, and sporting hir self with softe and pretayn walkes vp and downe the garden, pleasanly iesting with diuerse there attendant, (as the maner is of like Ladies) with trimme and pleasant talk, at length happed vpon maister Philippo, who although he was in communication with certain Italian Gentlemen, neuertheleffe his mynde and eyes were fixed vpon the Queene, that whensoeuer she appeared before him his eyes and face were so firmelye bent vpon hir, as the beholder might easilly perceiue, that the Vysage of the Quene was the vndoubted harbrough of his thought. Philippo, seeing the Queene come toward him, did honor hir wyth gentle and dutifull reuerence, in futch humble wife, as hee seemed at hir hands pitifully to craue mercy. And truely whosoeuer doth loue with secreit and perfect heart, seemeth to vtter more words to his Lady with his eies, than he is able to speak wyth his tongue. The Queene being come vnto him with a grace right graue and demure, sayd vnto him: " You Gentleman of Lombardie, yf these floures which we haue in our hands were giuen vnto you liberally to vse at your pleasure, and requyred to make some curteous present of the same to one of vs the ladies here that liked you best, tell mee I pray you, to whether of vs would you giue the same, or what would you do or say? Speake franklye we pray you, and tell youre mynde wythout respect: for thereby you shall doe to vs very great pleasure, and we shal know to whether of vs you beare your chiefest loue. For it is not to be supposfed, that you being a young man, can spende your time without loue, being a naturall quality in euery creature."

When mayster Philippo felte the swete voyce of the Queene pl  
stantly to pierce his eares, and hearde that he was commaunded  
the loue of hir that he loued, not onely to tell whome he loued  
best and most intierly, but also hir whom he worshipped and ser  
in heart, was almost beffides hymselfe, sutch was the tickly  
ioylitie that he felte in hys heart, whose face was taynted w  
a thousand colors and what for superfluous loue and ioy, whe  
the like he neuer tasted before, fell into an extasie, not able  
render answere. But when he had recouered stomach, so well  
he coulde with soft and trembling voice, he answered the Que  
in this wise: “Sith your maiesty (to whom I yelde myne hum  
thanks for that curtesie) hath vouchsafed to commaund me (besi  
the infinite pleasure and honour, for which eternally I shal stan  
bound to your highnesse) I am ready sincerely and truely to d  
close my mind, being promised by your maiesty in opening of  
fame, to deserue great thanks: Wherfore your pleasure be  
such I do say then, with all due reurence, that not onely here  
thys tyme, but at al times and places wher it shal please god  
appoint me, being not able to bestow them in other sort than t  
he, but wer they more precious and fayre, the more ioyfull I shal  
bee of them. These floures I say shal of me right humbly  
presented to your maiesty, not bicause you be a Queene and  
a royal Race (whych notwythstandinge is a great vertue) I  
bicause you bee a Phœnix, a rare Lady, and of all the troupe  
fayrest, garnished with infinit gifts, and passinge vertues, for y  
merites worthy to be honoured wyth farr more excellent gi  
than these simble floures be, as she that (aboue all other Lad  
that live at this day) is the honour and onely glory of all wom  
hoode of our age, as shee that is the Paragon peereleffe of  
vniuersal worlde.” when he had sayd thosse words, he held  
peace. The Queene with great delight hearing the ready an  
swere of the yong Gentleman, sayd vnto hym: “And we do g  
you thanks for the great honor and commendation done v  
ns.” When she had sayd so, without further talke, she went fo  
vsing pleasant talke and sport with diuers that wayted vpon  
Queene Anne now vnderstode, and so likewise Queene Mary, wh  
of them the yong Lumbard Gentleman did accept for his foun  
dr

Lady, whose loue she disdayned not, but in her mynde rather commended, esteeming him better than euer she did before: and lyke a discreet and wyse Lady gaue him infinite prayse. She did not now as other women wont to do, who when they see themselues of birth more noble, or of degree more ample than their louers be (whych gift they receyue through the fauor of the heauens) do not only despise them, but mock them, and their faythfull seruice, and many tymes with fayned countenance and dissembled words do extol them and set them vp aloft, and by and by almost with one breath, exchanging their fayned prayse into rebuke, they thrust them downe headlong from the tipe of hope and comfort, to the bottomleffe pit of despayre: and the fuller she is of floutes, the finer Girle esteemed. But farre better is she to be regarded, that not findinge in hir hart to loue hir suter, will frankly tell him at the first, that she cannot like hym, nor fashon hir mynde to loue him, and requiring him not to feede his minde with vayne hope, or contrive the tyme with words and lookes, and pray him to seeke soime other that can better fansy his person than she: And although perchance a man do very feruently loue a woman, and that it wer great sorrow and grief vnto him to bee cast of, and receiue such refusall, yet in myne opinion it were leffe grieve openly to receiue that repulse, than to be fawned vpon, and flattered with fained talke, and for the time choaked with the baite of vaine hope, and afterwards become ridiculous, and gired by the scorneful. I am assured, that the woman which giueth hir seruant futch repulse, shall bee counted mutch more cruell, than Maistresse Helena was to the scholler of Paris, after he was returned from the vniuersitie to Florence, written by Boccaccio in his Decamerone, and hereafter in place described. But let vs retourne to maister Philippo, who although hee coulde not imagine ne conceiue the intent, wherfore Queene Anne made that demaund, yet the same was very deare and acceptable vnto him, vpon the which he neuer thought, but felt great contentation in his mynd, and was more iocund and pleafant than he was wont to be before. On the other fide the Queene, which was very discrete and wise, when she saw maister Philippo at the church or other place to make obeysance vnto hir very curteously requited the same, bowing hir head to him agayn,

(which she neuer vsed but to Barons and Knights of great reputation) declaryng thereby how wel in worth she regarded his reuerence made vnto hir: Whereat he receiued maruellous pleasure and delight, hoping for none other recompence at hir handes, than continuance of sutch curtesies and honourable entartayntment. Amongs certayne Italians that were vppon a Day assembed in the prefence chamber of Queene Anne, waiting there vpon Madonna Barbara the wyfe of Maister Pietro Martire Stampa, who wyth hir two daughters were gone to salute the two Queenes that were that time together: There was also maister Philippo, with whom Borgo and Baldo reasoned of diuerse matters: And as they wer in talke, both the Queenes came forth, which was the occasion, that al the lords and Gentlemen attended, vppon whose approch, ech man rose vp, and bareheaded expected whither the Queenes would goe. Queene Anne perceyuing a company of Italians together, left Queene Marie, and went st freight to them, and very gently inquyred of dyuerse of the Gentlemen, their names, and of what partes of Italy they were, then she came to the place where they III. were standing together, and curteously asked first maister Girolamo, what his name was, of what countrey, whether he were a Gentleman? To whom reuerently he said: "that his name was Girolamo Borgo, a Gentleman of Verona." Mayster Baldo like-wise being demaunded the same, answered so well as he coulde: "that he was a Gentleman borne, of an auncient house in Milane, and that his name was Philippo Baldo." When she had receiued theyr answere with cheerefel and smiling countenance she returned to maister Philippo, inquyryng of him also his name and countrey, and whether he were a Gentleman or not? Whom maister Philippo after his duety done reuerently answered: "Madame, my fourain Lady and only mistresse, I am a Gentleman, and am called by the name of Philippo dei Nicuoli, of Cremona." The Queene making no further demaundes of any of the other Gentlemen, sayd to Mays-ter Philippo: "You say true sir, I dare warrant you to be a Gentleman in deede, and hee that sayd the contrary, should declare himself to be voyd of Iudgement what a Gentleman is." She sayde no more, but from thence with Queene Mary and the whole trayne she went to Church. All they that hard the Queene speake those

words, dyd wonder, and could not deuise what shée meant by them, notwithstanding ech man thought that the Queene bare to maister Philippo singuler good will and fauour. He (as it was his custome) full of diuerfe cogitations, whose head was building of great cities, went to church, bestowing himselfe in his wonted place, reuoluing in hys mind the Queene's words spoken vnto him. And although he could not perceiue to what end that honorable lady had spoken them, yet hee thought that hir maiesty had done him great honour. And verily the humanity and curtesy of a Lady, so excellent and noble is worthy to be extolled with infinite prayses, who being of high estate and lineage, and the wife of a Prince that proceded of the stirpe Imperial, not only did not disdaine to be beloued of a man of so base degree, and banished from his own Country, but also with great care and diligence did deuise, and in effect declare that she was the same whome the Italian yong gentleman did loue as partly it was euidently to bee perceiued, not for other purpose doubleffe, but to do some Noble deede couenable for the greatnessse of hir estate, and incident to the feruent loue of the amorous yong Gentleman, which afterwardes in very dede shee accomplayshed. But howe many be there in these dayes, I doe not speake of Queenes and Pryncesses, but of simble and priuate Gentlewomen, that beyng of meane worship, indned with some shew of beautie, be without good conditions and vertue, who seeyng themselues beloued of some Gentlemen, not so enriched with the goods of Fortune as they be, do scorne and mocke them, thynking themselues to good to be loked vpon, or to be once moued of vertuous loue, scornfully casting their face at one fide, as though the futers were vnworthy their company? Howe many likewyse be possessed and ouerwhelmed with pryd by reason Nature more propiciousvnto them then other, be descended of some great parentage, that will accompt a great iniurie done vnto them, if any gentleman except he be rych, do make sute to loue them? Again a great number of women (I speake of them whose minds do not so mutch aspire to fame or honour as they seeke their delights and brauerie to be maintained) bee of this trampe, that they care not whether theyr louers bee discrete, well conditioned, vertuous and gentle, so that

theyr pурfes be full of money, or theyr shapes amiable, not wayng the valour and good condicions of the minde, ne yet a thousand other qualities that ought to garnish a Gentleman, whereby all vertuous Gentlemen dayly do growe beautiful, and be enriched wyth greater perfections. Some there be that fixe their minds vpon those, that be of goodly personage, although void of good behauiour, louing rather a piece of flesh with two eyes, than an honest man well furnished with vertue. Thynk not yet for all thys, that herein men ordinarily bee more wyse than women, althoughe they ought to bee accomplished with greater witte: but to say the truth, they all be spotted with one kind of pitch, that warfare here in the large campe of this present worlde: whereof it commeth to passe, that light loue as we fee to beare no good foundation, and to haue no longe continuance, euen so the end and conclusion to consume like the beauty of the floure. And therupon many times it chaunceth, that when loue is not grounded but vpon transitorie beauty, which doth dissolute like a windy cloude, the little heat thereof doth not wax more hote, but rather congealeth to frost, and many times conuerteth into hatred and mischiefe most cruel. A worse thing yet than this is in common practise: There be many that wyll needes bee counted and called gentlemen, bycause they come of Auncient and Noble race, and being growen vp to man's state, doe appeare in shapes of men, but are altogether without approued manners, vtterly ignorant what the nature of Gentle is, accomptyng themselues to be ioly fellowes, when in company of other as bigge beastes as them felues, they contrive theyr time and make their bragges, vauiting that Sutch a woman is at my commaundment, and sutch a man's wyfe I do keepe, sutch a one is my companion's friende: whereby they bryng many women, yea and of the best sort, into flaunder and infamie. Diuerse Gentle-women also bee so fond, and of so simple discretion, that although they know and clearely perceyue thys to be true, yet allured with the personages and beauty of sutch Roisters, passe not to giue the rayne to these vnbridled Iades, not forefeeing (lyke ignorant Wood-cockes) that in fewe dayes through their own temeritie, they incur the common shame of the vulgar people, being pointed at in the streates as they goe: where sutch as be wyse and discrete, doe

dayly feare the least suspition that may be conceiued. There is no woman that is wyse, but so neare as she can, wil shunne and auoyde all occasion whereby flaunder may aryfe, and will chofe vnto hir amongs a number, futch one as can best please hir fanfie, and as with whome for hys vertue and honesty she purpofeth to match hir felfe in maryage, which is the final ende of all honest loue. Howe be it Nature hath not framed euery creature of one metall, ne yet Minerua infused lyke brayne into every head. And truely this our age dothe breed many fayre and worthie Women, whose condicions bee good and honest, adorned with comely qualities, the Generofitie, stoutnesse and Valoure of whose myndes doe deferue syngular prayse and estymatyon. And what is hee, chauncyng vppon a curteous and Vertuous Dame, that wyll not gyue ouer the Loue of all other, to honour and loue hir for euer? But wee haue digrefsed too long from our Hystorye, and therefore, retourning to the same agayne, I say, that Fortune the guide of maister Philippo, was fully determined to bestow hir fauor vpon him: For besides that the Queene dearely eftemed his loue, it seemed that all thyngs wer vnyted and agreed to fort his enterpryse to happy successe. The Queene had to her Gouerneffe Madonna Paola dei Cauali, a Gentlewoman of Verona, very auncient and graue (aduaunced to the callyng, by Madonna Bianca Maria Sforza the wyfe of the Emperour Maximilian) whom Queene Anne requyred dylygently to procure for hir, futch Rithmes in the Thuscane language and other Italian workes, as were to be found, bicause hir dysposition was to be conuersant and familiar in that tongue, and employed great diligence to learne and exercize the same, wherein shée attained futch perfection, as all Italians coulde very well vnderstande her. Now (as the good lucke of mayster Philippo woulde haue it) he that day went to the Courte alone, continuallye deuifinge if it were possible, at al tymes to be in presence of the Quene: Whome so foone as Madonna Paola espyed, bicause she familiarly knew him went vnto him, and sayd: "My welbeloued friend maister Philippo, bicause the Queene hath great delight to learn our tongue, and therein already hath some towardnesse, as by hir common speakyng of the same you may perceyue, this mornyng at hir vprising shée gaue me a great

charge to procure for hir, certayne Italian Rithmes, who besides those booke in that tongue already prynted, gladly desireth to see some trymme deuises of diuerse learned men that make in oure Daies. specially hir mind is earnestlye disposed vpon Rithmes cunninglye composed, whereof I thinke you haue some store by reason of your delight in that exercise: Wherfore I thought good to repayre vnto you, and doe heartily pray you, to make hir Maiesty pertaker of sutch as you haue, wherein you shal do hir great and grateful seruice, and I shal remain continually bound vnto you: besides that I doe purpose when I present them vnto hir, to make hir priuie that I receyued them at your hands, which bicause of the loue shee beareth to our Natyon, she wyl fauorably accept, and the same no doubte when opportunitye serueth, liberally reward." Maister Philippo in curteous wise thanked the gentlewoman, and said, that he was sorry he was not able better to satisfie hir request, bicause in that countrey he had small store of sutch desired things, neuerthelesse he would make diligent search, to get so many as were possible to be found, either amongs the Gentlemen that folowed the Court, or else where they were to be gotten. In the meane time, he sayd, that he would deliuer those few hee had, and bring them vnto hir that night, praying hir to commend hym to the good grace, and fauour of hir maiesty. And so he tooke hys leaue, and went strayght to hys Lodging, where diligently he began to search among his writings (the gladdest man in the Worlde for that occasion offered) and founde amonges the same diuers rithmes which hee thought vnworthy to passe into the handes of so great a Lady, sauing the third Rithme or Chapter, as we commonly call it, made by a notable Doctor of the lawes, and excellent Poet called M. Niccolo Amanio, of Crema, who no doubt for making of vulgar rithmes, thereby expressing the amorous affections of Louers, was in our time without comparison. And bicause the same was so apt for the purpose of mayster Philippo his loue, as could be desired, he wrote the same fayre (being in deede a very fayre sheete of Paper,) which foudeth to this effect.

*Quanto piu cresce (Amor) Paspro tormento, &c.*

The more (O Loue) thy bitter pangs augment,  
 Melting by times my sad accensed spreete,  
 The more to burne I feele my selfe content:  
 And though ech day a thousande times I fleete  
 Twixt hope and dreade, all dolour yet and smart  
 My glorious prooфе of enterprise makes sweete.  
 The fire so high which kindled hath myne hart,  
 As by loue's flames none euer had (I know)  
 So lofty source of heate in any part,  
 Sweete then my torments are, sweete is my woe,  
 Sweete eke of loue the light, sweete the conceyte  
 From so high beames, fallen in my breast, groe.  
 Sutch power of porte, sutch maiesy most gret  
 I tremble to beholde, and do confesse  
 My lot to base, so worthy a blisse to get.  
 But will herein my Reafon doth suppreffe,  
 And those fayre eyes, where loue himselfe ny lies,  
 Armed with lookeſ of ioy and gentlenesse,  
 Lookes that vplifteſ my soule aboue the Skies,  
 And in each coast al cloudes expelling cleane,  
 Do teach ten thousand pathes to Paradise.  
 My Goddeſſe braue, Angelicall Sirene,  
 Fayrenesse it ſelfe, Dame Beautie's ſacred heire:  
 What mounts of ioy may match my happy paine,  
 Whose ſcaling hope how fo enſue diſpeire,  
 Leues vaunt of thoughts, which once fo highly flew  
 As honour, all that earth beſides doth beare,  
 Comarde to this, but baggage were to vew.  
 When Mayſter Philippo had written out theſe verſes, imme-  
 diately he returned to the court, and cauſed Madona Paolo, to  
 be cauſed vnto him by one of the Gromes of the Chamber, to whom  
 he ſayd: "Mayſtrefſe Paola, I haue brought you a ditty, that is  
 very trim and pretie, which I pray you deliuer to the Queene, and I  
 will do what I can to get other." Maistrefſe Paola tooke them, and  
 went into the chamber, and findinge the Queene alone, ſayd to hir:  
 "Madame, this morninge yee commaunded me to get you ſome

Italian Rithmes, and vpon inquirie I haue receyued these few verses of mayster Philippo, secretary to the Lord Andrea Borgo, who hath promised to bring me other." The Queene hearing hir speake those words, smilinge receiued the Paper, and read the same: the sence whereof shee liked very well, thinking that mayster Philippo had bene the compositor of the same, and that of purpose he had made them for hir, whereby shee was out of doubt that it was shee that mayster Philippo so feruently loued, and the better hir opinion was confirmed, bicause some of the words tended to the state of hir personage. And considering the valor of hys minde, shee prayed Nature, for that in a man so basely borne shee had sowne the seeds of a gentlemanlike and noble heart, greatly to hir selfe commendynge the yong man. Then she conferred the whole matter wyth hir Coofin Queene Marie: which was a wyse and comely Ladye, and vpon that loue they vsed many discourses, more and more hauing in regard the behauour of that yong Gentleman. Queene Anne determined, when conueniently shee might, to rendre to mayster Philippo, for his great loue condigne rewarde: and studying still how to requite his curtesie, euer when shee saw maister Philippo, shee vsed him with her wonted chere and grateful salutation (which thinge onely euery honest gentleman ought to expect that is indued wyth reason at the hands of a prynceffe so noble and worthy, as a reward sufficient, the inequality of the parties considered.) Whereof mayster Philippo was the best contented man of the world, and durst not hope for greater guerdon, continuing his wonted lyfe fed hym self stiil with that beloued fight, in futch wyse as many Gentlemen enuied the fauor borne vnto him by the Queene, who for none other cause did vse that curtesy, but for that shee saw him to be Vertuous and well learned: continually esteeming futch as wyth learning or other gyttes of the mynd were indewed: and when occasion chaunced, shee vouchesafed to bestowe vpon them curteous intertayntment and lyberall rewards. It fortuned about that time that the Emperor Maximilian died, Charles his nephew (which was the Emperor Charles, the fifth,) then beyng in Spayne, by reason of whose death the Lord Andrea Borgo, purposed to send one of hys Gentlemen to kyng Charles,

for the confirmation of that lyuing he enjoyed, giuen vnto him for his long and faythfull seruycē by the said Maximilian. Amongst al he chose this maister Philippo, for his wisdome and experiance in futch affayres. Which don, he went to the Queenes, and gaue them to vnderstand that shortly he would send his Secretarie into Spayne, and told them the cause, humbly praying them both, that they would write their fauorable letters in his behalf. The Queenes knowing what payne and trauell hee had sustayned in the seruice of Maximilian, and what daungers he had passed, were very willing therunto. Now Queene Anne remembred that she had conuenient time to recompence maister Philippo for hys long loue born vnto hir: and bicause she was the most curteous Lady of the world, and therwithal most bountifull and liberal, and not onely with comely talke and gesture: but also in effecte willing to do them good, whome she honoured in minde, concluded what to do, requiring the Lord Andrea to send his Secretarie vnto hir, when he was ready to depart, for that besides Letters, she woulde by mouth commit certain busynesse for hir to do in the Courte of Spayne. When the Lord Andrea was gone, Queene Anne began to devise with the other Queene what she mighte doe for mayster Philippo, who prayed Queene Anne, after she had commended him in letters, to suffer hir to make the ende and conclusion of the same. Whereupon both the Queenes wrote many letters into Spayne, to king Charles, and to the Lord Chancellour and other Noble men, whome they thought to bee apte and mete ministers to bring the effect of their letters to passe. When the Lord Andrea had put all thinges in order for that dispatch, he sayd to mayster Philippo, (which was now furnished with all thyngs necessary and apertinent for that long voyage:) " Philippo, remembre this day that you goe to Quene Anne, and tell her, that I require you to come vnto hir, to know if she would commaund you any seruice to the Catholike Kynge, where you shall humbly offer your seruice, in what it pleaseth hir to commaunde: you shall also tel hir what things I haue gyuen vnto you in charge by speciall commission." Neuer could more pleasant talke found into the eares of maister Philippo, than this, who for that he should bothe see and speake vnto his Lady before his

departure, and for that she would commit vnto him the doing of hir assayres in Spayne, was the gladdest and best contented man of the world. The houre come when he thought good to repayre to the Queene, he went vnto hir, and gaue hir to vnderstand by one of the priuy Chamber, that he was attendant there to know hir pleasure. The Quene certyfied of his readinesse to depart, by and by toke order that he should come into hir chambre, who entring the same with trembling heart, and after he had done hys humble reuerence, with great feare and bashfulnesse, said: “Pleaseth your Maiesty, that my Lorde Borgo, being about to addresse mee hys Secretarie into Spayne, to the Catholike King there, hath commaunded me to wayte vpon your hyghnesse, to knowe your pleasure for certain assayres to be don for your maiesty: Wherfore may it please the same to employ mee, your humble seruaunte, I shall thinke my self the happiest man of the world: A thing so blessed and ioyfull vnto me, as no benefite or commoditie can render vnto me greater felicitie.” Then he dysclosed vnto her the rest of his message, which was committed vnto hym by his lord and maister. The Queene beholding hym wyth mery countenaunce gently sayd vnto hym: “And we for the trust we haue in you to do our message and other assayres in Spayne, haue requyred you to come hither: And bycause we knowyng you to be a Gentleman, and assured that you wyl gladly do your endeuour in any thing that may do vs pleasure, haue chosen you aboue any other. Our wyl and commaundement is, that fyrst you delyuer these letters, conteining matters of great importance to the hands of the catholike King, and that you do our humble commendations to his maiesty. Then al the rest accordingly as they be directed, which principally aboue other things we pray you to dispatch vpon your arriuall: And if we bee able to do you any pleasure, eyther for your preferment, or for other commodity, spare not to write vnto vs your mynd, and (we doe assure you) the same shalbe efectually accomplayshed, to the vttermoste of our indeuour, whych we do of our owne motion frankly offre vnto you, in consideration of the fidelitie, worthinesse, and honeste behauiour alwayes knownen to be in you.” Mayster Philippo hearynge these wordes was replenyshed with sutch ioy, as he thought hymselfe rapt into

the heauens, and his heart felt sutch pleasure, as it semed to flote in some depe sea of delights: and after the best maner he coulde, thanked hir for hir curtesie: and albeit (he sayd) that hee knew hymself vnworthy of that fauor, yet he dedicated the same to hir commaundement, furrendring himselfe as a flauie and faythful seruant to hir maiesty. Then vpon his knees, to his great contention he kissed hir hands, which of hir selfe she offred vnto him, and then reuerently he toke his leaue. When hee was gone oute of the chamber, he met with the Queene's Coferer, that attended for him, who taking him aside, did put into his hand a purse with 500. crowns, and the maister of the horffe presented vnto him a very goodly and beautifull horse, wherewith maister Philippo was so well pleased, as he was like to leape out of his skin for ioy. Then he toke his iorney and arriued at the Courte in Spayne, where at oportunity, he deliuered his Letters to King Charles, and accomplished other busines and message prescribed vnto him by Quene Anne: And when he had dispatched the Queene's other letters, he attended the businesse of his Lord Andrea Borgo. The king perused the Contentes of the letters sent vnto him by his sister and kynswoman, so did the Lord Chauncellour, (which at that time was the Lord Mercurino Gattinara,) and other, to whom the Queenes had written: whereby the king was solicited to stand good Lord, to the Lorde Andrea Borgo, and likewise exhorted him to be beneficial to mayster Phylippo, whom for his good condicions and experience they had sent vnto him in the ambassage. Vpon a day the king moued by the Lorde Chancellor, caused maister Philippo to come before him, to whom kneling before his maiesty, the king said these words: "The testimony and report so honorably made of you by the two Queenes, from whom you brought vs letters, and the hope which we haue to find you a faithful and profitable seruant, and to be correspondent in effecte to the tenor of those letters, moueth vs to accepte you into the numbre of one of our Secretaries, wherein before our presence you shal sweare vnto vs to be faithfull and true." Maister Philippo that expected for no sutch dignity, maruelled at the Kyng's wordes, and there by oth ministred vnto hym by the Lorde Chauncellour was receyued into his seruice, and exercysed that

office, in singular fauor of the King, to the great satyffaction of al men. And after that King Charles was elected Emperor, knowing the experiance that maister Philippo had in the affaires of Italy, and specially in Lombardie, he commytted vnto hym all matters touchyng the state of the region, which so happily came to passe to maister Philippo, as besides the ornaments of vertue and wisedom, he acquyred greate riches, and yet he continually serued and worshipped the Queene as his noble patronesse and worthy mystreffe. Tel me now ye faire Ladies and Gentlewomen ! What shall we say of the princely behauour and noble disposition of this Queene? Truly in my iudgment, she deserueth that prayse and commendation that may be attributed to the moste excellente Ladye of the Worlde, who neuer gaue ouer her faythful seruant tyl she had bountifuly with hir own hands and commendation, rendred vnto hym a most Pryncely rewarde. And as the sunne in beautye and bryghtnesse doeth surmounte the other furniture of the Skies, euen so Magnyfycence, and liberality in ech Lady doth excell all other vertues, specially in those personages, that keepe the state of Princes. But to conclude, mete and requisite it is, that yee beautify this most curtuous and liberall Queene wyth due prayses: For surely in my iudgement, if all Womyn would confer theyr heades and Wittes together, and deuise Hymnes and Sonnets of Liberality, they can neuer sufficiently be able to celebrate the prayse and glory of thys Queene.

## THE TWENTY-SECOND NOUELL.

*The gentle and iust act of Alexander de Medices Duke of Florence, upon a Gentleman whom he favoured, who hauing rauished the Daughter of a poore Myller, caused him to mary hir, for the greater honour and celebration whereof, he appoynted hir a rich and honourable Dowry.*

IF the Force of Vertue were apparent at the sight of eye, it would be deemed to be of leſſe value than the greatnessſe thereoſt deferueth (for ſundry cauſes riſing in the mindeſ of men) and that by performinge the little which reſted for th'entier perfeccion of hir whole vniited glory. Now becauſe that hir effects be diuerſe, and that dyuerſly they be vſed, the examples alſo of ſutche diuerſity, do variate and make diuerſe the affections of men: ſome to follow that quality and other that part, proceeding from the whole and perfect body of vertue, which hath cauſed ſome to win the price of moideſty and temperance in their deedes, other full of magnaſimy (not familiar to many) haue refiſted the affaults of fortune. Many other haue embracēd that only honor whicheſh is the nourice of ech good act, whereby they haue either wel ruled the ſtate of free ciſties, or guided the armieſ of mighty Monarchs. And ſutche whilom the ciſties of Rome, Athenes, Sparta, and the auncient Monarchs of the Medes, Persians, and the Affyrians did ſee. I wil omit a good company of the ſage and wyſe, which haue appayſed the troubls of Citties, the inquietations of Palaces, the cries of Iudgement ſeates, the diſſimulation and deceiſtfull flatteries of Courts, the carefull griefs which the houſeholder by gouernment of his houſe and family doth ſuſtaine and feele, of purpose more frankly to retire to the ſtudy of ſapience, which alone is able to make a man happy, and worthy to be partaker of the diuinity. But aboue al, I wil prayſe him which not ſubiect to the law lyueth neuertheleſſe like him that is moſt thrall thereunto, or without reſpect of bloude or frenndiſhip ſhall exercise Iuſtice vpon his deareſt and beſt beloued: as in olde time Manilius and Torquatus at Rome, the people of Athenes towards

one Timagoras, who beyond the duty of the Ambassador of a frank citty, fel down on his knees and worshipped the Persian king. And in our time the Marquize of Ferrara, by doing to death his own son for adultery committed wyth his mother in Law. And yet Iustice may fauour of some cruelty, which rather turneth to shame than praise: as Ihon Maria Visconte Duke of Milan, when he caused a couetous priest to be buried quick with the corps of him whom he had refused to bury without money, the history wherof is hereafter remembred. So as mediocrity of punishment ought to be yoked with the rigor of law, for the mitigation thereof. And beholde, wherefore the great Dictator Iulius Cæsar loued better to gayn the heart of his enemies with mercy, than vanquish and bring them to obedience with massy manacles and givnes of Iron. Moreouer in our age Alphonfus of Aragon (the true Sampler of a iust and Righteous Prynce) dyd not hee esteeme (when hee strayghtly besieged Gaiette) the Vyctory to be more Gloryous and better gotten, which is done by composition and gentlenesse, than the bloody conquest, colored wyth teares and blood of a poore simple people? And truly princes, and great lordes, specially they which newly (without succeffion receyued from their ancestors) arriue to the gouernment of some commonwealth, ought continually to haue before their eies, an honest feuerity for the holines of the law, and a graue mildnesse, to moderat the rigour of their duety: For by that meanes right is maintained, the heart of man is won, so wel as by violence: and the state of gouernment taketh so good footing, as the winde of no fedition afterwards can remoue the same, beinge founded vpon a sure stome, and framed vpon a rock durable for a long tyme. Whereof wee haue an example of fresh memory of a kinde act, full both of wisedome and of gentle feuerity, in a prynce of our time, who wythout effusion of bloud punished with rigor enough, a trespass committed, and sweetely remitted the payne vpon him, which merited grieuous, nay mortall punishment, as at large you shall see by the discourse that followeth. Alexander de Medices, fauoured by the Church of Rome, (and armed with the Papall standard) was hee that first with great actiuitie and Wisedome inueyed the Seniory of Florence, immediatly vsurping the name, title, and prerogatiue of Duke. The same

albeit vpon the prime face he was odious to the people of Florence, wroth for losing of their ancient liberty, and unpleasant to the Senatours and potentates, to see them selues deprived of the souerainty of Iustice, and of the authority they had to commaund ouer all the Citizens, yet for all that was he indued wyth so good qualities, and gouerned so wel his principality, as that which at the beginning was termed Tyranny, was receyued as iust domination, and that which was supposid to be abused by force, seemed to be done as it were by lawfull succeffion. And they counted themselues happy (when they saw their lucke to bee futch as their common wealth must needs obey the aduice and pleasure of one Prince alone) to haue a soueraygn lord, so wise, so vertuous and so ful of curtefie: and albeit in all other things he shewed himselfe prayse worthy, noble, and of gentle kinde, yet in this he vanquished himselfe in himselfe, by that indifferent iustice, which made him wonderful, denying the same to none, and in no one iote shewed himselfe parcial to any, which thought by hym to bee supported in their follies: And that which is more to bee wondred in him, and doth augment the prayse of his integrity in iudgement, was, that he punished in another the thyng, which hee ought to haue pardoned and remitted, hee hymselfe beinge attaynted wyth that dysease. But thys good Duke applyed to Reason, to tyme, and to the Grauuty of the fact and quality of the offended persones: For where the greatnesse of a deede surpassteth all occasion of pardon and mercye, there the Prynce, Judge, or Magistrate ought to dispoyle and put of his sweetest affections, to apparell himselfe with rigor, whych reacheth the knyfe into the hand of the Ruler, of purpose that pryuate familiaritie, do not in ende rayse in the subiect's hearte a contempte of superiours, and unbrydled licence, lawleffe to liue at their pleasure. Now the thing which I meane to tell, confisteth in the prooef of a rare and exquisite Prynce, which feldome or neuer harboureth in yong age, the heates whereof can not but with greate difficultie, feele the coldnesse and correction of reason: And likewise the causes from whence wifdome's force proceede, do rest in longe experience of things, whereby men waxe olde in ripenesse of witte, and theyr deedes become worthy of prayse. This Duke Alexander ordred so wel his estates, and

kepte futch a goodly and plentifull Court, as the same gaue place to no Prynce of Italy, how great or rich so euer it was, which noble court he kept aswell for his owne garde and honor as to shew the naturall stoutnesse of his corage, not vsing for all that any insolencie or vnseemely dealing agaynst the haynous and auncient enemies of his familie. Amongs his gallant troupe of Courtiers, which ordinarily attended, there was a Florentine gentleman, very neare the Duke, and the beste beeloued of them all. This yong Gentleman had a Manor hard by Florence, where he was very well and stately lodged, which caused him many times to forfiske the City, wthy two of his companions, to recreate himself in that pleasant place. It chaunced vpon a time, he being in his fieldish house, besides the which there was a Myll, the maister of the sayd Myll had a passing fayre daughter, whom thys Gentleman did well marke and beholde, and with hir beauty becam straungely in loue, in whom also appeared some Noble port, that exceeded the bloud and race whereof she came. But what? The heauens be not to spare distributers of theyr gifts, but sometymes they diuide them with the least measure, and at some other times in equall weight or greatest heape, to them that be of the basest forte and popular degree, so wel, as to the greatest and of most noble race. Rome somtimes hath seen a bondman and slauie, somtimes a Runnegate's sonne, for his wit and Courage to beare the Scepter in his hand, and to decide the causes of that lofty people, who by fleyghts and practises aspired the Empyre of the whole worlde. And he that within our Fathers remembrance desireth to knowe what great Tamborlaine of Tartarie was, the astonishment and ruine of al the East partes, shall well perceyue that his originall sorted from the vulgar forte, and from the lowest degree that was amongs all estates: whereby must be confesed, that the goodnesse of nature is futch and so great, as she will helpe hir nourice chil- dren (whatsoeuer they be,) the best she can: Not that I meane to infer hereby, but that the bloud of Predecessors, with the institu- tion of their Posterity, mutch augmenteth the force of the spirit, and accomplisheth that more sincerenly whereunto nature hath giuen a beginninge. Now to com to our purpofe, this yong Courtier, taken and chayned in the bands of loue, fettred and

clogged wyth the Beauty and good grace of that Countrey wench, forethought the meanes how he myght inioy the thynges after which hee hoped. To loue hir he deemed it vnworthy of his degré: And yet he knew hir to be sutch (by report of many) as had a very good Wit, tongue at wyll, and which is more esteemed, a Paragon and mirror of chaste life and modesty. Which tormented this amorous Mounfier beyond measure, and yet chaunged not his affection, assuring himselfe that at length he should attayne th' end of his desires, and glut that his vnsatiable hunger, which pressed him from day to day to gather the foote and fauorous frute which Louers so eagerly sue for at maydens handes of semblaunce age, who then was betweene xvi. and xvii. yeares. This Louer dyd to vnderstand to hys companions his grieve and frensie, who fory for the same, assayed by all meanes, to make him forget it, telling hym that it was unseemely for a Gentleman of his accompt, to make himselfe a fable to the people, which woulde come to passe if they knew how vndiscretely hee had placed hys loue: and that there were a number of fayre and honest gentlewomen more to whom besides conuenably and with greater contention he might addresse the same. But he which mutch leffe saw, than blind loue himselfe that was his guid, and he that was more bare of reason and aduice than the Poets fayne Cupido to be naked of apparell, would not harken to the good counsel, which his companions gaue him, but rather sayd that it was lost time for them to vse sutch spech, for he had rather dy, and indure all the mocks and scoffs of the world, than lose the most delicate pray (in his mynde,) that could chaunce into the hands of man, adding more ouer, that the homelynesse and rudenes of the country, had not so mutch anoyed his new beloued, but she deserued for hir beauty to be compared with the greatest Minion and finest attyred gentlewoman of the Citty: For this mayden had but the ornament and mynionnesse which nature had enlarged, where other artificially force by trumperies, to vsurpe that which the heauens deny them. "Touching her vertue let that passe in silence, sithens that she" (quod he fighinge) "is to chaste and vertuous for one whom I would choose to daly withal: My desire is not to make hir a Lucrece, or some of those auncient Matrones, which in elder yeres builded

the temple of woman's Fortune at Rome." The companions of this louer seeing how he was bent, promised him what they were able to doe, for accomplishment of his will, for the which he thanked them very heartely, offring like duty, where fortune should prepare the prooef of their affection and neede of his amorous seruice: In the mean time, conceiuing in his minde some new deuice, which so soone as he had found out was not able to be brought to passe, and knowing that the duke seldome would haue him out of his sight, began to inuent lyes, doing hym to vnderstand that he had necessary occasion, for a certain time, to remain and be at his country house. The duke which loued him, and who thought that either he had som secret sicknes, or els som wench which he was loth to discouer before his companions, gaue him leaue for a month, which so pleased this amorous Gentleman, as he lept for ioye, and was not able to rest one hour before he had found out his frends and companions, to mount on horsback to vist hir that had vnder hir power and obeisance the best portion of him, which was his hart and his most secref thought. When he was come to his Countrey house, hee began to stalke abrode, and daunce a round about the Mill, where his beloued did dwel, who was not so foolish, but by and by suspefted whereunto those goings and commings of the Pilgrim tended, and for what pray he led his Dogs in leafe, and caused so many Nets and Cords to be displayed by hunters of euery age and sexe, who to discouer the Countrey, assayde by beating the Bushes, to take the Beaste at forme: For which cause she also for hir part, began to fly the snares of those Byrders, and the raunging of the Dogs that vented after hir, strayinge not from the house of the good man hir Father: whereof this poore louer conceyued great dispayre, not knowinge by what meanes he might rouse the Game after which he hunted, ne finde the meanes to do hir vnderstand his playnts and vnmeasured grieve of heart, the firme loue, and finceere mynde wherewyth he was so earnestly bent, both to obay and loue hir aboue all other: And that which most of all increased his payne, was that of so great a troupe of messages whych he had sent, with giftes and promisses the better to atchieue his purpose, no one was able to take place or force (ueuer so little) the chastity of that sober and modest mayde. It

chaunced one day as this Gentleman was walking a long a wode fide newly felled, hard adioyning to his house, by whych there was a cleare and goodly fountayne shadowed betweene two thick and lofty Maple trees, the Myller's Daughter went thither for water, and as she had set downe her payles vpon the fountaine brink, her Louer came vnto her, little thinking of sutch a ioyful meeting, which he wel declared by these words: "Prayfed be God, that when I hoped least of this good hap, he hath sent me hither, to see the onely substaunce of my ioy." Then turninge his face towards the mayden, sayd vnto her: "Is it true that thou art heere (or do I dreame) and so neare to him that most desirereth to gratyfie thee in any thyng wherewyth it may please thee to commaunde him? Wilt thou not haue pity vpon the paynes and griefs which continually I indure for the extreme loue I beare thee?" And saying so, he would haue imbraced her. But the mayde, which cared no more for his flatteries, than before she did for his prefents and messages seeing the same to tend to nothing else but to her ruine and great dishonor, wyth stout countenaunce, and by her lively colour declar- ing the chaste and vertuous motion of her bloud, sayd to this valiant Gentleman: "How now, syr, do yon thinke that the vilenesse of myne apparell, holdeth leffe vertue, than is vnder the rich and sumptuous Ornaments of greatest Ladys? Do you suppose that my bringing vp hath bred in me sutch grose bloud, as for your only pleasure, I shoulde corrupt the perfection of my minde, and blot the honour which hitherto so carefully I haue kept and religiously preferued? Be sure that sooner death shall separate the soule from my body, than willingly I would suffer the ouerthrow and violation of my virginity. It is not the part of sutch a Gentleman as you be, thus to espy and subtley pursue vs poore Countrey maydens to charme vs with your sleights and guilfull talke: It is not the duety of a Gentleman to subborne sutch vaunte currs to disconer and put in perill, the honour of chaste maydens and honest Wyues, as heretofore you haue done to me. It ought to suffice, that you haue receyued shame by repulse of your mesengers, and not to come your selfe to bee partaker of their Confusion." "And that is it, that ought to moue you sweete heart" (aunswered he) "to take pitty vpon my grieve, so playnly seeing that vnfaynedly I doe

loue you, and that my loue is so well planted, as rather had I suffer death, than occasion the least offence that may displease you: Only I beseech you, not to shew your selfe so cruel vnto him, who disdayning all other, hath made you so frank an offer both of himselfe and of al that he hath to commaund." The maide not greatly trusting his words, feared that he prolonged time to make hir stay till hys seruants came to steale hir away: And therefore without further aunswere, she taking vp hir payles, and half running till she came neere the Myll, escaped his hands, telling hir father no part of that talk betwene them: who began already to doubt the treason, deuised by the Gentleman, agaynst the pudicity of his daughter, vnto whom he neuer disclosed his suspition, were it that he knew hir to be vertuous inough, and constant to resist the luring assaults of loue, or confidred the imbecillity of our flesh, and the malice of the same, which dayly aspireth things thereunto defended, and by lawes limitted and prescribed, which lawes it ought not to excede, and yet therof it wisheth the abolishment. The Gentleman seeinge that the mayden had forsaken hym, and little esteemed hys amorous onset, outraged for loue, and chafed wyth choler, spake these wordes to hymselfe: "Ah foolish and daftard louer, what didst thou meane when thou hadst hir so neere thee, in place so commodious, where shee durst not gaynesay thee that thou didst no better pursue hir? And what knowest thou if shee came of purpose to ease thy payne and to finish thy troublesome trauels? Surely I suppose she did so, but that shame and duety forced hir to vse those wordes, to make mee thinke, that lyghtly she would not bee ouercome by persuasions: And put the case that it were not so, who coulde haue let mee to take by force that, whereunto willingly she would not accorde: But what is she to be reuenged of futch an iniury? She is for conclusion the daughter of a Miller, and may make hir vaunte, that she hath mocked a Gentleman, who beinge alone wyth hir, and burninge wyth loue, durst not staunch hys thirst (although full dry) so neere the fountayne: And by God (sayd he rising from a greene banke neere the fountayne's side) if I dy therefore, I wyll haue it eyther by loue or force." In this wicked and tyrannicall mynde, hee returned to hys place, where his com-

panions seeing him so out of quiet, sayd vnto him: " Is thys the guise of a gentle minde, to abase it selfe to the pursute of so simple a Wench? Doe not you know the malice of that sexe, and the guiles wherewith those Serpents poyson men? Care you so little for a woman as she doth for you, and then wyll she imbrace you and make mutch of you, whose only study is (which I beleue) to frame hirselfe agaynst all that, for which humble fute is made: But admit, that women hath some qualities to draw men to loue them, to honour and serue them, which if it so be truely that office and dutifull deuoyre ought to be imployed in seruice of them, that be honourable and in spirite and iudgement of gentle kinde, which no doubt wil counteruayle the merite of futch a futer: And certes I am of opinion that a man may vaynely consume a yere or two in pursute and seruice of this mealy Countrey wench, so well as addresse his loue in the obedience of some fayre and honest Gentlewoman: which courteously and with some fauour wyll recompence, the trauayles of hir seruaunt, where that rude and sottish gyrl, by pryme will vaunt and looke a loft, at the honor done vnto hir, despise theym whose worthynesse she knoweth not, and whom neyther she nor the best of her feede, be worthy to serue in any respect: will you know then what I thinke best for you to do? myne aduice is then, that one of these euennings, she be trusfed vp in a Maile and brought hither, or in some place els where you thinke good, that you may enjoy at pleasure the beauty of hir whom you do praise and wonder at so mutch: And afterwards let hir dissemble if she lust, and make a Iewel of hir chastity when she hath not to triumph ouer you, by bearing away the victory of your pursutes." " Ah my good friend," aunswere the desperate louer, " how rightly you touch the most daungerous place of al my wound, and how soueraygne a falue and plaister you apply therewith: I had thought truly to intreate you of that, whereof euen now you haue made the ouverture, but fearing to offend you, or to mutch vsurpe vpon your friendship, rather had I suffer a death continuall, than rayse one point of offence, or discontentation in them, which so frankly haue offred to doe me pleasure, whereof (by God's affstaunce) I hope to be acquited with all duety and office of frendship. Now resteth it, to put in

prooffe, the effect of your deuise, and that so shortly as I can: In like manner you see that the terme of my heere abode, will shortly expire, and if wee be once at the Courte, impossible it is for me to recouer so good occasion, and peraduenture she wil be maried, or some other shal cary away the pray after which I haue beaten the Bush." The plot then of this mayden's rape, was resolued vpon, and the first espied occasion taken: But the louer which feared least this heat of his companions would coole, follicited them so mutch, as the execution was ordayned the following night: which they did, not so mutch for the pleasure of their frend, to whom in futch aduentures they ought to deny all helpe, (sith frendship ought not to passe, *Sed vsq; ad aras*, as Pericles the Athenian sayd, so far as was sufferable by the lawes of God) as for that they wer of nature of the self same tramp, which their passionate companion was, and would haue made no conscience to enterpryse the same for themselues, although the other had not tolde them hys affections: These bee the Fruites of vnruled Youth, wherein onely the Verdure and grennesse of the Age beareth greatest sway, the wyll whereof reason can not restrayne, which soone reclineth to the carnall part, than to that which tendeth to the honest repast and contentment of the mynd. The next night, they three accompanied with v. or vi. seruauntes (so honest as theyr maisters) gaue the onset in armure and weapons well appointed to defende and hurt, if any resistance were made, they myght be able to repell theyr aduersaries. Thus about two of the clocke in the night they came to the Mil, the Heauens hauyng throwne theyr mantell ouer the vaporous earthe, and dymmed hir Face with theyr vayle obscure and darke, and yet not futch, but that the ayre was cloudye cleere: and when no man doubted of so great offence, and of futch vnhappy rape, they brake into the poore Miller's House, beettwene whose armes they toke away his daughter deare, and almost dead for feare, piteously began to cry for help, defending herself so well as she could from those Theeues and Murderers. The desolate father raging with no lesse fury then the Hircanian Tigre, when hir Faucons be kylled or taken away, ran first to one, and then to another, to stay them from caryng of hir away, for whom they came. In the end the amorous rauisher of

his daughter sayd vnto hym: "Father, Father, I aduyse thee to get thee hence if thou loue thy lyfe, for thy force is too weake to resist so many, the least of whome is able to coole this thy foolish heart and choler, for the whych I would be fory, for the great Loue I beare vnto thy daughter, who (I hope) before she depart my company, shal haue wherewith to be contented: and thou cause to pacifye this thine immoderate rage, which in vayne thou yalpest forth agaynst this troupe." "Ah false Knaue and theefe," (sayd the honest pore man) "it is thou then, which by thine infamous filthiness and infaciablie knauery, doest dishonor the commendable fame of my daughter, and by like meanes shortnest the hoped yeres of me hir poore vnhappy father, loofinge through thy wickednesse, the staffe and stay of myne olde aged life? Thynkest thou Traytor, that liuing till this day (for all my pouertye) in reputation of an honest Man, in myne olde Dayes will become an vnshamefast and vyle Minister and Chapman of my daughter's maidenhooode and virginity? No knaue thinke not that I forget the wrong received of thee, for which by some meanes or other, I wyll purchase iust reuenge vpon thee or thyne?" The Gentleman caryng little or nothyng for the old man's wordes, hauyng in hys hand his desired spoyle, commanded his Men to marche before with the Mayden, leauing behind the poore olde Man which thundred against them a thousand bitter cusses, threatnning and reuyling them, by all the termes he could deuise, desirous (as I think) to haue them turne backe to kyll him. But thereunto they gaue so little heede, as when he wylled them to leaue his daughter behynde them: to whome the amorous courtier addressing himselfe, began to kyss hir, and assayed by all meanes with pleasaunt Woordes and many sweete promis ses to comfort hir: but the poore Wenche knowyng full well, that they wente about to play the Butchers wyth her Chasfitye, and to commyt Murder wyth the floure of hir Virginity, began to cry so piteously with dolorous voice, as she would haue moued to compassion the hardest Hartes that euer were, excepte the Hearte of hym which craued nothyng more than the spoyle of that his sweetest Enimy. When the poore Wenche saw hir Vertue ready to be spoyled by one, who (not in Maryage ioyned) wente aboute to vylate and possesse the

same, and knewe that afterwardes hee woulde vaunte hymselfe for the Victorye of futch a precious pryce: "Alas (quod s̄he) is it poffyble that the Souerayne Iustyce of God can abyde a Myschife so greate and cursed, and that the Voyce of a poore Wretched afflicte Mayde cannot he heard in the prefence of the Myghty Lord aboue? Why may not I nowe rather suffer Deathe, than the Infamy whych I fee to wander before myne Eyes? O the good olde Man my deare and louing Father, how farre better had it bene for thee to haue slayne mee wyth thy Dagger, betwene the Handes of these moſte wycked Theeues, than to let mee goe to bee the praye of thoſe my Foes that ſeeke the ſpoyle of Vertue, and the blotte of thy reputation. O happy a hundred hundred tymes bee yee, whych haue already paſſed the ineuitable tract of Death when ye were in cradle, and I poore vnhappy Wench no leſſe bleſſed had I bene if pertaker of your Ioy, where now I reſt alyue to ſeele the ſmarte and Anguifh of that Death more ege to ſupport, than that whych deuydeth the body and foule." The Gentleman offendid with thoſe complaynts, beganne to threaten, that hee woulde make hir forget hir diſorderd behauour, ſayinge that ſhee muſt change an other tune, and that hir plaints were to no purpoſe amonſt them which cared not, nor yet were bent to ſtay vppon hir Womaniſh teares, Lamentations and cries. The poore Mayden hearinge there reſolution, and ſeeing that ſhee vaynely dysparckled hir Voyce into the Ayre, began to holde hir peace, whych cauſed the Louer to ſpeak vnto hir theſe wordes: "And what my Wench? Dofſt thou thiſke it ſtraunge, that for the heate of loue I beare to thee that I ſhould force futch violence? Alas it is not malyce nor euill wyll that cauſeth me to doe the fame, it is loue whych cannot bee incloſed, but muſt needeſ breake forth to manyfet his force. Ah that thou haſteſt felt, what I doe ſuffer and indure for loue of thee. I beleeue then thou wouldeſt not bee ſo hard hearted, but haue pitty vppon the grieſe whereof thou ſhouleſt haue proued the vehemence." Whereunto the mayde aunſwered nothinge but Teares and Syghes, wringing hir Armes and Handes, and ſometymes makinge Warre vppon hir fayre Hayre. But all theſe Feminine Waylinges nothinge mooued thyſ Gallant, and leſſe Remououed hys former deſire to haue

hir, which hee atchieued in dispite of hir Teeth, so foone as hee arryued at his owne House. The remnaunt of the Night they lay together, where hee vsed hir wyth all futch kynde of flatteringe and louinge Speech, as a Louer (of longe tyme) a Suter could deuise to do to hir, whom at length he dyd Posseffe. Now all these flatteringe Follies tended only to make hir his owne, to keepe hir in hys Countrey House for hys Pleasure. Shee that for hir Age (as before is sayd) was of condition Sage, and of gentle mynde, began subtilely to dissemble and fayne to take Pleasure in that which was to hir more bitter than any Aloes or Woode of Myrrha, and more agaynst hir heart than remembraunce of Death, whych styll shee wyshed for remedy of hir gryefe, and Voluntarily woulde haue killed her selfe lyke a Lucrece, if the feare of God, and dreadfull losse of Body and Soule, had not turned hir mynde, and also hoped in God that the Rauysher should repayre the fault whych he committed, and beare the penaunce for his temerity, whereof she was no whit deceyued, as yee shall perceyue, by that which presently doth follow. Now whilst the Rauysher tooke his pleasure wyth his Rape, the miserable father made the Ayre to sound with his complaints, accusinge fortune for letting the Whorish varlet so to passe, wythout doing him to feele the lustiness of hys age, and the force that yet reasted in his furrowed face, and corfse withered with length of yeares. In the end knowing that his playnts, curses, and desire were throwne forth in vayne, perceiuing also his force vnequal to deale with futch an Ennemy, and to get agayne by violence hys stolne Daughter, or to recouer hir by that meanes whereby she was taken away, he determined the next day to go and complaine to the Duke: and vpon that determination he layd him downe to sleepe vnder the trees, which ioyned to the fountayne, where sometimes the Courtier had communed with his daughter. And seeing that the Element began to shewe some splendent hue Interpaled with coulours of White, Yeallow, and Red, Signes preceedinge the risinge of fresh Aurora, started from his sleepe and tooke hys way to Florence, whither he came, vpon the openinge of the Citty Gates. Then going to the Pallace of the Duke, he tarried vntill he saw the Prynce goe forth to seruice. The good man seeing him of whom he attended to receyue succour, fauour, and iustice, began to freat,

and rage for remembraunce of his receyued wronge, and was ashamed to see himself in place not accustomed: and although it grieued his heart wyth hardy speach to presume in presence of so many, yet the iust anger and desire of vengeance emboldned hym so mutch, as kneelinge vpon his knees before the Maiesty of the Duke, aloud he spake these woordes: "Alas (my Soueraygne Lord) if euer your grace had pity vpon a defolat man, full of dispayre, I humbly beseech the same that now you do regard the misery which on every side assayleth me. Haue pity vpon the pouerty of that vnfortunate olde man agaynst whom one hath done futch wrong, as I hope by force of your vertue and accustomed iustice, you wil not leaue a sin so detestable without deserued punishment, for respect of mischifes that may infue where futch wickednesse shalbe diffembled without due correction." Sayinge so, the great teares ran downe his hory Bearde, and by reason of his interrupted fighes and continual sobbes, the panting of his stomack might easilly haue bene perceiued all riueld for age, and Sunneburned with heate and continual Countrey trauaile: and that which moued most the standers by, was the ruefull loke of the good old man, who casting his lookes heare and there, beheld eche one with hys holowe and dolorous Eyes, in futch wife as if he had not spoken any word, hys countenance would haue moued the Lords to haue compassion vpon his misery, and his teares were of futch force, as the Duke which was a wyse man, and who measured things by reason's guide, prouided with wisedome, and foreseeinge not without timely iudgement, would know the cause whych made that man so to make his plaint, and notwithstanding affailed (with what suspition I know not) would not haue him openly to tel hys tale, but leading him aside, he sayd vnto him: "My frend, albeit that greeuous faultes of great importance, ought grieuously and openly to be corrected, yet it chaunceth oftentimes, that he which in a heate and choler doth execution for the guylt (although that iustly after hee hath disgested his rage, at leasure hee repenteth his rigor and ouer sodaine feueritie,) offence being naturall in man, may sometyme (where slander is not euident) by mild and mercyfull meanes forget the same without infringing or violating the holy and ciuil constitutions of Lawmakers. I speake thus mutch bicause

my heart doeth throbbe that some of my house haue don some filthy faulte against thee or some of thine. Now I would not that they openlye should be flaunded, and yet lesse pretend I to leaue theyr faultes vnpunished, specially futch as by whose offendisue cryme the common peace is molested, wherein I defyre, that my People shoulde lyue. For which purpose God hath constituted Prynces and Potestates as shephearde and guides of hys flocke, to the ende that the Tyrannicall fury of the vicious, mighthe not destroy, denoure and scatter the impotente flock, of no valoure if it be forsaken and lefte forlorne by the mighty Armes of Pyncipalities and Monarchyes. A singuler modesty doubtleffe, and an increydble example of Clemencye in hym, whome hys Cytyzens thoughte to be a Tyrant and vniust vsurper of a free Segnyorye, who so priuily and with futch familiarity, as the Friend could wish of his companion, hearkened to the cause of the poore Countrey man, and moreouer hys modesty so great, as hee would it not to bee knownen what fault it was, or else that the offenders shoulde publikely bee accused, offering for all that to be the reuenger of the wronge done vnto the poore, and the punisher of the iniury exercised agaynst the desolate, a worke certainly worthy of a true Chrystian Prince, and which establisheth kingdomes decayed, conserueth those that be, rendring the Prynce to be beloued of God, and feared of his Subiects. The pore olde man seeing the Duke in so good mynde, and that accordingly hee demaunded to know the wrong don vnto him, the Name of the factor, and that also he had promised him his help and ryghtfull correctyon due vnto the deserued fault, the good olde man I say conceiuing courage, recited from poynt to poynte the whole discourse of the rape, and the violence done, vpon hys poore vertuous Daughter, declaring besidies the name and surname of those which accompanied the Gentleman, the author of that conspiracy, who (as we haue already sayd) was one that was in greatest fauor with the Duke: who notwithstanding the Loue that he bare to the accused, hearing the vnworthinesse of a deede so execrable, said: " As God liueth this is a detestable faute, and well deserueth a sharpe and cruell punyfment: Notwithstanding freend, take good heede that thou doest not mistake the same, by accus-  
ing one for an other, for the Gentleman whome thou haste named

to be the rauisher of thy daughter, is of all men deemed to bee very honest, and doe well assure thee that if I finde thee a lyer, thy heade shall answere for exámple to eche false accuser and flaunderer in time to come. But if the matter be so true as thou haft sayde, I promise thee by the faith I beare to God, so wel to redrefse thy wrong, as thou shalt haue cause to be thoroughly satisfied with my iustice." To whome the good olde man thus answere: "My Lord the matter is so true, as at this day hee keepeth my Daughter (like a common strumpet) in his house. And if it please your highnesse to send thither, you shall know that I do not falsely accuse or vtter lying woordes before you, my Lord and Prynce, in presence of whom as before the mynister and Lyeuete-naunte of God, Man oughte not to speake but truely and religeously." "Sith it is so," sayd the Duke, "get thee home to thy house, where God willing, I will be this day at dinner, but take hede vpon thy life, thou say nothing to any man what so euer he be: for the rest let me alone, I will prouide according to reason." The good man almost so glad for his good exploit, as the day before he was forowful for his losse, ioyfully went home to his homely house and Countrey Cabane, whych he caused to be made ready so wel as hee could, attending the comming of his deliuener, succor, support, and iudge, who when he had heard seruice, commanded his Horse to be made ready: "For (sayd he) I heare say there is a wylde Boare haunting hereby, so well lodged as is possible to see: wee wyll goe thyther to wake hym from his sleepe and ease, and vse that pastime til our dinner be ready." So departing from Florence, he rode straight vnto the Mil wher his dinner was prepared by hys Seruauntes. There he dined very soberly, and vsing fewe words vnto his company, late stiil al pensiue, musing vpon that he had to doe: For on the one side the grauitie of the facte moued him rigorously to chaifise him which had committed the same. On the other side the loue which he bare him (mollifing his heart) made him change his minde, and to moderate his sentence. The Prynce's minde, thus wandering beetwene loue and rigor, one brought him worde that the Dogs had rousde the greatest Hart that euer he sawe: which newes pleased him very mutch, for by that meanes he sent away the multitude of his Gentlemen to follow

the chase, retaining with him his moste familiar friends, and those that were of his priuy and secrete councel, whom he would to be witnesses of that which he intended to doe, and causyng his host to come before him, he sayd: "My friend, thou muste bryng vs to the place whereof thys Mornynge thou toldest me, that I may discharge my promyse." The Courtyers wondred at those Woordes, ignoraunte whereunto the fame were spoken: but the good Man whose Hearte leapt for ioy, as already feelyngesome greate Benefyte at Hand, and Honoure prepared for the beautysyng of hys House, seeyng the Duke on Horsebacke, ran besydes hym in steade of hys Lackey, wyth whome the Prynce held mutch pleasaunt talke all along the way as they wente togyther, but they had not gone farre, but the Gentleman the Rauysher, wyth his Companyons, vnderstandingy that the Duke hunted there aboutes, came to doe hym reuerence: and his Fortune was futch, as hee nor any of his frends perceiued the olde man, by meanes whereof they nothing suspeected what did infue. For that cause the said Rauisher said to his prince: "My Lord, if fortune had so mutch fauored me, as I mighte haue knownen of your commyng into these quarters, I would haue don my duetie to entertaine you, not as appertayneth to the greatnesse of your excellency, but according to the ability of the least, and yet the most obedient of your seruaunts." To whom the Duke dissembling his anger sayd: "Sir, I dined heere hard by within my tents, not knowing that your house was so neare vs: but fith that I haue met you vpon your own Marches and Confines, I wyll not goe hence before I see your lodging: for so farre as I can iudge by the outwarde parte of this goodly building, me thinkes the workman hath not forgotten any thing that should serue for the setting forth and ornament of this parte of the house, which for the quantity is one of the fairest plottes that I haue seene." So approaching the Castell the Duke lyghted to view the commodities of the place, and specially the image, for whych alone hee was departed from his City, whereof the Mayster of the House (dronke with the sodaine pleasure to see the Duke there) thought nothyng. So descending into the base Court, they saw a Marble fountaine that discharged the water in foure greate gutters, receiued by foure naked Nimpes, and by them poured into Vessells,

richely wrought with Damaskyne, where was an armed Knyght, lying vnder an hyghe and broade tree, that ouershadowed the Fountaine: And hard by, they espied a lyttle doore whych shewed the way into so singulare and well planted a Garden, as euer the delycious and pleasant Gardens were of Alcinoe: For in the same (byfides the Artyfciall Workemanhyppe, and ordinarye Trauell of the Gardener) Nature produced foure Fountaynes in the foure Corners, makyng the Place and plaine of Garden equally parted in fouresquare forme. Now these fountaynes watered all the fayre knots of the same, wythout any payne to the Gardener, except to open certayne little Conduicte, whereby the water sprange and ran to what part he thought it needfull. I will heere leane to speake of the Trees and fruictes deuided in fve forme order, the Laberynthes subtilely and finely wrought, the sweete Herbers yelding futch contention to the eye, as if the Duke had not respected the wrong done to the Miller's daughter, the gentlenesse of the mayster of the house, and the singularity of the place, perchaunce might haue made him forget himselfe within that little earthly Paradife. And to performe the excellency of that Garden, the workinge hand and industry of man, holpen by the benefite of Nature, had formed within the Ground wherein were bestowed a number of Antiquities, and wherein the immortal voice of an Echo answered their talke with a triple founde in that profound and earthly place: which moued the Duke to call the Gentleman vnto him, vnto whom he sayd: "If it bee so, that the rest of the house doe match wyth that whych I haue already seene, I am out of doubt it is one of the fayrest and most delectable houses at thys day wythin the compasse of all Italy. Wherefore my Frende, I pray thee that wee may see the whole, both for the contention of our Mindes, and also that I may make some vaunt that I haue seene the rarest and best furnished little Houfe that is within the iurisdiction of Florence." The Gentleman bathed in ease and full of pleasure, seyng that the Duke lyked so well his House, brought hym from chamber to chamber, which was enryched eyther with stately tapissarie of Turkey making, or with riche Tables diuinely wrought, vtenfils so neate and fit, as the Duke coulde cast his eye vpon none of them, but he was driuen into

an admiration and Wonder. And the further he went, the greater hee sawe the increase, and almost a Regeneration, or as I may say, a newe Byrth of rare thinges, which made the littlenesse of the Place more Stately and wonderfull: Wherefore hee greatly esteemed hym in hys Mynde whych had deuyfed the Magnificence of sutch a Furnyture. After then that hee had vistited the Portals, Galleries, Parlers, Chambers, Garrets, Wardrobes, Closets, and chiefest Romes of that house, they came into a Gallerie, which had a direct prospect vpon the Garden, at the end wherof there was a chamber shut, ouer which sutch Antike and Imbossed worke, as it was maruell to behold, and vpon the garden side in like workmanship, yee mighte haue viewed a troupe of Nymphes (a long the fide of a woode adioyning vpon a great Riuere) flying from an hierd of Satires, that made as though they would haue ouerrunne them: a pleasure it was to see their gaping mouthes, theyr eyes fixed vpon the place where theyr clouen-footed pursuters were, and the countenance of them, which so well exprested theyr feare, as there wanted nothing but speache. Moreouer a better sight it was to beholde the Satire Bucks, with dysplayed throte, and theyr fyngers poynting at the haft of those pore fearfull runawayes, as though they mocked theyr fodaine flyghte. Within a while after ye might haue seene Hercules lyinge a Bed with his wife, towards whom a Faunus came thinking to enjoy the beauty and embracements of the sleping dame: But fayrer it was to see how that strong Amphitrianian gaue him the mocke, and strained him so hard, as he thought his belly would burste. The Duke beholding as he thought, the fayrest Chamber of the house so shut, by and by suspected the truth of the cause: For the Gentleman knowing the comming of the Duke, had withdrawen his woman into the same for that it was the most secrete of his house, and the furdest from all ordinary seruice. Vpon surmisse the Duke demaunded wherefore that Chamber was not opened so wel as the rest: "I suppose the same to be your treasure house?" (quod hee) "and the storehouse of your most delicate things: Wee pray you let vs looke into it." "My Lord" (sayd the Gentleman) "the place is to farre out of order, at this time to shew your grace: Moreouer I knowe not where the Keyes be, for thys

morning the keeper of my house is gone into the city, and I can not tell to whom hee hath delyuered them." The Duke which heard the end of his excuse, not accepting the fame for the pryce which the Courtier wolde and thoughte to haue folde it, was sure then of that which before he did suspect. Wherfore with furious countenaunce he sayd vnto him: "Goe too, goe too, either with the key, or without the Key, let this door be opened, that I may see all thy secrete within." The rauisher seeing the Duke to be earnest, could not tell at the first Face, of what Woode to make his arrowes, stode stil astonned, and was furpryfed wyth a newe feare. In the end notwythstandyng, playinge the good fellowe, hee went vnto the Duke, in whose eare smilinge hee whispered (bicause he knew right well that the Duke was an indifferent good companion, and loued so well his neighbor's Wyfe, as his owne;) and sayd: "My Lord there is a pretie wench within, whome I do kepe, and would not shewe hir to any lyuing man but to you." "That is the cause I aske" (sayd the duke) "let vs see hir that I may geue iudgement of hir beauty, and tell you whither shée bee worth the keeping or not." The mayster of the house opened the chamber dore, thinking to haue gained mutch, and supposeth to insinuate himselfe the better into the fauor of the Duke, but immediatlye hee saw himselfe farre deceiued of his accompt. For the rauished and shamefast maiden comming forth of the Chamber with hir hayre about hir eyes, and hir garments berent and torne, hir stomake and breast all naked and discouered, hir Face and Eyes all blubbered wyth Teares, lyke a desperate woman threw hir selfe at the Prince's feete, crying out: "Ah (my lord) beholde heere and haue pity vpon the most vnfortunate Wenche of all most wretched caytyfe Women, who shamefully and Trayterously hath bene abused and defloured by him, whych impudently dareth to bryng you into the place the wytneſſe of hys abhominable and wycked Lyfe." The Duke seeing this sight, and hauing compassion vpon the Maiden, turned his face towardes the Gentleman and hys Companyons (which by chance wer come thither, as the Duke was entred into the Gallerie) not with milde and pleasant countenance as hee shewed from the beginning, but with a looke so graue and feuere, as the hardiest of the company could not tell what to do, or what an-

swere to make hym. Vpon them than began the ryghteous Prynce to vomit his dyspleasure, sayinge: "Is this the innobling of the Bloud whereof thou art descended, to rauyshe thy Neyghbors and my subiectes Daughters, that duetyfully lyue vnder myne obeysance and protection? Doeſt thou thus abuse the familiaritie whych hytherto I haue shewed vnto thee? Thinkest thou that the Lawes be peruerted together with the chaunge of the common Wealth of Florence? No, I affiſſe thee, for ſo long as the Soule ſhal abyde within my body, I will be he that ſhal purſue the wycked wyth all extremitie, and ſhall not indure the opprefſyon of the pore, enough affliſted with their own proper mifery. O God could I haue thought that a Gentleman of my Houſe, woulde haue bene ſo prodigall of his honour, as to foyle hys Hands ſo filthily by rauifhing of them which ought to be required, and to diſhonour them in place where their Vertue ought to ſhine for geneſall example? I cannot tell what ſtayeth me from cutting thofe curſed Headeſ of yours from of your ſhoulders like arrant Traytors and Theues as you be. Get ye hence, ye infamouſe villaynes and beaſtly Ruffians, the troublers of your Neyghbors reſt, and the ſpoyleſ of the fame of hir, that is more worth than all ye together." Then ſpeaking to the Mayde hee ſayd: "Rife vp my wench, and on me repoſe thy comfort, for I promife the by the faith of a Gentleman, that I will do thee ſutche reaſon, and vſe thee ſo vprightelye as bothe my Conſcience ſhal be quieted, thou contented, and thine honour reſtored for the wrong and iniury whych it hath reſcieued of theſe Gallantes." And by and by he commaunded the Miller to come before him, and all thofe whom he had brought wyth hym to affiſt his doings, before whom he cauſed to be brought both the rauifhed maiden, and the condeſempned of the rape: vnto whom he ſaid: "This is the pray my friends that I fought after, which I haue taken without toyles, nets, or chaunting of the Dogs. Beholde, I pray you the Honoure whych my Houſeholde Seruauntes doe vnto my Houſe, who ouerrunne the Symple Countrey People, and rauyshe theyr Daughters betweene the Armes of theyr propre parentes, who breake, beate downe, and ouerthrowe the Doores of theyr Houſes, that under the Lawes of our City and ought to enioy lyke Pryuiledge of Lybertye and

Franchyze. If one respekte (whych I wyll not dysclose) dyd not impeache and stay mee, I would doe futch cruell iustice vpon the offenders as the posterity should make report thereof. Notwithstanding it shal suffise that they receiue this shame before you all, by seeing themselues vanquished of a crime, which for expiation and reuenge, deserueth most shamefull death, and to receyue of mee for proove of mercy, an vndeserued pardon of their fault: with condition neuertheleſſe that thou (speaking to the Gentleman Rauiſher) ſhalt take this mayden to Wyfe, for otherwyſe thou art not able to repayre the honour thou haſt taken from hir) and ſhalt loue hir ſo dearely, as fondly heeretofore ſhe was beloued of thee, to eſteeme and loue hir ſo mutch, as if ſhe were the very ſiſter of me the Duke of Florence, who commaundeth thee for the raunſome and redempſion of thy head, preſently to mary hir. I will moreouer, and ordayne by reaſon of hir father's pouerty, that for the wrong which he hath receyued of you three, that his daughter ſhall bee indowēd wyth two thouſand Crownes by him that marrieth hir, and with a thouſand of eyther of the two other, to th' entent that if hir husband dy (wythout heire,) ſhee haue wherewith honeſtly to mayntayne hir degree, and the honeſt port of hir houſe. And hereof I will that without delay a contraſt be made, and a publike iuſtice of good record inrolled, ſwearing once agayne before thee, that if I vnderſtand, thou vſe her otherwife, than a Wyfe ought to bee of hir husband, I will deale futch puniſhment and correction ouer thee, as all men in time to come ſhal take example." The Gentleman which expeſted no better meede than death, ioyfull of that ſentence, fell downe proſtrate before the Duke in ſigne of conſente, and the lyke did his Companions. But the ioy of the Miller and his daughter cannot be expreſſed, who extolled the vertue and iustice of their Prynce vp into the heauens: to whom with futch humility they rendred theyr humble thanks, as he would doe that ſaw himſelfe in ſo great calamity, and brought to futch dishonour as earſt they were ſeene to be, by meaneſ of him that acknowledged one of them for his ſonne, and the other for hir lawfull Spouse. Thus was the mariage conſummat in preſence of the Duke, with ſo great ioye, and content of all partes, as there was rage and trouble for the Rape of the

Bryde. The Duke beinge retourned to Florence, the Brute of this act incontinently was dissparkled almost throughout the Region of Italy, and this iudgement no leſſe prayſed, than the ſentence which Kynge Solomon gaue vppon the Controuerſie of the two Harlots for the liuing childe, which eyther of them claimed for hir owne. And for this caufe was hee extolled aboue any other Prynce or Lorde that in tymes paſſed did commaund or rule the Common wealth wythin the Countrey of Thuscan. In thyſ wyſe that moideſty made him worthy of the Principality, which almoſt againſt all ryght he had vſurped, and of a prayſe whych ſhall no leſſe continue, than the Memory of man is able to extende the ſame from one generation to an other, and which thoſe that be Couetous of the prayſe of a Prince ſo vertuous, iuft and moideſt, ſhal not ceafe to iuillate and gloriouſly aduaunce him in open euydence, to the ende that hys like may exerciſe like things, or of greater conſequence, by not ſufferinge venemous and vnpoffitable hearbs to grow within the Garden of their Common wealth. Wythin the which, a little mildew or vntimely rayne, is able to marre and corrupt all the good Seedes and Plantes fowen, and grifted there before: For commonly wicked Weedes and Baſtard Impes take deeper roote than thoſe that beare a good and fauorous fruit, for conſeruation whereof, the diligent husbandman imploreyeth his labour throughout all the Seasons of the yeare.

END OF VOL. II.